## TRAVELS

## 1が

# B R A Z I. 

56T

HENRX KOSZ'ER.

## LONDION:



1916.

## 10

## ROBERT SOUTHEY，ESQ．



## 

 AGALINX OF トTST゙ったYTHFSt．TRAVFIS

ARE（NDCRIBEI）

By HENRY KOSTIR．
［ N

MEMORIAL

OF

AFFECTIONATE：RESPECT AND GRATITUDE．

## PREFACE.

DURING my residence in Braxil, I had no intention of publishing any account of what I had seen and heard in that country. Some time after uy return to Enpland, I was encouraged to puit together the intionuation which I might be able to inopart. The reader will fee more disprosed to exause what defects he may find, when he is informed that I went ont young, that I did not gather any knowldoge of the country in a systematic manner with the idea of giving it to the public, and that the idiom of a foreign language is perhaps more familiar to me than that of my own. But anoong judicious readers the style of works of this deseription will be regarded as of little importance. I have hat the advantage of Mr Sonthey's advice and exteusive library. I have to thank Dr. Traill for his aid in preparing the Appendix; thongh as he did not see the whole of it, if there are any errors they most he antrilouted to me, not to him. The drawings for the plates were execoted by a near telative, from very rought sketches of my own, as-
sisted by description. The outline of the map is taken from Mr. Arrowsmith's large map of South Aracrica; and the names and situations of some places are corrected, and orbers are inserted from my own knowledge. The plan of the harbour of Pernambiaco was furnisher to me by an English gentleman residont at Recife, who is indafatigable in the search of whatever may contribute to the increase of knowledee.

## CONTENTS.

## CHA 1.

D



CIYAP. II.





CIthe, IIt.



CHAP. IV゙.
Jouncy to Giviani: - Journey frimn Cixiana to Pasniban and bock to Gojann - $4^{2}$
Cltar. V,
Jeumnty fram Cwilula to Rio Erarude, - The City of Natal.-The Gowernirs - 56 CHAR. V.

CEAS. YII.
Contiunation of the Jourricy.- From Açu to Areunti. - From Aracutio to Searui. Indinut - Tha Late Goveinor. - Tle Family of tbe Feiloza - - - 97

CHAB1. Vily.
 Natul to kecile - - -
(HEAM. Lス.



$$
\text { Cllat. } \mathrm{C}
$$

 Jouracy to Vorn Jurdian widl a Citpilwin-תaus and retara ko [kecito - - - 186

CHAP. XL

1'unge 2 t1
CHARI. XIL



CHAP XEII.
Removal of the Auther ta Izamarnan - The Latand. - Comexption nha Pillar.- Tho I'satival af Ohr Indy of the Konary. - Juarney to Goinath- The 'loulde, - The


CHAP XIV.

 Whale - - $\quad$ - . . . . . . . . .

CHAP. XF'.

 A Chriatening. - The Latrude, - The Auther huwes Brupil - . . . 305

CHAP. XVI.
Agriculture. - Sugar Plantation - . - . . . . . . 3 06
CHIAP. XYIK.



## DAECTIONS FON $\mathcal{Y}$ LACING TFIE PRATFE



## refendinces

## - FH <br> 


B. 'Jter hriatar of liocide.
C. Firt Lumadexus.
D. ['0) F F'cum.
E. Visrl Butur.
F. Cixouy ol' Piatiadi
C. Forr Jurise.

I-I. Tlu vilecr of Arzemalytion

K , Jeromisimm.





f. The Fialac:

冬 'L'lle conton w sia Syrocsi,




 in one, untif you bave the point of Olinda bearitr $N_{\text {, }}$, fhen wate the N ., until the erexs of Paumon in in one winh the encomat tries on St. Amaro. then satar dixactly for thes same stawa of Piatraxi, until you open the inter

 Notqueiro.

To enter the channel for smallar veasels coanitg from sea, keep the same mark. Fort Piean atat fort bram in one, until you are withits a quarter of 'a mile of Fort Picam, then laringe the two sontleers watcil towers on Fort Bxum in one, you clataring the northern extremity of the reet above water,
 the bsibour of Moriquiro.


## TRAVELS IN BRAZIL.

## CHAPTER Y.




IF my health lind not required a change of elimate, $I$ should not perlupa so soon have accomplished the wish I had often expressed of leaving Enogland for a short time. An immedinteremoyal was judrecd expedient; and tu the pots of Spain and Portugal were either cloaed to Bu'rish subjocts, or tur least nat in a state to be visited by an invulid, I determined upon Brazil; to which my friends agreed. - I fixed upon Permambuco, bccatse a gentleman, who had for many years been acquainted with ny tamily, was about to embark for that place, and from the fivourable reports of the people and climate which I had received from scveral persons. On the 2 d No vember 1809 , 1 set anil frow Liverpool in the ship Jucy.

We had a very prosperous pusange of thirty-five duye, without any oweurrence worclay of particular notice.
I. wity agrecably awakened very early on the morning of the 7 th Decenber, with the nows tiat we were in sight of land, and likely to get into harbour this day. We soon discovered two vessels, with all sail set, making for us; these proved to be two English merchant-shipa, tround likewise to l'ernambuco; they had never before been at this port, and therofore wisked io receive torne information respecting it; they judged that from the manner in
which our vesast mutle for the lamd, hor commander nyust he acequaioten with it, which was the wise, this being dhe second voyage of the Lucy to Permmbuco.

The lan:l tis low, ayd consegumenty tot to bue secu at uny considerable distance; bul. as wet aplronched it, we distingarished the hill uron which stadds the city of Olincht, is little to the rorthward; and some leargues to the sourliward, the Cape of St. Asostinlor ; a dearer view discofered to us the form of St, Antorsio de Recife, almost a-head with the shipping ire likal of it; the dreary Jand betwoen it and Olinda, which is one leagre distant, and coco ${ }^{*}$ groves northward, as faw us the eye ent reach; aouthward of the town are niso seen great numbers of coso trees, woodly, and scattered cottages. The eituation of Olinda is the bighest it the neiglsbourhood; gad though not very hight, is still not despicable. Itw appearance from the sea is mait delighaful; its white-vashod churches and convente upon tha tops anck sides of the hill; its gardens and trees, interapersed amongst the havses, afford a promise of great extent, and hold out expectationts of great beauty. The sands, which extend one leagne to the sotithward of it, are relieved by two fortresses erected upon chem, and by the alips in the lower harbour. Thien follows the town of Recife, with the appearance of being built in the water, so low is the sand-bmeli rpot which it has been raised; the stipping immediately in front partly conceal it: and the bold reef of rocks on the outsile of these, with the surf dashing violently agaiust and over it, give to them the appearance of being ashore; and as no outlet is seen, they seem to be bemmed in. The small tower or fort at the northern end of the reef, hoviever, soon claims stention, and points out the ertrarice. We appoached the land rather to ches sunathward of the town, and coasted, under very casy sail, at a short distance from the

[^0]
ref. waiting for a piloc. It was not yet noon, the sea was smooch, the aun was bright, and every ching lockerl pleasant- The buildings rere all white-washed; the sun shome upon them, and gave to them a glitcering silvery appearance.

Nathing this day cteated so much astonishment on board our ahip, amongst those who had not boen before upow this coyst, as the Jengudas, sailing abouc in atl dircetions. These are simply mafts of six logs, of a pecoliur spucies of light timber, lashed or pinned together; a large latine sail; a paddle used as a rudder; a sliding kcel lect down between the two centre loga; a seat fise the sterrsman, and a long forked pole, upon which is hung the ressel containing water, the provisious, *sc. These rude floats have a mont singular appearance at sean no hull beinft apparent even when nout them. They are usually mariaged by two men, andi go ctoser to the wind ther any description of vessel.

A large row-boat at last made its appearance, doubling the end of the reef near the sroall fort, frich was dowared to be that which brings off the pilots. The poatram-mor, harbour-master, in his naval uniform, likewise came on board. A laxge lapach followed the pilot, manned chiefly by negroes, almost naked; the colour of these men; the state in which they weere; their noise and buscie. when certandy there was no occasion for it, and their awkwardness, were to me all new. $\cdots$ This very firat communication with the share gave me an idea, for the moment, that the manncrs of the country at which I had arrived, were still more atrange than they sctually proved to be. These visitors were followed by others of a very different deacription; two boats came alongside, manned by Englighmen, and conveying several Eaglish gentlemin. The former belonged to British ships koeding in the harbour, and the latter ware young men who had come ous to Pernambuco to gettle as merchants.

The pilot placed himself near to the ship'a windlass; a Portugueze sailor was sent to take the helra, but still the vaciferstion was extreme; the man seemed to think that, by speaking very loud, he would make the Endilizh seamen understand his langnage; and what with his bawling to them and to his own people, and their noise, the
confusion was exeessive; hutwever, we couthed the tora in satety, and cathe to anchor in the wpper harbosus. Tle rese' is very perpendicular near to the bar ; anll to one unncquainten with the port. there is every appearamse of che vessse] being about to dive cupola it. I then accompanied my Ellow-qussenger; wo leit the stibl and fruceeded to the shore. Here was a wew scene insleed. Whe hat taken the leteer-hagy wint
 save the usg and soon thzir anxidty for news nvecume lecit politeness; the letars were asked for, and at l,st we gise them up, and thay were sramberd for, each mon seeking his own. tfe hal kateled at the custorn-house whati upon a busy dity, turd the negosers too were all clamonix anal buste. Their hideous noiso when carrying any load, bawling oul some ditty of their own lindenage, or some distich of vulgar Portugueze rhyme; the bumerala Gucsitions asked by many persons whe met ne, arait the viry circurnatince of seceing a jopulation consisthg chiefly of individinals of a dark colour, added to the sound of a new langreage, with which, although I was actuained, still 1 had not since very carly youth been in a conntry where it was tencrally spoken; all combined to perplex and to confusc. I was led ajong by those who were accustomed to these scentes, and we proceedel to the house of one of the first merelants in the place. We were ushered un one pair of stairs into a room in which wern several piles of piece-goods, a table covered with papers, and scveral chairs. There were dour or five plesons in the room besides che owner of the house. I debivered my letter of introduction to him, and was treated with the greatest civility. Our next visit was to a colonel, who is also a merchant, from whotn 1 met with the same behariaur.

As there arenn inns or furnisthed Jodgings an Recite, or at *Olinda, an acquaintance of $m y$ fellow-passenfer obtsined some temporary sooms for us, and supplied us with what we wanted. We are therefore at last quietly settled in our new habication, if I may be allowed to call it quiet, whilst some twenty black women are under the win-

[^1]dows buwlitef oun, in almose ath tomes ant keys of which the haman voice is capatble, - oranges, bunanas, sweblmeabs, and other commodities, for sale.

The town of St, Axtomin do Recilic, eummonly called Pernambueo, though fhe fither is property ridu aname of the eaptainery comsists of
 of sand stretches from the fout of the dill, bigon whith Olinga is situated th the souithward. The southern extremity of this batak expands and forms the site of that part of the cown paticularly alled Recjfe, as being immedjoiely within the reef. Thove is morher satad-bank also of considexalyle extent, upon which hivs beer butr the second division, called St Antoniu, conueered with chat alrutchy mentioned by nimans of a bridge. Yet on thitrd division of tha cown remains to be mentioncrls sabled Boa Vistu, which statad upon the main land to the sonthward ot the vther two, and is joined t.o them also by a bridge The recife, or reci or rocks already spoken of, tums in front of these sand-banks, and receiver upon it the primeipal force of the sea, which, at the flow of rhe tide, rolls over it, but is much checked by it, ant strikes the quays antl builtings of the town with diminished strength. The spreatest part of the extent of sand between Olimda and the town which remains uncovered, is open to the sea, and the surf there is very viotent ISuildines lave only becu raised withiu the protuction of tine reet. The tide enters between the luridges, and encircies the middle compartment. Olu tiae land side there is a considerable expanse of water, having much the appearance of a lide, which becomes marrower cowards Olinda, and reaches to the very streets of that place, thas facitianing the communication hetween the two towns. The view from the houscs that look on to these waters is very exteasive and very beautitiul their opposite banks are covered with urees and white-withed outtuges, varien by smatl open spaces and lofty coco trecs-

The first division of the townil composed of brick lrouses of three, four, and ercn fire storics in height; most of the streets are narmor, and some of the older houses in the minar streets are of only one
story in leeighr. and many ai tben consist onty of the ground-foor. Tize strees of iais part, with the exce:nion oi sne, are pared. In

 of a dwellinerehouse; a large chutch, noi tinished; at coffecthouse, in which rhe merchants assemple to trunsact bejr commercial aftairs; and dwelling-houses. There are two churches in usc- one of which is buitt ower the srone arch-way leating fiom the town to olinda, at which a lieurenant's graird is atationed. The other church belonges to the priests oi the Congregocime ila Wadre de Decs. Near to the gnate-way above-mentioned is a small forl, close to the water-side, which commands it. To the northward is the residence of $\mathfrak{E b e}$ PortAdmiral, with the government imher-yards atinched to it : these are small, and the work going or in thens is very triffing. The cottonmarket, wasehouses, and presses, are also in this parc ol'the town. *

Tine bridge which heads to St. Autonio has an arch way at cither end, with a small chapel huile upon each; and et the nortletrs anch is saationed a serjeant's guath of six or eight racm. 'Tise bridge is formed in part of stone arches, aud in part of wood: it is quite flat, and lined with smail shops, which rendur it su uarrow that two carriages cannar pass eaeb other upon ít.

St. Antonio, or the middle town, is composed chiefy of harge houses and broad streets; ancl if these buildings had about them any beauty, there would exist hers a certain degree of gravdewr ; but they are too lointy for their breadch, and the gromd-floors are appropriated so shops, warehouses, stables, and other purposes of a like nature. The shops are without winclows, and the only light they have is admitted from the door. There exists as yct very litcle distinction of trades; chus all descriptions of manufactured goods arc sold by the same pergont. Some of the minor streets consist of low

[^2]and shabby houses. TFere are tbe Governor*s palace, which was in wher times the Jesuite convent; the reersitry; the tominthall and prison; the boracks. which are cery bad; the Francisenn, Carmelites, and Penks convenlas and scrersi churches, the interiors oif which wre very handsomely ormamented. but sery little plan has been presecved in the architecture of the buibdings themselves. It comprises sereral squares, and has, 20 a certion dugree, a ges and lively appearmec. This is the principal division of the town.

The bridge which comnects Sit Antonio with Boa Vistu is constructex entirely of rood, and has upon it no shops, lut is likerrise narrow. 'l'he principal surcet of Boa Vista, which was furmerly is piece of grombl overfowed ax high pater, is broak and handsome: the rest of this third division consists chiefly of small houses, whil as there is plenty of room here, it exrends to some distruce in a stragging manner. Neither the siveets of this part of the town nor of Sin Antonio are paved. A long embakment has likewise been made, which connects the sand bank and town of SL. Antouio with the rusin land at Aftogndos $\%$, whe sonth and west of Boar Vista. Tile river Capilaribe, so famous in Pcrnambucin history, discharges its waters into the channel between St Antonio adad Boa Yista, after having run for some diblance in an coorse nearly cast and west.

Some fiew of the windows of the houses are glazed, and have iron bulconies: but the major part are without glass, and of chese the balconies are enclosed by latice-work; and no females are to be seen, execpling the negro slayes, which gives a ver- sombre look to the streets. The Portugneze 1 , the Brailizu, and even the Mulartio woment, in the middie rante of life, do not move out of doors in the day-hime; they hear mass at the churches before day-light, and do not agrain stir out, execptinue in sedan chaits, or in the evening on

[^3]Foot, when occesionally a whole family will sally fork to tatie a walk.

The appor fatbour of Recite. catled ile Mosqueiro, as hás bean alrcaty said. is formen by tite rees of rocks which runs paraliee' with the tonn at. a very zmall clistazace. The lower harbour, for vesoels of 406 tons and upwards, callasd whe Poço, is very randiceroun, as ic is oper to the sea, and tioe busch opposite to it is very stecp. The larre Brazil ships, belonging to merclauts or the place. lie here for months at a time, moored with four cables, two a-heed and two a-stern. If precsutions are not taken very speedily, the entrance to the harbour of Moaqueiro will be choaked up: owint to a breach in the reef, immediately within the sunsll fort, which is called Pican. The port has two entrances, one of which is deeper than the other. The tide does not rise more than five and a half feet. The prinuigal defence of the town consists in the forts Do Buraco ${ }^{*}$ and Do Brum. bolh of which are built of strae, and are situaced upon the sands opposite to the two entrances. Likemise there is the swall fust of Bom Jezis, near to the arch-way and chuxch of the same name; and upon the south-eur point of the sand-bank of St Antonio srands the large stone fort of Cinco Pontias, so called from its pentaroual form. They are said to be all elut of onder. From whal I have stated, it. will be seen that thee ground upon which the town has been built is most peculiarly circumatanceri, and that the manner in which the harbour is forneed is equally rere.

The town is principally supplied wich water, which is brought in cancess, either from Olinda, or from the river Cupibstibe, above the influence of the tide; it comes in bulk, and although the seeater purt of the wessels are clecked, gtill it is usually filthy, as too muth care is not taken in theix cleanliness. The wells that are sumk io the sand upon which the own stunds only afford brackish water.

The thee compartments of the sown, together, contain about

[^4]25,000 inhabitants, or more, and it is mereasing rapidlly mew houtses tre building wherever space cant be found. The population conaists of wlite gucrsons, of mularto and black tree people, aud of slaves also of several shades.

The rect of rocks, of which I have beforc spoken, concimper along the whole coust between Pernambuco and Marankum, ard io some parts it. runs at a very short distunce from the sliore; and in this case is usually hijgh, remaining uncovored sr low water, as at flecites but in other ylaces it. receden from the land and is then senerally concealer. $J_{1}$ has mumberisas breats in iL, theough which the communication with the sea is laid open.

Recife is a thriving plase, increasing claily in opulence and inaportance. The prosperity 4 hiels it enjoys may be in sonne measure attributed to the character of its Governor and Captain-General. Citetanco Pinlo de Miranda Mantenerco, who has ruled the provmue for the last ten years with systematic steadiness and uniform prudersce. He has made no unneceseary innovations, but he has alkoved uscful improvements to be introduced. Fie has not, winh hurried eathusisstice zenl, which often defeats its ead, pushed forwards ardy novelty that struck him at the moment, but he has given bis conseat and countenarice to any proposal backed by respeccalsle persuns. Hehas not interferced and intermeddled with those concenns in which governanents have no business, but he has supported then when they have been oncc established. I here speite of comporcial regulations and minor improvements in the chief town, and in the smaller suttleovents of che country. He is affable, and hears the complaiut of a peasant or a rich mercbant with the mane patience ; he is just, seldorn exercisiog the power which he possesses of punishing without appeal to the ciril margistrate; god winen ho does ene force it, the cribse must be very gharing indeed. He acts upons system, and from principle; and if it it the fate of Brasil to be in the hands of a deapotic government, happy, compared to its present state, would it in general be: if all its nulers resembled him. I hope
tbe place at mbich $I$ so long resicled, and I lope most sincerefy that he may not be removed, bat thet lue may ontinue to tiopense to that extensive rugion, the blessings of a mild, forbearing administration.

In political consequence, with reference to the Portuguese gofemment, Eernambuco holds che third * rank amongst the provincos of Brazil; but in a commercial poinc of vjew, with reference to Great Britsin, I know not whether it should not be named first- $\dagger$ Its chief exports ure cotton and sugar ; the formur mostly connts to England, and muy be accounted at 80,000 or 90,000 bags anmually, averaging 160 pounds weight eavch bag. The latter is chiefly shipped to Lisbon. Fides, cocon-nuts, ipecacuanha, and a few otiser diags, are also decasionally sent from thence, but are exported in trifling quantities. These articles are exchmaged for manufactured goods, eaphenware, porter, and other articles of necessity among civilized prople, and also of luxury to no very great amount Twu or three ships sail ampually for Gon in the East Indies; and the trade to the coast of Africa for slaves is corsiderable. Severtel vessels from the Ltrited States arrive au Recite aunually, bringing Aour, of which great quantities are nous consumed; furniture for dwellinghouscs, and other kinds of lumber, and carcyintaway sugar, melasses, and rumb. During the late war between the United States and England, which interrupted this trade, Recife was at, first somewhat distressed for wheat-flour, but a supply arrived from Rio Grande do Sul, the most southern province of the kingdom of Brizil. $\ddagger$ The

[^5]cuality is goocl *, and 1 rather think that some coasting-tessels wint continue to supply the market with this article, notwithscanding the reacwed corammication with Norch Americs.



## CHAPTER II.






```
    AYOTHE:N \丁口{T TG pLIND.S.
```

THE numerous arrangements necessay on ow arrival, provented our raaking immediately the eubtomary vixit to the governor: bote on the following morning we proceeded to the palace, situatax in a small squate, witl the guard-honse on one side, at which is stationd a raptain", guard. We were ushered up stairs, remained some time in an anti-charaber with several cadeto, and were then ilesired to enter; we pasied the scerctery's roonh, and were shown into a very spacious aputment, in which the fovernor waited to receive ug. He is a large hadsome man, with quite the manners of a genteman; we all sat down, and he asked seferal questions respecting affairk in Europe; 1 had some English newspapers, which I leil with bim, and in abouk halt an hour we retired.

The first fow days aftex my arrival were spent in delivering my letters of introduction. I soon became acquasiated with all the English merchants, who live in a very respectable style, and have done much good in establishing sotae customs which the Portugucze have had the sense to follow, preserving at the same time those of their own, which are fitted to the country and the cliroate.

As this whas the sammer season, great numbers of the inhabitants were out of town ; they remove to small cotcriges at Olinda, and upon

The banks of the rivera, to exing a pures air, and tive ambament and eondort of bathing, during libe monilas mosh suljeet to inac, purebing werdtur. The heat is, however, seddarn sery opprosive; the seatbrecze, turing the whole yeat: conomerices about vine o'clock in the
 standing in the sun, the heat is so mikl alleviated by its influence, na
 he would be cooler. At the time this satagithes the land-brceze rists,
 foconoon which occasionally passea between the one and the other, is the roust unpleasatit pexiod of the clay. In the rainy scason, just bufore the eammencenont of at heavy ahower, the clocids ate vary dark: dense, and low; the breeze is sispended for a shom time; thare is then a sort of expectant stilltuess, and the weatber is very sultry.

One aftemoon I rode out with several young men to a cillenge in the neighloourlood, for the purpose of delivering a letter to one of the rich merchonta. We passed tlurough Boa Visla, and procooled alongs a nadrow sandy rosd, formed by frequent parsing and repassiug; and along the sides of this are many of the summer rexidences of the wealthy indzabilancs of the town, which are small, neat, whiterwushed cottages of one floor, wich gardens in front and at the sides, planted with oramge, lemon, pomegravate, and inany ocher kinda of fruittrees; some few are inclosed parcly by low wadls, but for the most part they are protcoted lyy fences of timber- About half way we came out upon the banks of the Capibaribe; the view is exceedingly pretiy; houses, frecs, and reardens on each side : the riyer bends just above, and appexrs losi among the trees; the canoes going geatly down with the tide, or more laboriously forcing their way up akainst it, formed altogether at delightful prospect. The river is here rather narrower than the Thames at Richmond. Along the sider of the road, at this spot, ate seroral black women selling oranyts, otber kinds of ficuits and cabea, and canoe-mon with theit long poles, unable to dielay, baxgaining with them for some of their commodities. This was the first time I had left the town, and I was truiy plased with these,
 again lett diex river, contitiaing adeng doe road. still bordered by eor-




 tialo a bail with it brick Goor, of winde ele doots and windows are very latige, so ay to leave the from vary ricaty open. We wore recejred by the lady of the houses, kiad her hatilazad som appearatl; they ware exceedingly civil, ind ordereat sweotments to be brought our-

Oue Endish flat sucldics created as mach surprise to the people of Pernambuca, ns those of the Portugneze appeared atranare to us, They are high locforc and behind, whith obligos the rither to wit very upright, and the fashion is 1.0 be as stifires possible, and tom hodel guite: pherpendicularly a switch oft mest emomoous length. Tle horses are taught a delightfal amble, upors whicin sothe al thean car be thade to procend with greal spoed.

The rivor Copibaribe is navigable during the whote year as lian as Apepucos, half it leaghe boyond Monteiro, the viltage ath which my new acquainance whs now residing. Tt overtows jes barks in the rainy scasom, otbentimes with great mpidity. is the lands through which it mons in this part of the colatry are very low, the floods are somewhast dreaded, ns they occasiomally extemd far and wide. The stratr hovels upon ilis hanks are otten cautied tway, and the whole neinthbourhood is lisid under water : canoes have been known to ply between this village and those of Poco da Panella amd Caza Forte.
A. Portugucze friend, with whom I had been acquainted in England, kavirg taken a house at the former of the rwo last-mentioned placee, I agreed to share the expence of it with him, arid we inmediately removel to it, to pros the summer months. The villuge was quite full; not a liut remained untenanted; and, as occurs in England ut wateringplaces, families, whose dwellings in town were spacious and handsome
cegardless of inconvenience, dane to mesicle here during the summer in very small motages. The l'ogo da l'anellia contains a chapel, built by stelacription, a row of houses ranning parallel with the rivers several washerwonteri's lauts in front of them, and other dwellings scotteredi :hont in all directions. Here abe ceremonious mannery of the town are thrown titide, arde exchanged for an equal degree of freedon. Otr uncorvings were filled up, either in rifing to the Recife or to some ouluer part of the comntry, or in conversation at the houses of any of the families with whom we were acguainted; and the afternoons and evenings with muic, dancing, playitg at forfeits, or in dining with some of the Englisla mercharts, a few of whom had also removed to this place and its neighbourloond. At many of che Portugueze houses I found the card-tables occupied at rine o'clock in the morning; whun one person rose another took his place; and thus they were scarcely deserced, except during the heut of the day, when each man either returned to his own home indine, or, sa is much less frequent, was requested to renanin aud phitake with the family.

On the hast day of this year it was invited to visic Olinda, timt I might witness che fertival of Our Lady of the Mountaith. The ciey is, as $I$ have already abserved, situateri upon a hill, very steep in front of the sea, and declining gradually on the land side. Itg first appearance, on arriving apon the coasr, is so beautiful, that the disappointment experienced on entering it is freat; but still Olinds bay many beauties, and the view from it is magnificent. The streets are paved, but are much out of repair; winny of the bouses are small, how, and neglected, and the gardens very little cultivated; indecd the place has been deserted for the Recile. However, one of the reditnents of the lime is stationed here ${ }^{*}$; it is the revidence of the bishop, and the site of the ecclesiastical court, the seminary, which is a public college of education, and some convents and fine eburches; therefore, it is by no means desclate, thougb its general aspect bespeaks tranquillity, regu-

- This has lotely bean remwod to Itocife, owing to a requart of same plan of revols zungat the negrives, which bas wnec proved to be without fioundation. 1815.
larity, and a degrec of neglect. The view to the southward rakes in u jake of about liree miles in leagth, of whiti the surface is covered with wods and grases, ond che opposite banks limed with rhick woods antl some cottages; the Recife and che hay bethind it, fimmerl by the enurance of the tide, extenting to Olinta, bith wincealed in phaces by low ntal thick ratigroves are olso to be scan. Olisutn coveri mucth grontaf, bat soutains only about 4000 infabitants. At this time the witole city presented a scene of bushle and amusement. The chutelh. particularly decorated on this occasion, stantls wpon the ligh fest point ; the ascemblage of perions was great; the chtireln was lightect up, and a few indjvidulals of both sexes were knecling promisenously in the body of it, but the serrice was over-

This is the season of cheerfuIness and gaiec $y$, and wre were jikewise to have our festival at the Poço da Fanella. These festivals are always probeded by niae uveniags of layan-singitug, matmasie, in huour of the Virgin, or the stim whose day is wo thus celebrated. On this occasion the performance for the marcua, or nine evenings, consisted of a piano-forte playod $b y$ a lady, tho wife on a mevehant, and a gititas, and some wind-instrumemts, played by sevoral youngr inen of respectability. The vocal mmaic was also evecuted by the sume persons, assisted by some female mulato slaves kelonging to the lady. I was. somenthat surprised to luste the nirs of country-dances and matchea occasionally introduced. However, on the day of' the festival, the performers werc professional men, and in the ovening firetworks were displayed. Eivery house in the village was orowded this day with people from all paris. By friend und I had several persons to dinner, but before wie had half fitished, some ot their friends appeared, and wibhont ceremony come in and hesped themselves; soon all idea of remularity vanished, and things were scrambled for. In a skort time hoth of us left our own house, and tried to gain admittance to some other, but all were in the surne confusion. Whe were invited to a dance in the evening, at wlich the Governor was present; and although he is hinsulf desious of making every person fecl at ease, still such is the clreadful idea of rants, for I know not
wiat else to call it, in this coututry, that the helaviour of every one wes comstrained, and the conversatiun curried on alinost in a whisper.

I Jost no Ftetivala, and :unonget others, vent to ahat of St a matro, the healer of wounds, it whase chapel are solal bits of ribhon, as claruns, which many intividetals of the lower orders of poople tio round theit moked anclea or cheir wrists, and presore until they wear out, ant drop off.

Alrout the coinmencement of lident, the villages in the neighbotzrhoud are almont entirely deiurted by the white pcople, who return to town to sen the processions custonyary at this senson in Catholic comatring. The mains also usualdy begin about the end of Mitrch. 1 did not leave the Poçu de lianella watil the very lant, but in the end found the place dall, and followed the sest

On Holy Thastedyy, accompanied by two of my countrymen, 1 sacklied forth at aliree oblock, to sece the churches, which are, on this uccasion, lighted up, and highly ornamented. The whold town was in motion; the fermales. too, both thigh and low, were this aftemoon parading the streets on font, contrary to theit usual canstom; mariy of them were dressed in silks of different colours, and covered wifl gold chains and othar trinkens, fa genemal master beiref made of all the furery that could be collected. The blaze it some of the churches, from great mumbers of wax tapers, was prodigious; the $^{\text {mon }}$ object apparently aimed at was the production of the greatest quantity of light, ns in some instances mimors werc fixed behind the tapers. The middle of the body of these churches ia completely open; there are no pews, no distinstion of places; the primeipal clapel is invariably at the opposite end from the chief entrance, recede: from the ebrurch, and is narrower: this part is appropriated to the officiatias pricsts, atud is railed in from the body of the charch. The females, as they enter, whedier whire or of colour, place themsclves as nesr to the raila as they can, squatting down upon the floor of the large open space in the centre. The men stand along eitber side of the body of the clurel, st narrow slip being in most instances railed off lengthways; or they romain near to the
entrance behims the watien; lyat every fellale ol wlatever rauk or colour. is firsr. accomimodated.

On whe followiseg dia, Good Friclag, the decotations of the
 sexes wis shanged; all wot dixmah. In the murninig I went wich the same irentlenen to the chativelat the Sacramento, to wimexs at representation of our Savionts ctescent from the Cosis. Wre entered the church isy a side door ; it was umeth erowded, ind the dificulty of getting in was considerstble. An enormouts cartais hong from the ceiling, exclucding fion: die sight the whole of the principal chapel.
 Eeard, and dressied in a thick dark browen cloth hahit, wits in the pulpit, arti about to commence an extempince sermon. düter an
 him ;" the curtais immediately dropgred, and cliscovered an emonnous Cross, will, a full-sized wooden image of our Saviour. execedingl, well earced and preinted, amat aroutd it a ntember of angels represnented by several young persons, all finely deched out. anil cach
 dressed in a bob wing and a pea green robe, as $S_{0}$. Jolint and n fenale Eneeling at the toot of the Cross, is the Manclaten; whose character, as I was informed, seemingly that nothing might bee wanting, was not the most purc. The fijur eontinued, with much vehemence. and much acrion, his oarrative of the crucifixion, and after some trinutes, again cried out "Beholis, they toke hime down; when four men, habited in imitation of Roman soldiers, stepped forwards. The countenances of these persons were in part coucealed by black crape. Two of them ascended ladders placed on each side ugainst che Cross, and one toak down the board, bearing the letter's I.N.R.I. Then was rerooved the crown of thorns, and a rithe cloth was put over, and pressed down upon the head; which was soon taken off, and shown to the people, stained with the circular mark of the cronn in blood: this done, the nails which transfix the hands, were by degrees knocked out, and this produced a violent besting of breasts among
the female part of the cougreatation. A long whitw lineu bandage was nexl passed undor cach arm-pit of the imane; the nail which secured the feet was reruoved; the Ggure was let down very gently; and was curefinty wrapped up in a white sheet. All this was done hy yord of command from the preather. The scrmon was then quickly brought to a conclusion, and we left the church. I was quite amazed; I had heard that something of this kind was to be done, but I had no idea of the extent to which the representation would be carried.

Ou Salurday morning wie were saluted with the bellowing of cattle, the grunting of pigs, and the cries of the negro slaves with baskets of rowils of several linds for sale; these were to be devoured after the ensuing midruight, and many familics, warty of their long abstinence, impalicntly awaited the striking of the clock, as a signal for the commencement of hostile oporations, without mercy or seruple, apoo turkies. piyss, te and all the rest of the miserable tribes which have been laid down as the lawful victirns of uur carnivorous nature-

On Easter Sunday I was insited by a physician to dine with bima, and to artend the christening of one of his grandchildren. At dinner the party was small; the dishes were served up two at a tirme to the number of ten or iwelve, of all of which I was obliged to nasteFrom the table we adjourned to the church about four n'clock, where sevoral persons, Jibewise invited, waited for us; the cerremony was performed by a friar, and each guest held a was taper, forming a semicircle lowards the alvar; from hence vee returned to the old gentleman's house to supper. I mer here, among otbers belonging to the same convent, the friar who prcached the cruciaxion sermon. The members of this couvent are all fislians aad Missionaries, bat as no reinforcoment has for a lengh of time come out from Europe, very fow now temain. A long table was laid oat, louded witb victuuls. Several ladies were present, notwithstanding which eaormous quantitics of wine were drank, until the whole company began to be riotous, but still the ladies dia not move. Ax last nio order was left among them, bottles and glasses were overtumed and broken in the


 （r）
 way these jeople live in a very ruiet mantere＇fiku old Doctor

 forget that luat wat io part elerithod from the nectersiries serat out by
 f）＂cueltial calennity．
 centod to Tgnurnçu，a amall town diblant from Recite weren leaguea， for the purpose of witncysing the entrance of a novice Luto the Orcker of St．Francis．Wearrived about nine o＇clock $n+$ nirglt at the gates of the convent；the friar rang the bell thare limos，as tho signal of the arrival of one of aloe Order；a lay brother cance，and asked who it wes that domanded admitance；lio witi anowered，that it was brotiver Joseph trow the convent of Reeife accompanied by a fiend；the porter shut the gates agoin，but soon returned，saying that the Guardian，the mane given to the principal of a Frateciscan convent，allowed us to enter．We were conducted up a flight of sceps into a loug corridore，ut the end of which sat the Gumrdiane to whom we were introduced；he directed us to ilbe irather who had the munngement of the accommadations for visitors；this inan pluced the mader the especial cate of Tirei Luiz，who took us whis reth．Sup－ jer way served ap，upon which the Guardian came in，helped us once round to witue and made many apologies for the badnews of fina cook， and also excusus for the want of ingredienta at this distance from Recife．The convents of St．Francis are alt builh evactly upon the same plan；in the form of a quadrangle，one side of which is appro－ priated to the church，and the remaining three to cells and to orher purposes；the former are above，und to be entered from a galiery，
which runs round the whole buadine The beds with which the friars supplied us were hard, but vary aceoptable after our ride.

The ceremoly to be performed on the ensuing meroing collected grent numbors of porsods from all quarters, as it is now very rare. Formerly, of every family at leash one menber was a Criser, but now this is unt the constom; cinildren are broughte isp to trade, to the army, to aby Lhing rather than to a monastic lile, which is tutst lobing irs ropututions. Noons of alie convents are full, ated some of them are nearly without. inhabitants. **

Early in the morning the elumeh was lighted itp, anel albont den ocloce the farmily of the person about to take the voves alrived to occupy che seats prepared for thun. Mitss was then andid, and a sermon proached; about eleven viclock the novice, a young man of sixteen yearts of age, entered the principat chapel by a side door, walk. ing between two brothers, with a harge cross in his hands, and dressed in a long dark blue robe: there was then much chanting, atier which be knclt down opposite to the Guardian, received the usual admonitions, was asked several questions_relating to hís beliuf in the doctrines of the church, und then wade the sepurate fows, of defending his relliyion, of celibacy, and others of minor importiace. The Giandian then dressed him in the habit oi the Order matie of very thick, ronth, dark browo cloth, which lefore lay scretched upon the ground in front of the altar, covered with flowers; this beiry done, the young man embraced all the brothers present, took leave of his relations, and left the church. Biany of the friars were laughing during the ceremony, and were particulaly amused at the Guardian accidenally saying, "Brotker, don't bo ashamed $\dagger$;" owing to the young man ber

[^6]ing muelk abashed, A visior who stond near to me in the grellery from which there are window's into the chturch, sainl, in a low voice
 fimselt thas advises him zo pui shame esishe, winch uniortunstelv you nre all ton much incilined to do; ${ }^{-4}$ at his the friars who were within
 yersons dined with the father of the young friar, and I among the
 the evening fircworas were displayed. whic! onded by a ransparency. represcnting a novice receiving the benedicima of his Guerdian.

It was determinet thou wo thould refum 10 Thecite this might, send dhel the journey was to be commenced as soon as the moon rose. The party consisted of fire friars, several laymen besioies myself all un: horscback; some palanquirs with ladies. and a rumber of negroes to carry thern. Whe sallied forth about midnighi; the mown wax brighe, and che shy quite cleat. The scene wat vere strsuge; the roaxl made in placts abrupt turas, so as to give to those who were rather in advance, on looking back, a tien of the whole processions, at times appestint and at times concealed amontr the trees; of chis the friars formed an extruordinary part, in their robes tucked up round the waist, and tied with the long yellow cord of flagellation, and with their enorminus white hats. At Olinda sceral persous remsined, and clee rest arrived at Recife about scver o'clock in the morning-

On the loth of May I had a sudden actack of fever, which Was accornpanied with delirium; however, with the assistance of a medical man, the disorder subsidel in the course of forty-eight hours, but it left me in a very weak stake, from which I was some time in recovering. These fevers are well known in the country, but are not common, and in general ate preceled for some days by agrae. I can only account for this attuch, from having suffered the window of my room, which had a westem spect, to remain open durirry the night, and the Jand breeze which rises thbout trelte o'clock is nor accounted wholesome A young Enclishman insisted upon my remopal to his hourse, thent I might not remain in the hauds of servants;
 With him I remainesd until my health was eorropletely re-cestablizhed, and was rreated by lime wirls that sore of kirtuness which ean only be evpecterl from a very vent reludion.

I dioned with a friend on St. F'etex's day, the goch Jome, and in the eveniag I proposed walking to the church, readicated to this saint, As usual, the blate of Jight was great, the congregation muncrous, and 1hta whole affair very brilliant. After the service, we recognised a juaty of ladics with whom we were accilainted, and wne of zhem requested us to look for a young priest, hor som; on matiag enquiriss, we were desired to walk up stairs into a latige room aver whe vestry, in which were several priests, and a table covered with rolieshments of many rlescriptions lite young man came to us, and was soon followed by others, whe invited us to stay and partake, but we declimed and went down to the party we had joined; some of the prieats necompanied us, and persuaded the ladies to agcenci, and bave a sharce of the trood things; we were also requested to return, which we did. There werc great quantitios of fruit, oakcs, swectneats, and wine. We met witl the most marked attertion from these ministers of the Roman Carholie religion ; Ereatex politeness could not have been shown to any person; even many with whom wallad not been acquainted before, offered us wine, and requeated to be introduced to us. I mention the wonduct of these men more particularly, as I think it showed a great degree of libersility, and a wish 10 conciliate, and more especially as chere were likewisc several hywen prezent of flseit own nation*, About ten o'clock we left the charch, and takirig one family of our parly horoe, remained with them until a very inte hour.

We were invited to pass the following Sunday with this family, which consisced of the father and wother, and a son and danghter

[^7]the；wore all Brazi！ians，and though the voung ledy had nexer boels
 lively and entertamiage ITer comperion wes not ciorker than that uf the Portugtexe in ceneral，luw exes and hoar bitek，and

 tecomed a very tair sampis of the white Brazilian femoles ；bur ir is HiEtong the women of coibut that the furest persons are to be found，－more life sud ；piric，more activity of arind amd body ；they are betier fitted to the climate．arial fho mixed race seoms to be its proper inhabitanc．Their features too are often groqu，and cevis the eolour，which in Furopera climates is ilisarreemble appears to apperain to char in which it atore raturally exists；but this har to Fitm zopean ideas of beatut．sex uside，finer specimens oz the homan forin camol be foumd dath among the mblatio femeles whons．I have scem．

We vart to them to brealsfast，which wis of coffee and catkes． Backyammon and catels were ihen introduced uncil dinner time，at ：wo o＇clock．This consisted of greax mimbere of disties，puticed pan the table without any arrangemenr，and byoushe in without any regard to the regularity of courses．We were，zs may be supposed， rather surprized at bemg complimented with pieces of meat from the plates of various persons at the talble－I bave oten met with dibis custom，particularly amongst familics in the interior，sand rhis $X$ now speak of had on！ y resided in Kecite a short rime；but many of the people of the bown have oiber ideas on thes？matters Two or three linises ouly wert placed upon the table，which obliged each person to ent all the meat apon his oxn plate into small pienes， ancl pass ilie linife to bis noxt neighbour．There was，however，a plentiful supply of silver forks，and abundance of platos，Garlic formed one inspedient in almost every dish，and we had s great deal of wine during the dinner．The momemt we finished，every one nose froin the table，and remuved into another apartment．At eight o＇clock a large paity assembled to tea，and－we did not take our de－ parture until a very late houx．On oux arrival at home，my frienà
and I an torether to consider of the mansactions of this day, which we had thus pussed entirely wict a Brazilian fanily, and both ugresa that we bad been much amosed, ancl that wo had really felt much gratification, save the business at the dioing table. The conversation was crifinif. but contertaining ; there was naucla wit and spore. The ladies of the house, joined by several olhurs in the everinge, talked a great deal, and uould allow of no subject into which they could now erter-

It will be uloserved from what I have described, and from what 1 still Jave to mention, that no sule cam be laid down for the society of the place in question ; familes of egual rank, wat of equal wenlth auci importance, are often of manners tonilly differcne. The fitch is: thant society is undergoing a rapid change; uut that the people imitate Furopean customs, though these lave some effect: but as there $i_{s}$ more wealth, more luxurics are required; as ithere is inore clucation, insther and more polislied amuscments are sought for; 25 the mind bocomes more enlarged, from intercourse wich other narions, and from reudiag, nuany customs are seen in a different Jiglat; so that, the same persons insensibly change, and in a few years rijdicule and are dismasted with many of chose very habits which: if thej reflect for a moment, they will recollech were practised but a short time hefore by themselves.

On SL Anne's dafy, the $29 t h$ July, two youmg Englishmen and mysulf procoeded by invitation to the house of one of the first personnges of Pernambuco; a man in place, and a plunter, possexsing three sugar works in different parts of the country. About ten a'clock in the morning, we embarked in a canoe; and were poled and paddled across the bay, on the land side of the town. On our arrisal upon the oppositu shore, the tide was out, and the mud deep; in fear and trembling for our silks, two of us clang to the backs of the canoe-men, who with somedifficulty put us down safe on dry land; but the thirl, who was heavier, for some minutes debatod whecher to return home was not the better plan, however, he took courage, and was, likewise, safely conducted through this region of
of pertl. We then walked up to the house, which eovers much
 firse floor. The gatden tas latid out by khis genilemaris father, in the ofd scyle of straight walks, and trees cut incu shapes. A large

 rocor, ant the men into another; enrls anci bnckmommon, as ustầ, were the ammacmemes, but there was little of ease and freedom of ernversation. At dintier, ilte ladics uld arranged themselves on one side, and the mon oppositc to theret; there were victusls of many kinds is sfreat pmotusion, and much wine was trank: Some of the gentlemen who were intinamiely acquajuted with the family did not sit flown at table, but acsisted in uttending upon the ladies. After dinner, the whole party adjourned into a large hall, and country cloncing being proposed and agreed to, fiddlers were incoduced, and a little atter seven oclock, ahout twenty couples combnenced, and contioned this amusement unal past two oclock. Heve wats the cerentony of the last contury in the morning, and in the erenitug the chenrâtumess of an English party of the present day. I never putnok of ouc more ploasant ; che conversationt, at times remewed, was, ulways gerstcel, but unceremoniour, und I met with geveral well-eciucated persons, whose actuaimanee I enjoyed during the remainder of my stay at this place.

The rains this season had been very slight, and scarcely ever prevented our rides into the comintry in the neigibourthood, to the distance of six or eitrit miles; but we mever reached bevond the summer doellings of the inhabitants of Recile. The villages are at this time very dall, having people of colour and négrocs as residents almose exclusively. Fowever, as $I$ wis fond of the conntry, I was tempted by the fineness of the weather, to remove entidy to a small cottage in the viciaity, where my time passed away pleasantly, though quiedly, and in mamer rery barren of events. There stands a hamblet not tar distant from my new residence, called Caza Forte, formerly the site of u sugar plantation, which
dast been stiffered to deciay, and now the dhapel wanc remains to point out the exach position. 'flet twolling-totuac of those works is suid to lave been defenderl by the Dutch naninst duc Portugueze, wha sot Gve to it, for the prarpose of of liging their encmits to surfender. A litene oprer pieco of ground is pointed oat as having beer ther situa-
 Recife: about five wiles; ande the rivar Copibaribe runs atoout, there quarters of a mile beyond it. I met with few of the peasmats who lind any lingwledige of tho Pernambucun wat aguinst the Duteh, batel heard this npot more Frequently spoliett of than any welier**
 ol Perimunlsuco, 1 should have discovered that the war was more vividly remembered therc.

L latid uth offer of introdutetion to another Brazilian fandily, which I reaclily accepued, and on the $\mathrm{Tth}_{\mathrm{h}}$ Auguse, I was summomed by my friend to acoomyeny him to Olinda- He ladi been invited, und liberty hatl been given to tale a fifend. We went In es canoe, and were cormpletely wet through on tho way; but we walkerl about the strects of Olindiz until we were amain dry. The family consisted of un old lacly, ber two daughtera, and a son, who is ar priest, and one of the professor: or masters of the semintuy. Severtal persons of the same class wore present, of casy and genternanlike manners; some of them proposed dnseing, and although they did not join in the anusement, still they were highly plessed to see othors entertsined in alais manter: Our music was a pinno forte, played by one of the professorks who gooch-humouradly contipuad until the daneera themalves begred hin to cleast. About midnight, we latt these pleasant people, and returned to the beach; tise tivic wrst out, and the cmoe upon dry land; we thervfone determined to walk; the sand was very heary, the distance three males, and aftur our efening's

[^8]ammement. this was hard work. $\bar{\lambda}$ dirl mont attempt this might to go btuonal liecife to ms cottage, bat acrepted of a matreess at my friend's resitence.

Tharee or four families are in the prectice of having weckly evening card partics, as was usual in Lishon. I attended theye occasionally, but in them there was no peculiacity of customs.

The foregoing pages will, I think, suffice to point out. nite kind of sociecy to be mel will in Pernumbuco, but this inust be sought for, as the finmilien in which it is to be toums, ate not numerous. Oi thece, very few are in trade; they are either Poreugueze families, of which the chief is in office, or Brucilian planters who are wealthy, and preler residing in Mecife or Olinda; or, ns is frcquently the case, a son or brother belonging to the secular priestlood, has imbibed more liberad notions, and has accuired a zest for rational society. As may naturally be supposed, the females of a family are almays glad to be of more importance, to be treated with respect, to seti, and to be seen The merchants, generally speaking, for there do exist some exeeptions, live very much alone; they have been originally from Portugal, have made fortumes in trade, and lave married in the country; but most of them still continue to live as if they were not yet sufficiently wealthy, or at least cannot persuarle themselves to ulter their close and retired mamaner of living, and. exceprining in the summer montoss, when sitting upon the steps of their country residencies, their families are not to be reen.

The gentleman, ohiefly by whose kindmess I had been introduced and enabled to partake of the pleasancest society of Pernamibuco, was monong the Sirst Brilish subjecta, who availed themselves of the free commonication between Eipgland and Bravil, and be even already observed a considerablen change of manness in the highor class of people. The decrease in the price of all arcicles of dress the factlity of obtaining at a low rate, earthenware, cullery, and table linen; in fact, the very spur given to the mint by this appearance of a new people among them; then hope of a betcer sazate of things; that their country was about to become of more importance; re-
newed in maty persons, fdens which had long lain dormant, makle them wish to whow, that lley had moriey to expend, and that they knew how it should be cxpended. "

It was the eutom in Pernamlunco, to uncover when passiug a sentincl, or on mocting a yamrd of soldicra marching through the streets. Sion attor the openifgry of the porc to Britiah shiuping, theee Euglish gentlemen stecidentally mets a carporal's guard of four or five men, anct as they passed cach other, one of the latter took off the lat of one of the former, accompanying the action by an opprobrions expression; the Englishmen reaented the insult, attacked and absolutely routed the guard. This dueadfin math of *nbmission wexilitury jower was universally refised by every British subject, and has been very manch discontinued even by the Portugaeze. Another annoyance to these visitory was the tisual respect paid to tle Sacrament, carriced with much pomp and cerchony to persons dungexously i11. It was expected, Lhal every one by whorn it chanced to pass, should kneel, and continue in that postore until ic was out of sight; hare Englishmon, is ame clegree, conformed in proper deference to the religion of the country, but the necessity of this also is wearing off $\dagger$

[^9]
## CHAY゙IER 115.




```
    NOLLOS子LA.
```

THE captaincies-general, or provinces of the first rank, in Trazil, of which Pernambuco is DDC, are foverned by captididx-feneral or povernols, who ate juminted for thece years. At the end of this period the same person is connimed wr not, at the option of the suspremse government. They are, in fact, alsolute in $1^{\text {mower, but before }}$ the person who lhas beers nominmed to one of these plitece can exercisc any of its functious, he is under the necessity of presenting his eredentials to the Sumtado $\alpha$ Ca Camarn, the chamber or municipality of the principal towo. This is formed of persons of respectability in the place. The govarnor has the supreme and acole command of the military force. The civil and eriminsl catrses are discussed betiore and determined by the Onridor and Juiz de Fora, the two chief judicial officers, whose duties are somewhat similar, but the former is the superior in ravk. They are appointed for three years, and the term may be renewed*. It is in these deparments of the fovernment

[^10]that the opportumities of amassing large fortunes are most mumeroua; and ecstain it is $1.120 \pi$ some individuals tatke ndvantage of them in a momper witich renkes jusice but a umme. The povernor can determine in a critwital cause without appeal, but, if he pleases, he refers ir. to the compesent judice. The Procurador do Coroa, atomeygemeral, is an officer of considerable welmthe. The Intendicnte da - itorintote powr admital, is likewise consulted on matters of first importmocs as are also the Enerivan da Fazenda Reat, clinef of the
 Theae seven officers form the $\mathrm{Jumtox}_{2}$ or council, which occasionally meets to arrange and decide tupon the aftairs of the enptaincy to which they belong-

The ecclesiastical government is scarcely commected with that above mentioned, and is administered by a bishop and a dean and chapler, with his vicer-heveral. Sc. The governor canzoot even appoint it chaplain to the island of Femando do Noronhas, one of the dependencies of Pernarnbuco, but scquaints the bishop that a priest fy wanted, who then nominates one for the place,

The rumber of civil and military oflicer's is enommoun; inspectors innumerable-colonels withont, end, devoid of any objects to inspect - without any regiments to command; judges on manage each trifling department, of which the dulies might all be done by two or three persons; thus salaries are acigmented; the poople are oppressed, but the state is not beuchied.

Taxes are laid where they fifl heavy upoo the lower classes, and none ste levied where they conld well be borne. A tenth is raised in kind upon catcle, poittry, and agriculture, and even uron sale; this in former times appertined, as in other christian countries, to the elergy*. All the toxes axe farmed to the bighese bidders, and









 of eattle, as T liave thendy said, is !evied in wint inpon the escete: in the interio: of the cututer, and, besides this, a fluty ol get wis per
 to athont twentu*nve gicr cen/. Fish pave the tealh, amol atierwards a fíteenth. Every ronsfer of inmoveable propery is sibiect to a duty of ten par comt. and moveables to five per cent. Desides these, rieve are many orher taxes of minor importance R.ims, both for expur tation and home consumption, pays a cluty of 80 reis per crimala - , whith is somelimes a touth of its Faltak, but may ge reckoned is lion fifteen to tweney per cent. Colton puys the centle, and is fagain taxed at the moment ol' exportacion 600 reis jeer arroba of 3 39 lbs. or abonc.
 upon the chief irticle of exporation from that courtry to Euiopc. The duties ar: the ctastom-house are fifteen $p$ ar cent, upon imports: of whiche the valuation is lext in some measure to the unerchant to whom the property belongs. Here, I wink, ten ger cent. ungre might be raised without being felt. A tux is paid at Fermarnzuco lor lishthing the streets of the Rio de Janeiro, whits tlsose of Recife remain in total darkness.

 tluve succoeded.

- A groul cuntiakion exists in Bexil resperting deaburts. Every cantuincy bas its


 3ess than in sicue of the other provinees of Bravil.

Nou, aithourh the expences of the provinciel gevernments are great, uad absorb a vext considcrable proportion of the recejpts, ovidg to the number of olicers employed in every depaxtment, srill the salarics of each are, in most instances, much too simall to afford a comfortable subsistence; consequently peculation, bribery, and otler cximes of the same description are to be looked for, and they become so frequent av to escape all pumisbment or even nocice; though there and some men whose character is without repronch. The tovernor of Pernambuco receives a salary of $4,000,000$ reis, or almut 1000 l . pur unrum. Can this be supposed to be sufficient for a man in his responsible situation, even in a country in which articles of food are cheap? His honoux, however, is umimpached; not one instance did I ever hear mentioned of improper conduct in him; bul tbe temptation and the opportunities of amsssing money are very great, and few are the persons who can vesiat them.

The only manufactory in Recife of any importance is that of gold and silver trinkets of every description, and of yold lace, but the <fuurtities made of either are only sufficient for the demand of the place. The women employ themselves very gencrally in making thread lace and in embroidery, but the manufacture of these articles is not sufficionlly extensive to allow of exportation.*

The public insticutions are vot many, but, of those that exist, some are excellent. The seminary at Olinds for the olucation of young persons is well conducted, and mady of its professors are persons of knowledge and of liberality, It is intencled principally to prepare the students for we church as secular priests, and cherefore ill -of thern. wear a black gown and a cap of a peculiar form, but it is not necessary that they should ultimately take orders. Fice schocls are also established in most of the spull towns in the country, in some of

[^11]which the Latin langoge is taught but tice waion paw ste adapred
 in these :aro ir the seminary is stre expemee incurred by the [thjit?.
 other establishmenti \%or the siek are very misersijle. Slmage it is, chat niae churches shnold be buile, whisw mans individusis are sutfered to perish form the want of s: stivale building mader :aheh to sheleer tituld, Sut the best instizusion of which Pernambum has to bonst, in conmmon with the mother country, is the Rodis thas Engeitaclos. Inrams of doublful birth are received, taken cart of reared, and provided tor. Every person knows what the wineel of a convent is, --2 crlindrical box oper on one sick whicl jos fixel in the wall and turna mpan a pivor; near to this is placed a bell, to be rung when any thing is put jinto the box, that the inhabitante of the couvent may know when in should be turned One oin these wheels stands ready night and day to receive the child-the bell is romg and the box turns. Thus the lives of many ate saved-ilins mumbers are spared from shame. Never let in be imbginet that birtho of a secret mature will be mote frequent, from the consideration that this institution exists, but it remores all mnotives for unnarmaral conduct in a mother, and it may somecimes produce reform of fiture condict, by the facility afforded of conccaling what has already pasced.

The friars are not manmerous, though they are far too much so. These uscicss beings* amount to about onc hundred and fity in number at Olincla, Recife, Iguaraçı, and Paruibatr. But therce are
 an old fizity, who was quite blind that she wiahed one of the onvilsers to go witle lecr,

 and woiz there spmu of theid will soon be creeping in"
$\div$ The younger manibers oi the Francibunt ordex enjoy wrry much thu duty of moing colx
 rome yizarb afor, who oxaminod the thesi in whieft the money belanging to the coummuity way kepe, and wa finding a considerable sum in in save oxters thrt no one shonde goo out
no nuns in ine province, though of the catablishments called R.ecolfimontos or Retreats, three exist- These arc directed by elderly femalcs, who lave nol tuken any vows, and who educate young persons of their own sex, and receive individuals whose condter hus boen incorrect, but whose characress are not notorions, and who ane placed here by their relstions to pxevent further shande The number of chatches, chapels, and niches in the atreets for saints, is quite prepostcrous; to theye are atcuched a multitude of celigious lay brotherhoods, of which the nembery are merchants, and other persons in crade, and ever some are comprosed of mulatio and tulack free people. Sone of these comtinnally beg for ot supply of wax, and other articles to be consumed in honour of their patron. Almost every day in the year, passengers are importuned in the atreete, and the inhabicants in their houses, by some of theae people, and among others, by the lazy Frauciscan friars. A Portugueze gentleman refused to give money for any of these purposcs, but after each application, threw into a bagg placed apast for the purpose, a 5 reis coin, the smullest in use, and io value the third part of a penny. At the end of a twelvemonti, he counted his 5 reis pieces, and found that they amounted to 80,000 reis, ubrout 86 6s. He then applied to the vicar of his parish, requesting him to name some distressed person to whom he should give the moany.

The 烪信 Office or Inquiaition has never had an eatablishment in Brazill, but several priests resided in Pernambuco, employed as its

[^12]familiary, and sonerimes persons judged amenable to this most horrid tribunal, have been serit under confinertent to Lisbon. Howover, the ninth article of the Treaty of Friendship and Alliance. between the crowns of Fingland and Portugal, sipned at the Rio de Janeiro in 1810 , has completely determinest, that the power of the Inguisition shall not be recognised in Brazil. It will uppear amrprising to Euglisly peranos, thast in it place so large as Recife, there shonld be no printing press or bookseller. At t]re convent of the Madre de Decos, are sold altwanacks, pribrs and tsistories of the Virgits and saints, and other productions of the same description, but of very litnited size, printed at Lisbon. The post-ofice is conducted in a very irregular manner. The letters from England are usually idelivered at the house of the merchani to whom the ship which eonveyed them is consigued, or at the office of the British consul. There is no established mcank of rorivarding letters to any part of the interior of the country, not along the coast, so that the post-office merely receives the letter bags which are brought by the small vessels that trade with other ports along this coast, and seads che bags from Pernambuco by the same conveyances, and is there is not any regular delifery of letters, each person must inquite for his ont at the office. When the commerce of Brazil was trifing, compared to its pregent state, a post-nffiee managed in this manner wes sufticient, but in consequence of the increased activity of the trade along the coast, and with Enrope, some attention olyght to be given to the subject, to faciliate communication. There is a theatice at Recife, in which are performed Portugueze farces, but the estabithment is mose wretchedly conducied.

The Botanic Garden at Olindn is one of those institutions which have arisen from the removal of the Court to South America; it is intended as anursery for exotic plants, from wheace they are to be digtributed to those persons who are villing and eapable of rearing them. Thus the bread fruit tree has been ivtrodacel, the black pepper plant, the large Otaheitos cauc, and several others. I much fear, however, that the zeal shown at the commencement has somewhat
ecoled．A botanist has been appoimed with an adequate salary． He is a Frenchman，who had resided at Cayenne，and with this choice many peraons were much dissatisfied，as it was thought，and with grod reason，that a Poriugreze subject might have heen found， quite capable of toking the managenent of the garden．

The sight．of iall otliers，the most offeusive to an Englishman，is that of the criminals，who perform the menial offices of the palace， the barracks，the prisona，amol other public builidings．They are chuined in couples，and each couple is foitowed by a soldier，armed with a bayonet．They are alluwed to stop at the shops，to obtain any trifle which they wuy wish to purchase，and it is disgusting to see with what wneoncern the fellows bear this most diegraceful situation，laughing and talking as they go stong to each other，to their acquaintance whom they may clance to rucet，and to the soldier who follows them 35 uguard＊．The prisons are in a very bad state，little attentions being paid to the situation of their inhabitants．Executions are rasa at Vermarnbuct；the wore viual punishment inflicted，even for ctimes of the first magnitude，is tratisportation to the coast of Africa Whike fersons raust be re－

[^13]nored for triat to Bahin, for crimes of which the panishthent is death. Eiven to juss sentence of keath upon a man of colour, or 2 negto, several jouliciat officers arast ive present. There boes not exist here a regrlar police; when an arcest in to lee effected in Recite or its neighbonslowd, wo officers of justice are accompronied by shaldiers, from ane or orlier of the regimenta of the line, for this purpose A romida o: patrole, comsisxing uf'soldiers, parades the strects duriog the night, at stated periodis, but it is tot of much sersice to the town. Recife and its vicinity were formerly in a very tranguil state, owing to the excrtions of one individual; he wax $a$ vergount in the regiment of Recife, is vourageous man, whose activity of mind and body had lad no field upon whieh to act, until the wies employed in the arduous tayk of apprelaending criminals, and at last lue received special orders from the governot for patroling the streets of Recife, Olinda, and the villages around then ; he and his folfowers were much dreaded, lout at his death no one stepped into his place. *

Themilitury estahlishment is much neglecteal. The regular troops comsiat of two regiments of infantry, which ought to furm together a body of $\frac{0}{3} 500$ men, hur they weldom collect mare cffective thax, 600 ; so that sufficiur numbers can scarcely fie mustered to do the duty of the town of Recife, of Olinda, and the fors. Their pay is less than 2tit. per dey, and a portion of the flour of the mandioc weekly, and their eloatbing is afforded to thent vary irregularly. From their miscrable pay, rather more than one farthing per day is held batek for a religious purpose. Recruits ate made of some of the worst individuals in the province; this mode of reccuititug, and their most wretched pay, accomn completely for the depreciated

[^14]charncter of the soldiers of the line They are formed chicfing of Brazilians, and people of colonr. Besides these regiments, the militia of the town sometimes do duty withour pay, and these make but a snryy shew. The militia regiments, commanded by mulatio and black officers, and formad entirely of men of these sasta, are very supperior in appesarance; but these $I$. shath have again an opportunity of mentioning.

There is one political arrangement of this province which, above all others, cricialoud for alteration; it is a gharimg, self-evident evit, it is a disgrace upon the goverument which auffirs its existence- I speak of the small island of Fermando de Nowonha. To this apot are transported, for a number of years or for life, a great number of male criminals. No females are pormitted to visit the island The garrison, consisting of about 120 men, is relieved yesuly. It is a very difficult matter to obtain a priest to serve for a cwelremonth, as chaplain in the island. When the bishop is applied to by the governor; for a person of this cullings be sends some of his ectkesissticul officers in search of one; the persons of the profession, who are liable to be sent, concoal themselves, and the matter nusually concludey by an young priest being literally preased into the service- The vessel employed between Recite and the island, visits it twice during the satac period, and carriea protisions, oloathing, and other artiches to the miseruble beings, who are compelled to reruain there, and for the tropss. I have cotiversed with persons who have residerl upon it, and the accounts I have heard of the enormities corimitted there, are most horrible; crimes, punished capitally or severely in civilized states, or which nit least are held in general abhoricucc; are here practised, talked of, publicly acknowledifed, without shame, and without remorse. Strange it is, that the tireadfill state of this place

[^15]slould thave so long eseaped the notice of the supreme Government of llasid. But the evii ends bon here; tho individuals who rotur: to Pemambuco, camsoc simice of the tementbracee of crimes which have become tamilitu to them. The powers, litewise, concedad to the commondanc, whose will is absolute, bave ofematucs gioved ture great tor due performatroce; punishment seldion follows. T"us most wanton tyrangy may be pracised ainosi witiout fear of renc:bution. The climate of thac island is sood, and the small portion of it admiteing of cultivation, $\tau$ have understood, from conpecent autiorís, to be of exiraordinavy fercilicy. Ir. dues not, bowever, afford any shelter for shippingr.

The supineness of the ancient sfstem upon which Brazil was ruled, is seill too apparent throughout; but che removal of the Sovereign to that country has roused many persons who had been Jong inffuenced by habits of incolence, and has increased the activity of others who have impatiently awaited a field for its display. The Brazilians feel oi more importance, their mative soil now, gives law to the mother cauntry; their spirit. loent kopr under severe subjection to ancient colonial rules and regulations, has now had some opportunities of showing iscelf, -has proved. that though of long suffering, and patient of endwrance, it does axist, and that if its posserisors are not ireated as men instrad of cbilliren, is will break forth, and rend asunder those shackles to which they have forbeariogly subndcred. I hope, howcrer, most sincerely, shat the supreme Governatant may see the necessity of reformation, and that the people will not expoct too much, but consider that many bardships are preferable to a generacion of bloodshed, confusion, and misery.

Freedom of communication with otber nations has already been of service to the country, and the benefits which it imparts are daily augmenting. This shoot from our European continent will ultirnately increasc, and a plant will spring np, infinizely more important than the branch from wbich it procooded; and though the season of this maturity is far distant, yet the rapidity of its adrance or tardi-
nes. of its growth greatly depends upon the fosteriter care or indifferent negligence of its sulers. Sitill, whatever the conduct of these may bee its exterta, its fertility, ancl acter mumerous advandiges mbst, in the comrse of timis, fire to it, liat rank which it has a right w claim anong ibe great nations of the worlel.

## CHAPTER IV.

 GOLAふろ.

IIIAD much alesired to perform some considerable journey into the less populous and less cultivaced part of the country. The chiet' engincer officer of Pernambuco had intented to visil ail the fo-treases within his extensjve diateret, and had kindty promised to pormic me to accompany him, but uniortunately his projected journey wes delayed frow some cause connented with bis place, uatil the following scason. As I did nor know how somn I might be under che necessity of returning to England, I could not posipone my views for this lengut of time, and thetefore mache enquiries anour my friends aud acquaintance, and cliscovererl that the brother of a gentleman resident at Goianu, was ubout to sel off for that place, and vould, probally, from thence proceed further into the conntry, witl some objoct in view comected with trade. In was my intenrion to advanceas far as Seara. I applied to the governor for a pasport, which was immediately granted without any difficully.

On the sfremoon of the 19 ch October, ISIO, some of my English frieuds accompanied me to my cottage at the Cruz das Almas, that they might bs present at ray departure, in the course of the ensuing night. Senhor Feliz, my companion, arwived in the evening, bringing with him his black guicte, a freeman. Proparations were made for proceeding upon our journey, sud about one o'clock, as the moon rose, we sallied forth. Senhor Feliz, myself, anck my English gervant Johu on horseback, armed with swords and pistols; the black

fande also on horsebacti, without sedule or bridic. carrying a blunderbass, and driviug on berore him a baggageatoree, with a fictle mulato loy mounted betwenn the pariniersis. Dy Friglish, friends checred us as we leff the Cruz, amblremained in my quaters, the command of which I Had given up co one of thern during my abseuce. That pari or the roud which we traversed by moon-light. I lamb abready passed over a short tirnc before and subsequantly from fruguent travelling my acquaintance with it was such, that I mithlu have become a gride upon it-

We code aloug a sandy path for three quarcers of a leagrec, until we began to iscend a stecp bill, of which rhe sides and the flat summile are covered with large trees, and thich brashwood growing bemearth them. The hamlet of Beberibe stands at the foot of the corresponding declivity; to this place severni families resorc in the summer, sind a sunall rivalet runs throurh it, of which the water is most beautifuliy clear. H anff a leaçue bcyond Bebcribe we crossed anotier rivalet, and immedjately afterwards commenced our ascent of the hill of Quehracu, which is in most parts very steep and very marrow, being inclosed on one side by a precipice, and on the othex buy sloping ground covercrl with wood. This ridge of hill is quite flat along the top, and the puth sonimues for half a leugne, letween Jotty trees and intupenetrable brashwood. Wyc deacended into the long and narrow ralley of Serueirn, through wihich a rivolet runs, of alich the water mever fails. The hills on each side are thickly closthed with wood, atad in the valley arc scattered several cottages, banana gardens, and mandioc lands, with a large inclosed piece of ground in which cuttle graze. The uscent, on the opposite side of this benutifil vicle, is very stete; the path along the summit of xhe ridge is similat to that orer which we liact travelled; we soon again descernded, and on our arrivat at the bottom, entered the long, atraggling village of Paxatibe, with mandita lands and plaintain and tobacco gardens intermised with the houges. The inhabitants are mostly Jabouring free persons, white, mulation and black. The houses are buijt on excla side of the road at intervals, for the dis-
tance of one mile A rivilet runs through it, whicl in the rainy season often overflours jus bankz to a consinerelzie distance on cowt side. Beyord this village the rand is compurabively' fat, Dut is atill diversilied by umecial small elewations; several sugar-works are seen, and great numbers of small coicanes; the passing of the country yeople with Loeded horses, carrying cothon, kides, and other articles: the produce of the country; and returnigg with many kinck of wares; salt meat and fish from Recife, wisy ilnose be called continual.

The town of Iguaracu, which we now entered, has been already mentioned in a former chepter; it is onc of the oldest settlements upon this part of the const, and riands at thie fistance of two leagued from the sea upon the bunks of a creek. Tbe woods, that border the parhs or roads, are in parta so thick and close as to be impassable even to a man on font, undess he carries in his lanad a bill-hook or hatchet to assist in breaking through the numberless obstacles which oppose his progress. Of these the most formidabla is the cipo; a plant consisting of long and flexible shonts which twist themselvee around the trees, and as some of the sprouts, which have not yet fixed upon any branch, are moved to and fro by the wind, they catch apon a neighbouringr trec, and as the operation continues for many years undisturbed, a lind of net-work is mate of irrearelar form, but diffcult to pass through Of this plant there are several varietins; that which bears the name of mipo cururu is in the laigheat estimation, from its superior size and strenglit, athd likewisu from ins great flexibility. Several kinds of cipe are ured as cordage in making fences, and for many other purposes.

Igramacu is partly situated upon a hill and partly in the plain below, where a rivulet runs, and a stone bridge his beco built, as the cide reaches this spot, and watth render the communication difficult*. The place plainly denotes that it has enjoyed greater prosperity

[^16]than it. at preserit las to boast of; many of the louscs are of two stories, but they are neglecter, and some oit rie smatl cothnges are in deeas sud rain. The siraela are faved, knt are nuch out of repair, aucl graas frows in many of them. It comtains several chintites,
 sud prison. Its nfflucneo procecderl formerly from die weekly enitle fair, which was lueld upon a plain in the vicinity, buc, tbis has now for some yeary past been romoved to the neighbourhood of Goiana. lguaraçu has many white infablitants, several stajs, a frond surgexn, who was educuted in Cislyon, and it is the resort of the plantations, to the distance of several leagues, for the embarkation of their sugat chests, and for the purchuse of sompaticles of mevessity. The town coatuinu wbout eight hundred inhabitarita reckoning the seattercd coltages in the outskirts. The view from the tower of the principal church is said to be extenaive and grand. The only regolar inn of which the comntry hins to bonst is established here, for the convenience of pissengers between liecife and Goiana, ancl at this we intended to have stopped luud not the early hour at which we rewched it, vempted us to push forvards before the sun became tore powerful. *

The road continues flet and sandy, and two leagues beyond Iguaraçu we entercd the village of Frsmado, which is built in the fortn of a nquare; it consints of a church and a number of cottagea, most of them of mean appearance, containing from 200 to 400 inhabitants. We proceeded throurfi it, crossed the nust considerable stronm we

[^17]had yet seen lis day, tuallew Alarife, atid ortered the inciosed field atteched to the engerbo, or sterseworns, of Araripe de Baixo. belonging to a Porturatere. Wre axpected to hase obtained a dintat
 comerort of our stomaths, we uade:shonl irom our hast, that his intended hospitadity would not be in reacinerso until the day wouid lave been ton mncl broken ino by the additional welay; therctore
 ascerided wother sutely lill, passad several sugur-werks and cottikers. and crossed several rivulets, traversibg a mosi deljefletiul wontry. We rote throngh the hamlets of Bu and Fontainhas, at the cormer of which there is a claspel. From the tutter the road is chiefty over a sandy pluin, almost without wood, until the engentor of Bujiri is discovered with its field of grass and woods around. Irmmediately beyond it is to be forded the river of Goiana, influenced by the tide as far as this spot. The wooden bridge which, fommerly exisced was now fast deciaying and dangerous for luorses; we fine ours to the guide, who led them : hrough the water, ridime tur, his owt, whilst we found our way across some loose bcams. 'I'lis operation did not delay us long; we received our steeds from the guide, with their saddles wat and diemselves all dripping, and in a few minttes more chicteri the town of Goiank, berweet four and tive oclock in the afternoon. The distance from Recite io Goiann is fifteens leagres.

The road we had travelfed over is the bighway from the Sertam *, by whith the cattle descend from the estates upon the river Accu, and from the plains of this portion of the interior to the markers of Kecife; theretiore the continued passing of large droves of cattle has beat down the underwood and made a broad sandy road; the large trees still remain, if it has so happened that any grew upon the rack; these, if of any size, brave the erowd of animals, and

[^18]will remain either until they decay from age ank fall, or dill regular rotids bestin to bo wanstrueted in Brazil. Thats, it the ground is flat. the rond is wot bat ; buth apon ifite sides of hílls, instend of being catried round the steepest ascenta, whe track hus been moule straight up and dow'h ox mearly so. ancl the winter tortetucs limen deep enverns ard ravinex, the sidgad of which somerimes fill in and make the rouds very dangerots; so that, unlons well acquainteal with a bill, it is by no meand ajafe to ancend or deacend by night, as olle or two days of the uaqa. rain of Brazil may have made a great diflerenee, and lave rendered the road impassable. In the course of this day we baw four or five large and radely construched croases erecued by the road side, pointing out ilhe situations upon which inurder had been coutmitted.

I wits recoived mont kindiy by Senhot Joacuin, whom I had before had the pleasure of meeting at Racite, and he was not $u$ man to be long in becoming aequatited vith. Wie sat slown to dinner inbout tive o'clock, when his larly and two littlo girls, his daughters, mande their appoarance. We had dishes couked in lortagueze, Brazilian, and Paglish style.

The town of Goiana, one of the largest and most flourjshing in the captainey of Pernambuco, is sicuated upon the banke of a river of the same name, which at this spot bends so consideribly, that the town is almost: surrounded by it. The dwellings, with one or two exceptiona, have only the ground-floor; the atreets are not paved, bnt are broad, and of these the principal ones is of aufficient breadth to sudnsit of a large church at one axtrennity, and the continuation of s street of considerable width on each side of the church. The town concains a Carmelite convent, and several other places of worship. The inbabitanta are in number bewveen four and five thousand, man it is an inereasing pituce Several shope arc ustablished bere, and the commerce with the interior is considerable. In the streets are always to be seen numbers of the matatos*, countrymen, either

[^19]selthg prodlece or purchasing menutationd goods andiother anticies of costumprion. In the vicinizy are many fine sugar piantations. I =ippoie tbat some of the bust lanus in tise proxtoce :ce in this ne:ghionarlood. The propriezors oi ebsese occisionally reside in ijis 1 own, and es doity interconree often creazes rivelry among wegallyy ramilict, bis negessarily incresses expenditure, and the ton? is in onnsequence mach benefired bye the a:gmerted consumption of luximies. Tize planters hove the udvanage of water carclarist from hence to Recife for their sughrehesta, th this river is one of zhe largest for many leagues to the moren or to the south. and is infivencerl b- the lide even to a short distance above the tomn. Goima stands four leagues distart from the sea in a direct linc, but by the rivec it is reckoned to be seven. Abowe the town in the raing- scason the river averflows jos banks to a freat excent.

Goiena und its cxtensive discrict is subject in milinay affairs to che governar of Pernamivuco, bat ias civil soncerms are dircetod $b_{v}$ a $f_{k i z}$ de Form, a judicial officer appointed by the supreme government for the term oi threce years. who resides in the cown, and from his decisions appeal may be made to the omeidor of Tirailas.

We diaed ort one cecasion wilh the propriethr of the Musumbu extate; this gentleman and a few otheras, besides ourselves, dined in one apartment, whilat the laclies, of whom we werc not permited even to hare a transieut view, were in another arljoining. 'Two young men, sons of the proprietor, assisted their futher's slaves in majuing upon as at dinner, and did mot sit down themselves until we rose from table. The onner of the place is a Portugneze-nit is among this portion of the population, who have lefi their own country to accumulate fortupes in Brazi], thet the introduction of improvement is atmost impossible. Many Brazilizns likewise, even of the higher class, follow the doorish customs of subjection and seclusion, but these soon see the preference phich ought to be given to more cisilised manners and ceasily enter into more polished habits, if they have any communication with the towns.

On the 24th of Orrolser, ifclivered a letter of introcluction which, I had obtained al. Recife, to the Dr. Manuel Arruda da Camara This inteeresting purson then lay at Goiana very ill of dropsy: brought on by residing in aguish districxi- Ho wis du enterprising men, and bach andxys been an enthusiatit in butany. His superior abilities would have eaused him to be carcssed bya provident Government, when one of this descriphion is cstablishing itsclf in an uncultivated but improving country. He sbewed mee some of his dravirugs, whicti I thought. well executed. I never again had an opportunity of sceing him ; for when I retumexd from Seara, I hall not time to evquire and seek tor him, and he dica betore my second rovage to Pemamhuco. He wats forming a Flora Permambucana, which he klid nor live to complete.

Senhor Toaquim had bushisess ut Paraibar, which he intended to have seat his brother Feliz to transact; but as I offered to accompuny hing. lic thought it would be pleasunt to go with me, and show the lions of that eity bie stat off bis black guide and my servaut with a londed horse before us, and followed the nexi day wiak his blackboy. TFe crossed tbe Cimpinas de Coiana Grardc about sunrise, and passed the sugar pluntation of that name, belonging to Senhor Giram, standing at the foot oit the hill, which canties you to the Dung Rios. The roid I afterwards follownd to Hio Grande, is throngh Dous hios, but the rowal to lursibs strikes off juse before you reach it, to the right. The road between Conama and Paraibs presents noching particularly interesting, -The hills are stocp but not high, and wouds, plantutions, and cottasisis are, as usual, the objects to be seen. The distance is zlitteen leagnes. Wie entered the city of Paraiba at twelve orchock: and rode to the house of the colonel Hattias da Gaman a man of properix, and a colonel of militia He was an acquaintance of Seritor Joaquinn, and was about so leave the place for one of his sugar plantations, which be did, giving us entixe posession of his honse, and a servant to motend upon us.

This city of Paraibors (for wuch shaller places, even than theis bear the rank of city in these ver thinty peopled rcgions) contaits from two to three thousand inhabitants, includiasg the lower town. It
bears strong marks of haring been a place of more impotiance than it is now, and abough some improvenencs were foing on, they were comitcted catircly through the means which Government supplied for them, or rather, time Govemow wished to leave some memorial of his administation of the prov fate. The primpipal strect jx braad, and pared with darice stomes, but is sormewtut out oir repeir. The houses are mostly of one stove wizll the ground dioors as shops, and a fow of them have glass wintows; an improvement which has been only latcly introduced into Reciti. The Tesuit's consem is comployed is the governor's palacc, and the Ouzidur's office atud residence also; the church of the wonsent stands in che centre. and these ate the turo wings. The coovents of the Franciscan. Ciurmelite, and Bencdictine Orders are verv Jircie buildingry, sund are almose turinhabired; the frrst comains four or five friars, the second two, und the rhird only one. Besides these, the city lhas woost ois six charches. The public fouthatins at Paraiba are the only works of the kind I met with any where on the part of the coas which $I$ visited. One was built, I beliere, by Amaro Jonquim, the former sovernor. - it is handsome, and has several spouts; (he other, which was only then building, is much lauger end the superintendance of the workmen was the chiof amnsement of the govemor.

We waited spon this genrlemas the duy after our ntrival; my contpanion had leeen acquainted with him in Itisbon, when he was an ensign. His parents were respectable poople in one of the nortbern provinces of Portugat ; he was placed at some seminary Lor the purpose of being educaced for the chureh, but bue escaped fion thence, and enlisterl as a private soldien in Lisbous. One of the officers of the regimentin which he wis earclled, soon found out that he was a man of education, having leartit fis story, he was made a cadet, as being of good fumily. IIe camu over in the banne ship with Whe Princess of Brazil, a captain of infantry; married one of the maids of honour on their arrival at $\mathbf{R}$ io de Janeiros aud in about eighteen months, hacl adraneed from a captaincy to the government of Paraibu, and a commandery of the Order of Christ. We next crossed
to the other wing of the building, and paid a visit to the Orvider, a wery affable and good-humoured old zentleman. His chaplain, a jolly litele friat, and an old aequaimance of Sontiot . Toaquim, tnade his ap̌perenace, and was afterwards seng civil to us during our stay. The prospect from the windows presends Bracil scenery of the best kind; extensive and evergreen woods, bounded by a range of hills, and watered by several brateles of the river, witl here and there a white washed cotfage, placed upon their bunks, and these, though they were situated on higher spous of land, were still half concealed by the lofty trees. The cultivated specks ar ere so small, as to be scarcely perceptible

Tlie lower town cousists of small houses, and is situated upon the bordery of a spacious basis or lake, formed by tlue junction of three rivers, which from hence discharge tiwir waters into the sea, by one cousiderable streans. Tlie bank; of the busin are: covered with mangroves. as in wll the salt water rivers of this country; and they art so close and thick, tliat there seeme to be no outlet. I did nat follow the river down to the sea, buil I understand that there are in it some fine islands, with goow land, quite uncultivated ${ }^{\text {th }}$. Paraiba was the scene of much fifliting during the Jutch war, and I now regret not having proceded down the river, to the titmous Fort of Cabedello. This war was conducted upon a small seale, but the deeds which were performed by the brave defenders of their country, msy rank with those which sny other people have displayed in a cause of cqual import to the actora.

The trade of Raraibe is inconsiderable, thought the river admits of vessels of 150 tons upon the bar; and when itn the basio, opposite to the lower town, a rope yamn would keep them still, as no harm could reach them. It contains a regular eustom-house, which is seldonn opened. Paraiba lies out of the road from the Sertant to Revife,

[^20]that is, out of the direct way tiom the towes upon the coast itirther north. Tha inhaǹiteats ozt the Semith of the incerior, nill make for
 duce. The port à Rccite admi!s of larger qussels, and has more cortveniences tor the landing and simipncen ory goosis, conseguenzly it ob-

 the the the cupth o! the winter, or rainv mason. 'the lands of the captain-
 fienence is given to Fiantations neaver to Recife, trat those of Paraba are to be purchasuid at a much less price. The sugar of chis provimece is recbored equal to thas of any part of bessil.

1 soon saw whar was to be seen, and we had no society; tirne. however. did not appear to haner beavz; for Senhor Joaquirr was a man of inexhatstible good hrmour sud hilarity Whe lived by magic, as the colonel hat ordercd his servant to supple every thing for kl

The lare governor, Amaro Joanuim, brountht the captsincy into great order, ox his mecessazy severity. A enstom prevaited, of persons waiking about the town at night in large cloake and crape over their faces; thus concealud, to cary on ineir izrerrular pratices. The gorernor, nut being able to discover wio these persons were-gave orders oae night for the patrole to take into custody all who were so dressind; this was done, and some of the principal inbabilants were fromd the next moning in the guard-nouse. A man of the mame of Nogueira, the son of a bleck or melizto waman, and of oue of the first men in the captaincs, had made hinself muchdrenuedby his outrageous procecding*; he had carried from their parents' housea, she dandiduters of some persons of resectability in the captalucy; murdering the
scceivar rfity grneaj game. Parnibe it callerl Scrout. .Imanhan.



friends and relativcs who opposed his catrance. The ruso uns at last taken; imaro Joaquim wrould have had him executed, but he found this was not to be done, from the intereat which rbe fanxily made for him, and inercfore orderen him to be finged. hogucira said, that being half a fifctisu a noblcnaun, this mode of punishment would not be practised upon him. The governor then underen that he should be Hogged upon only one side of his body. that his freldtono side might nof suffer, desiring Niogueira ro say which was his fixdutgo side. He was accordingly punished in this manner, and after remainingry some time is prison, was senr to Angalat for lifo The city of Pareibs still enjowed the gond effecrs of Amaro Joaquin's atrict government.

I wias acquainted witb him at Permambuco, before I set off on this journey; his appearance and his conrersation both bespoke a raan of superior albilities. When I sbew him in Recife, he was on his vay to Piaubi, of which capraincy the had been appointed governor. He died on board a coasting vessel, on the passage to Pianin, of it fever.

Senhor Joaquim wished to return by the sea shore to Goiana, a distance of twenty-two leagues. We ret off at the time the tide was floving, and proceeded along the leach, until about eleven o'clock we reached the house of a Copitam-mor, quite a first rate man in thig purt of the worlc. It was a mud cottage, as bad or worse than that, of anç labourer in England, situated upon the barning sands, with a pool of selt water before the door, which is-never quite dry, consequencly, breeds insects of all kinds. We crossed two ferries in the course of the morning; the conveyances are small jamgadase; the saddle is placed upon if, and the horse sarims by the gide, whilat the rider stands upon the rsfi, and holds the xeins. The ferryman either peddled across the strean, or poles, if it be not too docep. About theer o'clocks, we found that we had entered upon a considerable

[^21]






 mb w wher, thev zormmarciv inened 10 tive righx, pasised our ism enimagli to see the laod on rie ocier side ot' the rock, and made for tu
 erms into a hole between mot pieces of $j x$; howerer, I succeeded in rasing 五vselt, and leaped trom it on to the sabd on tie otier side, jusc az cine retund of a wave, by which means 1 bad ar iunivtentional coid bath up to wiv wils, We might certaind liste maited to bave aflowed the tide to retrest, but were atiaid of being bemighted, which after ail our exertions, did happun to us. The entintsy on rhe ozher side of the projecting rock; ís low, and sardy uncuivirated lawd. At dusk, घe arrivè upor rke barks of a broad stexm, so that by the light which zhen zemained, we conld not sce the uther side z alier seteral catts, the iemr man did not make kis appearance, and the night closud in. I axivised s?eeping under the tree which then sheltered us; to this my companion would por consent, but asked the distance to Abia, the nearest sugar plantanions flre guide answered three leaques, - we mun either slepep where we were, or go to Abía We had already ndranced sixteen lesurges and Senhor Joaquim's horse, a fine bigits fed animal, boran to give way, the sulde led, and we fotlomed, chrough 3 nasom park, vers livite frequented, ts the bushes ofrentimes warly took off our hats, and were contimually brashing agaidst us the rhole mas. On our arrival at - bias the house was quite deserted, as the stentiml mas from home, and we did not like to enter a cotrage which stood near to the principal house: when we found that the party in it was larger than our pwan, ard not likely to be of the best kind. We had now another
helf league to for to sonhor Leonardo's, thend of my festow duveller.
 hursen, and in the norning we sel figth for Giotana, seven leafues.
 Hutadreat ioliabitants. This village is not io roralarly built as many of the ochers which I have sucu; instead of a square, with houses on each siden, it is built in strects, and though the rigaare is preserved, still it is mot the principal fenture of the place. The Indians of Allandra, from their vicinity to Goinun, which is distant nizont lirce letgueg, are mot so pure as those finther frosin a lasge town; they have admitted smong them wome mametueos and mestizou.

Grent part of this extone of const was uminlunbited, butt wherever the land was fow, and the surf not violent, there we found al few cottages; the banlea of the rivars were allas not entirely destitute of intabitants. The two atroams which are firbt ovosiod might be about eighty or one hundred yards in breadth; they are deep, but do not proceed fiar iuto the country. Whap the ation of the tide ceases, alf these lesger streams become ithiguificant, and most of them quile $d r y$. The great river which we were to have cronsed is Life Gioiman; it spreade very widely when the tide ontexs, but is easily puased at the ebbe, and the chanut becomes mualt contructed, nad vary shallow during the apring tides. It is juiged to be about a lengue in breadlh, at its mouth, and ís mand deeper immediately wichin the bar than upoas it.

## CHAYTER $\because$ ，

 じビミジメ゙とた。

IHA D Entertaivel hopes or＇veing secompanied by Seribor Foncizin， at leasz as far es Rio Grance，but he chergeil his ruind．and I begac to make the necessary artantements tor ruing alone．I pur－ chased three more horses，and bired a goibe sur the sierten，who was

 Engitis？Johse，Froiteigco the aciode，Jidio，amed the kilser boy，his compenanion．Whe outy reaclred Dous Rios the same creningry wich is
 and gos on very nowly－ns the two loads upou the haress were not well divited ardi armoged． 1 now tourci，on stopping for the night， that I had nat wrovided as motay things as were netessary；cliet I wented an additionai picce of ouize to nover myselta nitnhe，here we ought to have brought more kitchen apparatus，ard ther kijiver and forks were to be hac very rarely．I had witi ne a rmonk with wy cloarbi，on one side of the pack－saddie，andi a cúse，with sctite botties of ram and wine on the orlat side，and anc honatock in the ntidaif； chese mado one load．The otber borse carriect in the malax，a kind of trunts，on the ane side，our provisions．and on the oither，the cfoaths of rov people，achetitional ropes，and orber rackle．T west leer from beiry well stepplied，but stornands provided meseit with mork things es $Y$ went on，learning bè experience．The bammocks are dill
macie of cotton, and anc of several sizes and cotours, and of vurious worbmanship- Those in use amonig the lower orders, are ynade of colton clor.h, of the mannfacture of rhe conatry ; others are compond of net-work, frome which all the several kiuds derive the general osme of Rode, a net; oubcris apain, are knit or woven in long struight threacts, knotted weross at intervals: whese are usnally dyed of two or three colours, and ate to be found in ilse houses of wealthy persona. Ttis specits of bed has been sdopted from the Indians, and nothing more convenient anul better satuptod to the elimate, could possibly be imagined; it san be wrapped up into a very small compass, and, with the addition of a piece of baize as a coverlid, is usually of sufficient warmen

I could not discover that there was any stream at this plines, though it bears che name of Dous Rios, or the two rivers. It is a large open picce of land, with cottages upon the skirts, and uthached to each is a pon for cattle 'inhe freat weelily fair for cattle from the Sertam, for the Pernambtico markee, is held here.

From Dous Rios, wo adranced the following day to the angar plantation of Espirito Santo, siruated ppon the banks of the river Paraika, which becones dry in the summer, at a short distance above this estatc. I luad letters to the owner of it, who is a member of the Cavalcante family, and the Capizam-mor of the captaincy of Paraibe 1 was reepired by him in a very friendly manner. Tha house is in the usual style of ile country, having only the groand-floor, and no cciling, the tiles and rafters being in full view. Supper of dried meat, and the flour of the mandioc made into paste, and called piram, was placed before me; also, some hard biscuits, and red winc. I wis not then sufficiently a Bravilian to eas piram, iad took the biscuits with the meat in preference, which much astonished my host. Sweetmeats were afterwards brought in, which ure always good in the houses of persons of his rank in life; the opulent people in Brazil taking as much pride in their doces, as un English citizen in his rable or his wines. The cloth was laid at oue ond of a long table, and I sat down by myself, whilst the Cupitam-mor placed himself





 I spole Porinerueze éther $f$ must be an Fingl:siman wion eid ror spegi: Englinh. or ahat any Pozengucze- on poing to Engisnd, wotid Smandintely speak the language of zhat couns.r. as I did Porat Enter liue Capitara-mor seldom lewnes hit esaate to go to Recire. or peon to Parabor. and liocs its the wand sticle of the Brazilian gentr: ith a kind of fevdal arate. He had siveral soung men abour him: some o: whom trete emploved by hint neizee his wite, no: any of bis chiddren appeared. The principal aparaments of rỏjs house are two tuacions rooms, haring a greai numier of doprs encl ximdows; in one, were sereral humurocks and a sote ; and in the otber, ike long table upon which I supped; there were a dew chairs in eacin or them; the foors were of irick- and due shuters and doors were unpainted. The owner of thts mansion wore a shirt end a pair
 This is the unual dresis of those perzors who have no work so perform. When a Brazifisn takes to vecaring one ot thete iong gotrus, he begins to think himself a genthman, sodemtity, consequent s, io murners respect.

The neit day we sdranced aboun seven leastues, and, for the first cime, I slept in the open air. We intended to have taben up our lodging for the nighli at a neighbrouing hataler, but ihe buts were so small and miscrable being coostracted of the leaves of palm trees, that I prefered the open air. We macle tor the rivuler which runs an a lithe disanice trom these habitations; the horses were immediately unkoaded, and their pack-saddles taken off, that they might roll in comfort. The next ahing to be done, tras to get fire-wood,in most parts of the conatry it is verf plentiful, and as we were upon the skits of a thick wood, there was here no mant of it. A light
wats struck, aud two fires mude; we gnt an additional fant from one of the neighbouring hats, and our dried meat was cooked. The meat is dried in the old Indian mather, by laying it upon a platform of twigs, raised about eigheen inthes from the tround, whil mating a fire underneath. We discuvercd that not far off, a field or piece of land, rather more cleaxel of wood than the rest, was rented by a cottager, who would allow our hones to be put inte it for a virutom, atront five frithinga each, for the right, which the guide thought $Y$ should consicler denr, and therefore cold me, it was the usual price. As may be smpposeld, I matle no great lificulties on this score, and the horses were takers to the place lyy Julio, and his companion. $I$ now thuught myaclf settled for the night, and therefore ate my supper, sitting in my bammock, which was sluag between two trees, with the plate upon one of the trunks; having finisbed, I took my segar, and sat lown close to the fire; the guide lighted his pipe, and placed himself on the opposite side, that we might have a talk about our procemding for the morrow. I repurned to my turnmock about ten owlock, but found a he air sery sharp, and consequeraly lidel down under the lee of the fire, upon a hide, of which we bad two for covering the Joads in case of ratia.

This wat to me a new seene, -when I tuougbt of the complete change of habits whicle this kind of lite required, and how entirely difterent it was from any thing in England, I may almost say in Europe, -when I looked vound, and saw our several fires, for the cold air hatd, by this time, obliged cach person to have hia own; the men all asleep, our pack-4addles, trunks, and other parts of our baggagec scattered about, as it wis taken from the horses, -w when I beard the running of the water, and the rustling of the trees; and, when I considered, that I was entering amono a people with whose habits I was litule acquainted, whose feelings towards my countrymen I was ignorant of, - I felt a kind of damp; but this was soon removed, by thinking of the pleasure of return, and of the accomplithment of what I was deemed incapable of performing. I was cheered by may recollection of the knowledite I had of the language, and by the de-
xemainarion I fetw within me of conforning to the cusiotss of the

 Thes zhoughts mete inxerruped by the cry ot－Jezist＂which wss


 some ferson helping anodher＂a bem norrer，＂that is，xbat some dying pezsor，which I found was the usual custom，had a fiend to repest the worl＂Jezus＂until the sufferer expriech，that it might not be for－ goiten，and，perhaps，to kcep the devil off．

I finced the following day at the village of Mamangupe，sinuated upon the barks of a dry river；it is a chriving place．These more modern villages hase been built in ode lonter street upon the road，the older ones in a square lt had then about three hundread inkabitants； bur I bare sioce heard，that the number is more than doubled，and rhar new houses are building．The river can scarcely be reckoned of any aitrantage to the village，bur the flace forms a convenient breal berveen Goisia and Fio Grande for the traveling pedlers，a use fill，industrious，and，generall $r$ ，honest ser of men，as their rearing－ place and head－quatters；from hence they make daily excursions to the plantations，at a little distance，and return here to sleep． 1 passed che night in the our－houses of some suserar－works；my guide was much astonisherl at my not asking for lodgings at the caza－grande，of os；ner＇s house；bat I preferred these kind of quarters io betcer ones， where I might nun the risk of being obliged to remain bolf the night amake，for the pupose of giving news The hospitality，however， of the planters，is very great ；and no recoramendation is necessary， though I hat provided myself with a faw letters．

The next day we proceeded to Cunhiit，the sagar－plantation of the Colonel Andre d＇Aibnquerque do Naranham，the chief of the Maranham branch of this pumerous and dispinguished family of the Albuquerquess．$\overline{H e}$ is a man of immense lauded property． The planzaxion of Cunbain excends alohich the road fourteen leagues，
and the owner lase situe purchased amother large cstate adjoining; lis laink likewise in the Scrtam for breeding cattle are supposed not, to ke less tham thirty to forty leagues in exterst - of those kind of lengetes that sornetimes tale a man ilitec or four honrs to get over once

I had letters to kim from some of his relations and frienda at Pernambuco; he was siting at his door, wilh his chaplain nad several of his stewatds and other persons employed hy him, to have all the beucfit of the fresll wir. He in a timn of about thity years of age, liandsome, and rather above the midulle size, with genteel manuens, rather constly, as the Brazilians of education gencxally wre. He lives quite in feudal state; his negroes and other clependanta are numerous. He commands the regiment of militia cavalry of Rio Grande, and has them in good ordet, convidering the state of the country. He came forwards on my dismounting, and I gave limithe lotiers, which he put by 10 read nt leisure, and then deviring me to wit doms, asked ne нevoral questions of miy wishes, interrions, \&e. FIe took me to his Guests* apartmentes at a Iittle diatance firm his own residence, where $I$ found a good bed; hot wuter was browght to me in a lange brass buin, aud cyery noceqsary was supplied in a magnificent style-the towels were all fringed, dae. When I hatd dressed myself, I expected to be called to anpper, but, to my ammement, I waited aintill near one o'clock, when a aervand came to summon me:. I fontad in the diaing-room a long tulbe laid out and covered with meat of several kinds, and in quantity sufficient for twenty petsotis; to thie feast the colonel, his chaplain, another person, and myself sat clown; when 1 had tasted antil I was quite tirect, to my utter dismay another conuse came on, equally profuse of fowls, pastry, \&ce. \&ce and when this was removed, I had yet a thind t. $\delta$ go through of at least ten different kinds of sweetmeats. The aupper could not have been bėtter coaked or hundsomer, if it had been prepared at Recife, and even an English epicune might have fonnd much to plense his painte. I was not able to retire to rest until near three o'clock; my bed wia most axcellent, and I enjoyed

 dasted；xne，calew and wisus w！







 fivialet ancler some treno s，upor at most beatilind spor．






 and Ji力t Kealen whirks standi at thae moutl nil the＂otevori＊

The calytaincy of Rio Giratide commences some leagrest to the

 Intricate，und when once an man hes taken up lise residenca fore，it is impossible to dislodge kitn．

This scasion the crop of cotton bad failed；it way one of thase yents in which a greft wint of rain was fult The colonel of Cunlıà had．for the fixst tirne，planted a piece of land，fromis which he expected to thave gathered 10,000 arrobers，but in the end orily gatbered about 100 in snd be told me that he shovld keep is his supar henceforwirds． He is lemient to his shaves；they looked fat and wells and liv has．


Lice characiter of mot making as much of his plantation as lue michlt, which is oue proot of bis kincioen to alyem. Tile cstare of cimnincut is one of che larigest, if swi fuite the mosh exteanive, in these Faits. There are upon it about $1 \overline{50}$ negroes, and the lingls belonering to it would employ four or five times the muwber, bui lle coloncl piays inore atention wo caule, by whickly his father increased his torLane very larinely,

As unazl, on our atrival ly the side of the rivalet the horses wete unloadel, and my hamnuck was slang for me. I laik down in my clowlus, but soun I started rpy finding my;elf unensy. The guide suw me, and ealled out, " $O$ sir, you ave covered with curapatos." I then perceived them, and felt stilf more tbeir bites. Instantly throwing off part of my cloabs, but with the remninder upon me $T$ ran into the water, end thene Eecgan to take them off The carvpafo or cick, is a swall, lat insect, of a dark bromen colonr; about the size of four pins ${ }^{+}$heads placed torgealer, it fastens upon the skin, and will in rime cat ins way into it. It is dangerous to puli it out quichly, when alroady fised for if the head remains: inflamosation is not unfrequently the consequence. The point of s beated fork or penbrife applied to the insect, then it is too fav sdvancedi into the skin to be taken our with the hand, will sutcceel in looscring it. Thert is anotber species of tick of much larger size, and oí a lead coloar; this is principally troublesome to horses and horned cattle, that are allowad co run loose in lands which hava been on y partially cleared. I have, in some instances, seen bolses that have bad such vilist numbers upon them, as to have been weakened by the loss of blood which they hare octasioned. IThe insects of this specius of carapato* fasten thermselses to the sLin, but do not forcte their way into it. The hammock bid fallen to the groand accidentally when tinken from the t funk to

[^22]
 tacked cāe excmy in tirts

We set of engin about rwo w'alociz; I Jazi intenticel to zave zidden un=il sumser, and ther an have pur up zacar to some eotege, but a




 were in freat request, as the rsins hed rimieci, nuci eine high samaly lands lapd proved barrem. For, whiist eveer orber par of ilie country appearest dry and burni up, this spot ans in fill verdure - is appeiarck to langh at all amound it, eware of its ont sidperibrity. Tike inhabicants scemed has theír countenances to partake of the joyfill looks of the land they lived in. Paperi yet enjoss another advantate; though it is at the diatance of three or this leaglies itom the sea, a salt water laise reachees it, so than !ts inhabicincs lese elate fish broumint 10 their own doors. The ride enters the datke, which is गerer dev, for whhough the fresh springe which rum into it miche faik, still it would alwars preserve a certain portion oi water from the sea. The fisherren come up apon their small river jungados, which do not require more than twelve inches of water. Papari is about five leagucs trom Cunhaitu. Seahor Dionisio introduced me to his lady; he is a native of Portugal, and she a Braziiian. Theer possessed a small piece of land in the valley, and mppeared to be comfortably situated. Papari msy contain about threc luudred inhabitanss viry mouch scartered. In the course of this yeur, $Y$ atierwards leterd, that many persous flocked to it from viher parts, owing to the alosulute want of provisions. I went down to the edge of che hake to see the fishermen arrive, the people of the raller had all assembled to receive them; it was quite a Billingsgate in miniature - satre that the Po:tugueze lanfonige does not admit of swearing.

Wre elincd in Prazilian stric, upon a tathe ratsed about six inches from the ground. amond which we sat or rather laid down upon mate ; wo had no fuths, :whl the Jnives, of whilst there ware two or three. were incended mowly to sover the larner piecos of meat - tlue fingers were to do the test. I vemained at Papini during one entire day: that my horses might has surrie respite, that I mifght purchasc anco ther trom Strmat Dionixio, and on poor Julives scounnt, whose feet hacl begron to crack from the alyyuess of the sands.

Distant from Papari, froms these to four leageres, in the lodiun village of Sl. Joace, built in the form of a separare; this place might contain :ubout two hundred inlabivitants: but it lad swidently the appoatance of talling to decay; the grass in the ceutre of the scuare was jighty the church neglectecl, and the whole aspect dull. St. Joze stand upon of dry sondy soil, and the severity of the season mighti have contributerl to its dismal look. This day we experiencerk tho utter impossibility of trasting to the accounts ve received of distances, and my guide had no very clever head for recollecting them, althougle le. dike most of these people, prossessed a kind of instinct with sespect to the paths we ware to follow. We weve told that Natal was distant from St. Joze three or four leagoes, and therefore expecred to arrive ut that place by dusk, but aboul five o'clock we entered upon the dismal samd hills, over which ties the ruad to the cily; the whole country is unimbited, and I may say uninhabitable, between Naval and \$c. Joze, consequently we bad vary daint hopes of meeting ${ }^{(1) y}$ y one to give as information of the distance; but wice gride said he supposed we ouuld not le neaver to it than from two to three lengues, from the recollection he hut of these hills, which when once pasced over cannot lue entirely forgotten. When ic was nearly dark, and when our horses were ahmost riving way, we aaw two boy's on horselatck, coming towards us: we nsked dem the distance, they answered "two leaghes, and all deep satud," adding, that they belonged to a party, which had come to make farinh ${ }^{\text {, }}$, trpon a spot of land, hialf a leagoe distant from where we were, upou which mandioe was cultivated. They said, that to go ou to

Rio frante cine sanue night was marisess, that the were goiag

 artived. diey stritin soon from the read, cown tie nide ot oner of the


 the farinha were phaced unde- : shech, which was larchech with the leaves of the macaiba, and other paldin erees. Thiose perions had fixed
 was, however, oala ta ibe renched by dencencling a peceipice: thet pitcher was fassened la a curd, and drawn up, and the person whe descended to fil: it, mantidet the precipice by means of the brushwowl which goows upon the side. I dic not mbiclt :ike the parly
 und none ol us se:tled regula:ly for the niplot. I row muela regretied not havineg a doy with me. Dur leorses pessed a wrechey night. feeding upon the leares of the slitubs around tit-

The next morting we continucd our journce ove the send lills to Nina? : watiling to abmut two miles within the how. The atis. tance from Goiana to Saza: is Stty-five leegues- The samd hills 2.e perpetual!y chenginge their stuations and forms; t:ee high winds blow the sand in clouds, which renders it dangerons to itavellews; it $:$ s white, and very fine. so that our horaen sunk up so the kites at every sxep,-paintill to a very great degree, when the sun has had full power unon ir. Pror Julfo had mounted upon the laanches of one of the londed hoteses, fund occasioned our treveliing stite slower. All mas thesolate and dreary for the grear lighuress at the sund almose prevented vegenation, though some of the crepoing seavside plants bad succeeded here and there in extablistinige a foozing-

The track of counrry bermeen Goiana and Espirito Samo, and indeed ever to Cunheni, bocping as no great dixtace fiom the coast, is appropriated for the most part to sugetrplatutations; but mame of the Senhores cie Engenho, sugar-planters, also compioy pate of their tiane in raisity cotion. The gemeral feature is of an menlivated country,
though a groat quameidy of latid is yearly employed. The sysitim of egricultare is so slowenty, of maller, as there is no matatsity for lumbinuly ol fitkd, from the immentity of the
 one year, :mal 1.10 next the brashwood is allowed to frow up, griving then to every pioce of ground that is nol. ubsolutely in use
 quainted, is some measure, from jaration, with the mpeatrance of the s'veral kinds of linmi. Fle will then preaceive the difference botwestu trashwoul that wifl not frow lotance the land is of a bure kind, arth that which is lelit to rise, that the lated may rest for anothor eropp. Vrown this manmer of exaltivaling their lavels, aplantation requires threc or lour timns move ground than would oderwise be necexaiary.
 but I staw nothing which dexerved the nome of monutain; i eroased some flat suncly plaims, thpou which the atem, mangiba, and sercral specith ol palin on cabbage trees sirow ; iluse are merely fit to turre catile tupon in wituter, and will only be bragght into cultivation when

 fenced giacees of trournd, attaclued to each magna plantation, upon whish ate fod the eattle leept for che work of it, sue the ouly spols which brar the look of fiedds; urnt oven in theses the brushwoorl is nut always auliciently cleared away, mulesa the proprietor is woaldhy and hay an abtmanter of porsons upon his eatale; otherwise, stoch is the lemility of the soil, that widhoat great cure, the berctalo will int tione lecoome a wood. Thbere are several hamlets upon the roat, consisisting of three and four cottsages, and these are buift aldight timber, int the leaves of the eabbige treos; others lave mad walls, and are covered with these leaves; and now and therb, a honse builu of mud, with a tiled rool; is to be seen, … this berpeaks a math above the common rum of people. I crossed treverob rivulets, which were much redneed by the dronght; but I did not see any great streama. The Purabib was dry where $I$ passed
 Hoce lake at Papuri, wes the only streame which arpmared stalf to posesia ite usunh strengets. The road from Goiman to Bhamangusue is the great Sorlaje tach, and is kimilar to that between Recife und Goinna, excepring that the plains of the part of the country 1 had just now tursersod, fre more panensive, and the ronds over meluse are dangerous, as thay are only tharked by the short and ill-grolfug gratse beging wort
 camol be kept so close, from the greaner uxtent ol gromed over which they pass, exch pirl receives fower footetejus, and the grass not undrequertly resista their passing, and vergetation still contimues; wonsequently, in an imperfect jigbly an expericnecd gride is mecossarty, ns on thear plains no hata are ever to be mote with, besing, for the noost prit, dostitute of wator. Titese, the Brazilians cull tabolciros, distinguishing them by this natre, from catapines; upon the latier, the soil iy cluter, and ihey tefford good grasio. Beyond Munangunpe, the woud is sonvetinesa a mere path, with broidal sut-
 not even the necessary widuth tor chis purpose. The valley of Papari $I$ baste already mantioned, at being much superior to the reat of the country. The trees in Brazil are mosty evergreens, and the drought. nust be greal indeed to make them lose their laves; but tho treent of the leaves of a parched plant, thoughe still a green, is very different from the brighte joyful colour of one thrat is in fill beallus. This produced the striking difterencep between that valley and the bunt. lands above it,-besidet, the mistortunce of other parts rude its good luck more apparent.

I arrived about elevern oclock in the morning at alse city of Natal, situated upon the hanks of the Rio Grarde, or Potengi. a fomigner, who might chance to land firat at this place, on lis arrival mpon the coast of Brazil, would form a very poor opinian of the state of the population of the couritry; for, if places like this are called cities, what must the towns and Fillages be; but such ujudgment would not prove correct, for many villages, even of Brazil, zuxpuas this city;
the raul must hate been given 10 ir, not ferrit what if was or is, but forin the expectation of whal it might be as some future period. The settlemont upon rising ground, rathor removed from the river, is properly the cily, ix the parisk church is there; ic consists of a sguare, with houses on each side, haring only the ground floor; the churches, of which there are three, the palace, town-hall, and prison- Thatec itreets lead from it, which have also a few houses on cach side. No parc of the cive is pared, alchough the sand is depp; on this accoint, indeed, a few of the inhalbitants luwe raised a foot path of bricks before their own houses. The place may contain from six tu seren bondred persons.

I rode inmediacely to the palace, as 1 had letters of introduction to the gofernor, from sevecal of his triends at Fernambuco. Heroceived toe in the most cordisl marnmer. He asked me for my passport, which I produced; it wis sutrcely opencd, and he immediately returned it, saying, that he only wid this, that all necessary form might be complied with. He said, thar I should stay wilh him, and he would provide a house tor my people. Ati one o'clock we dined, and ont of his ajdc-de-camps was with os. In the sfteraoon, we walked down to the lower town. It is situated upon the banky of che river; the bouses stand along the southern benk, and there is only the usual width ol' a street becween them and the river. This place nay contail from two to three hundred inhalritants, and late live the men of rasde of Ris Grande. The bar of the Potengi is very narrow, but is sufficiently deep to admic vessels of 150 tons. The northern bank projects considerably, sad for this reason, it is necessary that a ship should make for ic from the southward. The entrance to the reef of rockes, which lieg at some distance from the shore, ulso requites to be known, so that altogether the port is a difficult onc. The river is very safe, when once within the bar; the water is deep, and quite still, and two vessels might swing in its breadth; but it soon becomes shallow, and in the course of a few miles is greatly diminished. I should imagine, that six or seven vessels might swing sltogether in the harbour. . The bars of rivers that are forroed, as in
this case, of sard, are, however, iot to le: tusted to, without groot giluts, an chey aoon clanger thent klephla, aid ever thecit sithation.
 mile from the noonla of the hathour, firld sprend exer at considerable
 utidets- but never hecomes sufficiently deep to provent passin:g. Plte wovernur was daining in road over this priccc of ;and, and the work wat then nearly Itult fimished. Ithe new romel would the abous one nide in Iengith. 'The captumes of Rio (irunde is mbiject to the
 aned? in the same situation, but taxe ot late vears been formed into indeprodent provincial povernments:

The proverndr, Frameiscu du Panla ('avalcante do Albuquerque, is a native of Pernambinco, and a younger lurbitier of the clicef of the Cavalcante branch ot the Albunuerques. His fatlecr. a Brazilian also, was first an ensign in that Hecife repianeme of the line; lie atterwards establislicti himself upon a stergar-platatation, anck made a dottume. 'lhe old man died, and lett to cach of' his sonts ronsiderable property; two remesiect npon their cstates, and still live upon ehetri; this third son entered the Olindat regitnent, and wats much beloved by the men. The regimest had then orily one compuns, of which be become the: commander, and large sums of money taken from his own purse, were expended by him for dicir good equipment. Ite went to Liston on some lousiness relatitut to his compnayiand whilst hewas there a dentrain, a privase accusation, was given by some enemy to the family - that the brothers were forming a conspiracy against the government. Hewas obliged to leave Lisbon, afraid of beisig put mder an arrest, and fled to England, where bis reception was sueh, that he has ever wished for opporcunities of shewing kindacss to persons of that nation. His brothers suffercd much in person and in property, but matters werc at last cleared up, as the accusation was proved to be false. Francisco was immediately promoted to a majority, and soon afterwards sent to goyem Rio Grande. He is a man of talent, and of proper feeling in regard of his duties, -enthusiastic in wishing
ao betrar the condirion ol the people over whon he was placed. I atm grieved to ssey, what Jut han freen remuved to the insignificant


Wher he was appointed to Rio Gmarde, there was scurcely a well dressed persion in it, but he hard sweweoded in persuatiny one family to send for Einglish manufocrured goods to kecife - when once these were infrombuced they made their way - one would not be outdone Sy another, and, in the course of two years. Wey had become general. Wie visited dre church in the avening-all the Jadies were bandsomelr dressed in silks oz̈ various colours, and hlack veils throwr ower the head and face. At tuelvemonth previons to this periot, dicse same permens would $\mathrm{l}_{\text {ieve gore to church in putticonats of Lisbon }}$ printed cortons, and $x q u a t e$ picces of thick cloth oucr their heads, withous stockinges, and their shoes down af the hecls.

The military establishment consitits of one hundrad and fourteen wen-onc company - which were in much better order than those of Persambuco, or Iaraba The captaincy of Rio Grande cujoyed purfect quietude from robberies through his exertions. The governor promoted flae building of a $\mathrm{l}_{\text {arge }}$ house, which was going on very fasc, and for which he had subscribed largely; the rent of it was to be appropriated to the suppost of the widows of the soldiers of the apptaincy. This work has, I sm arraid, been laid aside since lis removil. The situation of the prisoners was very miserable; fie wished to better it, and requested that the principal perions of the place would take it in turn weekity to catry a bag round to all the inhabitanta, that cach might give some trific to assist in their suppot; for some time this went on well, but afier a few wecks it was neglected. He, wherefore, took the bag hinsself, and, sccompanied by one of his aides-deramps, called at every house. He snid, that this was the most comfortable week the prisoners had ever passed since their confinement, as more was given by each person than was usual, and the excellent arrangement was again laken up with ardour, by the same persons who had neglected it-

A British vessel was wrecked mear Nitial, and I have slways







 he took it himzelf, ogain giving it. out when necessiny at she same price. These ancedotes of him T harl parily fuom himealf: bue principally from persons of the place, to whorn $I$ was itatrodicend. When he leát the city, on his appointment io Sx. Michnej's, che people 户ollowed him to some distance, pravinger for his prosperity.

CHASTER VE.<br>

THE governor did all in his power to dissuade me from procucding furcher, the drought being so great as to rendet it not rurive prudent; but as $I$ had come so litr, $J$ was resolved, at any rate, to make the attempt. It I hail been certain of being able to undertake the journey at a future period, in would have been berter an have returned, and to have waited until a more fovourable serson; hue $J$ ann rejoiced that I went at that time, ss, otherwise, $I$ should most probahly have been under the necessity of foregoing my plan altogether. Some of the disarreeable circumstances which 1 met with, cevcainly proceeded from the rigour of the season-

I rectived from the governor at letter of introduction to Aracati. IJe also insisted apon tuy leaving my own horse, that he might be in good condition when I returned. I was to sleep alt a place from whicit Fioo Grande is supplied with farinha during the drought; but, in usual years, it is too wot to be eultivated, unfess it was drained, and of this operation scarcely any notious are entertained. At Nad, It purchased another horse. I crossed the river in a canoe, and the horses and men upon jangadas; we were landed upon the new raised road, and immedintely beyond ic overtook sowe persons wiso were going to the Lagoa Scca, or dry lake above-rmentioned, whure I was to purchase maixe and farinha, for crossing the tract of country throurth which runs the river Seara-meirim, We leff the uswal road, and turned down a nurrow path, which learla to this Jake; it was










 ouly a rorsi' to sholew iheir inbubitants, who expected that the first




 nother of maize, 1 bal provided myselt'at tia Giaredowith leathern
 hat noth Irean instraeted to lutiog, but which experience hasl tetught. me the macusuity of posiesning.

We remained at: this place duciug one eotire clay. and rate exext moming set off, imtending to sleep at a hatmlec, catled Pai Pand. We rested ac mid-dity near to a well, ared in the atemon proceresed, Wells are generally formed in these jatrts by tigging a dofe in the pround, wo the depth of tho or three feet, matil the water appears; if' a person in the neightrourlood ol' ane of them, $n$ ho takes water from it. shoulal be nice sbont 1 heses matcers, a fence is made round it, but iff not., is is oftener the entse, the well remaing ofuen, and the cotile come down to drink at it. 'These pins or wells ure callest eaciundos. 'L'he geass way much batiot up, but still there was plonty of it. In the aftemoon we parged over some stony grounch, it was the firal $f$ hack net with, and it was very painful to the horses which had come from the smady soil of Peroambuco; but we soon entered upon along
 rlear, aut 1.te grats burnu, up ethirely on each side. We overteok a white anan on food, with twolye londed hotwis, anta a very small poney which enrrind a atechelle; the lowads were all alike ench horse eatrying 4.wo skitns ow bith of some kind of provisions. I was meth sumprised
 hovesc, because gencrally, the ummber of men is gearly equal to that.
 platio, and seemed inclined to take to che brustrurood; I ealled to my gride to side to the rigut, whilst diat the same to the left, and gor in quiekly between them and the wood, to prevent the animala from sopjuratinta. 'The uman thanked mee, which bronght on fitether couverbation ; he fasked the graide where we iblendert to sleepr, and was
 all clrieal' up, and the jnlmbitanty bad deaeried their honses. What
 two lefgegey digitand froth where we then werq, that; no water was to lee lend there, but that for our paty and himself, his slave would briang a sufticieut quantity, who hat remained behnind to fill a skin at a well whit:h we hath passod. 'Tlere whs ith altemacive; to rmanin liere was impossible, fir chure was no grims. 'Therafore I ordered Jutio antl fia companion to jet our hearses and those of one new friond remuin together, and tio look to them equally. The stave soon joined us with the water, gave the skits to my reide, and went on to ansiat Julio, whilst 1 advancel very slowly, that I might linve some more conversation with the owner of the comboio, or convoy, which we had. thus joined. IIe was the son of a man of property, who repaided upon the banks of the $A_{5}$, whel possessed acoveral eattle estares in those patts; the old mart was at colonel of militia, and he with whotr I conversed, was the major of the anrae regiment. The drought had been so sevore with thent, that they tearex a famine, and lie had been sent down to the const to purchase, faninhe for the family, which the skins contained, with the exception of one load consisting of maize for his borses. Atter be had parchased his farinhat he bemt of the上, 2
 of' xoldiers was to be sent down to the dake to take it from fiem; he had,
 had lett all his people, excopting this ome shave, and haul worn heff his clomath. I lis sadide larose carried a beavy load, and he set off u dily beforc: he lade intended; the animal upon whict he liad phaced this saddlewas a coft and ton young to bear ang finctiver weight. Thos was
 dirnwers, hia riparatafas aremandals, upon lis feet, his mustuce apon liks shoulder, his sword by his side, hanging from a belt deve ome sheutter, and lis long knife irt his gipdle. Fife was at itout, lamamome man, thout forty yerrs of age, and where his shin was not exposed, it was as white that or a European, buf his faces, neek, and legro were of : 1 diark brovin colour. This man, who at other tirness enjoyen all the coneforts that his country affords, who was respectel tor hiv ramk and vealti, was olbligev to make this fotirney almolutely to save the lives of bis family. True ic js, that hay is riot to lee eomsidereal as we should persoms of his situation in burope; like most ol' thesig people, the hat heen from his infancy thily wecustomed to what men in in more civilised state wonlel sccount very grear hardships.

The elpargatas are pieces of heather, of $\pi$ size rather larger 1.3an the soles of the foet of the person for whom they are intemeled. 'Two loops ane fastenced in front of cach, througlt which two of the toen are placed; there is aring of leather roumd each amele, thronghe which are drawn and tied two thongs, olhich proceed from wach side of the hincler part. These are the elvees of the Brazilians, who live removed from great axud improving towno. Julio wan now provided with is pair of them, else I hardly know how he could bave proceeded.

We halted at the place appointed, upon an immense plnin; the grass was all gone, and even the hardy trees, the nenju and manyaba, seemed to feel the want of water, for their leavea had begun to fall. The two parties took up their struions under asparate elumps of trecs; but upoo theac plains, the trees scarcely ever frow sufliciently
near to each other, to epable the traveller to hang his hammock between two of them. The poor horses were taken wo a dell at some distance, to try to pick up what they could find, titat land esaped the drought and the traveller. Our allowinnce of water was noc Jarge, and therefore we were afraid of cating much sult mear ; we dide not pass the night comfortably, for the wind rose, and scattered our fires, nor did we sleep much, and at four o'clock the horses were jeflected to give to each of them a feed of naize. One of them refused to cat his portion.

The bollowing morning we advanced to Pai Pullo, threc leggues furthes, still crossing the same plain, st the extremity of which we first approacher the Sears-meirim, and on the opposite sicle from that on which wo were, stauds the village of Pai Paulo, apon eising fround. This was, without exception, the most desolate place I ever boheld; the roofs of some of the coltinges were falling in, the walls of others had fallen, but the roofs temained 'Ithe courate of the river was only rameted by the depth of its bed, for the soil around was a loose sand, destilute of aryy covering, sad nothing differing from that in tbe channel of the river. The trees bad mostly lost their leaves. I had now eacered upon the Sertam, and surely it desorves the natme. We passed Pai Paulo, and nbout noou reached an open well of Urackish water, dug in the bed of the river; our l'ernambuco foorses at frst refused to drink, but che dirt was cleured awsy, as much as possible, for them, and the wator lent to settle; however, efen then, they did little more than taste it. Herewe mere to rest, and to give onr horses some maize, for there was vo grass. The samae horse again refizsed his feed; the guide said that he supposed the was not accustomed to it, and therefore must be taught to like it, otherwise be could not possibly get over this barren track of country. The first opcration was to soak the maize in water, until it softened, -then the guide forced rome of it down the animal's throat, closing forcibly its mouth. Whether this had the effect, or hunger, i koow not; but at night hic performed his part pretty well, laking sather more time than the others to finish his feed. I dramk a small portion of the water,
mixing it with lemon juice and sngar, which I had with mes Wo carried sonue of this water on with us, for at might we stoould firid none. The country presented the sarue appearance; we croxself the Seora-meirim several times, which ith scme parts had large roclis ; the centre of the hed. At night I was not much inclined to eat, but I traste up by smoking. We found a sheltered place belinml part of the bank of the river, and slang out hammocks upon slopint gromed, us the wind rises about eleven or twelve o'clock in these parts, and renders shelwer very requisite; it sometimes blows bard : it is a duy wiad, bur lecalthy.

The following day, we proceeded again in the same namner. I had by this time felly entered into the custom of umoking carly, and as we coulth never get any thing cooked tintil twelve a'clocke, I found that this prevenred any unpleasant sense of hunger. My people coudd not Jave any thing to eat eatrly, na it would have caused delay, therefore it wonld not have been proper for no to show a bad exauple I lied become very intimate with ruy friend che majorbe learnt trom me that we had horses, and cows, and dogs in Englards and tee liked me the better for this; at firsh, lee wondered how it happened that $I$ could ride; he thought I must be un spet acholar to have learpt since I had gone over to Brazil. He was alino mach surprized to hear that we had churches in England, which be had never understood before. He said he ahould not believe benceforwatds that the English were Pargoczis, heathers. I told hime that one chief point upon which our religion differed from his, was ifr ours not cnjoining us to confess: he thought confessiom a great amonoyalles, but he could not doubt its propricty.

We raached another dirty pool or well of water in the river, which we had again crossed $\quad$ everal timas. Our resting-place at mid-day afforded no sheltex, excepting what could be obtaiped from one sraall shrub, which was in fiall leaf. The leaves or branches of it reached to the ground. I lay down upon the stad, and pushed myy head in among thena, covering the rest of my body with \& bidef tbis was a hot birth, but better than to be completely expased to the sum. I
vas astopished at the appearimee of thib sleraby. There are two

 adel both are parlicularyy dimgeremas to horses ; that is, as they do no mischied co alse wal cattle or wila horses, they nuy be supugesed not to possess any permicions quatities if the onimals which cat theiv leaves are not overheatect and Gatigted; the lacter of chese plants kids the zrat
 thace intoxication, nind somstimes also proves fatal. Then nation snid. that thtis part of tlee commpy pbonnded in these trees, and cousequently out hosses were tiud to those sround tas, and weach was eiven t feek of majze. The plate of which I have spowen nbove, wis sery berutiful, the green oit its leaver was bright and healthy, and I afterwards sasy mauy more of them upon this trazesio or crossing. I particudarly observed tlem on this trach of country, as other planks had lost sil uppearance of tifo.

We were loss umplemantly situated at night, as the water thatigh brackish wak comperatively clear.

The gollowing day we had will the same colntry and riter to choss. The conaciousness of having advanced uporz our jomeney aloze
 the face of the wountry. At midday we had anain no shelter ticom the aun The water viss little lifferent froms that of the preseding day- I laid dowf under the abady side of a rack, whiche atorded sufficient shelter antil tite $5 \times \mathrm{bs}$ began io declinc, and throw its rays juto the quarter uader which I had taken up my whation. Wie tred often sean cattle abour the pools ar wells - on tbis cacision, onc miserable cow came down to drink; the major happened to be near che pool it the time. He looked at the mark sine hore, and knew it to be that of the canle upon his own estates. *How can this axin mal," he oxclaimed, "have strayed so far from its owr home?" The want of water bad made it stray at leaxt one hutudred lengues, This diay we overtoolk a party of Sertanejos, as the inbabitants of the Sertank are called, likewige going our way. They were tat the



 lem, whe mimal when be Elll was with dithenly raisen, nari the major said that he thought lam ton fir gone 1 uever leard whetlew
 served in the ademoon several thesprof ratiss ist tha bed of the tiver, which must form beautifu! ialls of water whess rlac suream is rapid.

Towards evening my gude began to try me. I rimund ther theve had bem sotme converiation betweet hime and the iwo ludians respecrint the joutney, ond now he soturded me abour recurninge 1 told him I had perfectly determined to go on: and that I would most certainly shoor the mati) who atterngred to mo back, and that even ir he then escaped me, I would jollow ham matil I overtook him. He bad rot said that he wriuld return, bus had lintext at the danger of :he unclertaking st this season, ani thest the two lady were atraid oi proceeding, but i knew him to be the moser. At niglac he conld not have found his way back, as the only mark of a road that was 10 be perceived, proceeded from the sand being more worn awas, and the banks of the river being broken down at the proper crossings. In fact, the marks were such, that asen in the day-tinne, a man accuis tomed to chis description of roid could alone find it out-riteretore I was certain that desertion could only take place in the das-time, whicl, was alnost impossible, as I always rode in the rear of the whole party. The gride had ao fire-ams of his owny besiles he nefer would hare made any attempt to murder me, as he knew how little I slepr, and that my pistols were alonsy's with me in my hainmack, besides any thing of this gort could only have been done in concert witb Julio, who, in the sequel, proved worthy of the greatest confidence. I found inore wecessily ta be on my guard in relurniver, when John was no longer with me; however, although this man had suf'icient courage he had no watchfohess. The summary manner in wbich I threatevied to treat the equide, can only be justified by the
meessity of the cane, ior hat he rexurned, the two Indians would host prolanaly likewise lane deserted ane. If a nuan suffers himadelf to be trithed with, he ernnol possihly sacreed under circumatances such as these ; howerer, I made thae ilterat under the convigtion of that heing surficient.

We carried water from that reating-place at ridd-day, and, as uxual, fixed our gwatiens at raigha upnn the lanks of the river.

The mext day we adsuaced amain exactly in the same manner, but
 we rested the horers for $n$ short time, mextrichstanding this dreatifui clisappoint memt. My thirst was great, for I Iud not drank the night befire. We lad still some lemuns left, which wew distributed, and thene affordod much relief. In the altertaon the magion tollal me to fildow his enaaple, andi puit a pelalale ialo my mouth, which was the ustad resource of the Sertancjos on these ocessions. I did so, and cernainly found th:e it produced conniderable moisture. This was a dismal alay, and we know not whether we should be abale to reach a well tactore some orf our horics finilet. Whe of thase betongikg ta the najor, alrexdy ran loose anotig the others, as the was weak, and his hoad had been changed tinthe borse which had carried the maize, the scmuinder of this being distributad in small portions, that it might be cazritul by the rest. My borses bure it very well, as those which had beet toaded with provisions were, of course, in part reliever, and the largest load, that of my trunk and ense of botules, was carried by each of them in tuin, that the hard work taight be equally divided. This day we passed wome deserted cottages. Our night was very nimerable, for some of the horses refised to finjsh their feeds of maize; the danger of their fuiling prevented our thinking so mueb of our own inconvenience - my spiyits were kept up by the necessity. I felt of kocping up those of others. John was not quite well, and chis made ne uncasy, as it was as muct, as we could do to carry oursolves; indeet, had any of the party fallen sick, I know not how wie should have proceeded.

The nest morning, about nine o'clock, we reselded a well to our





 He canc and g\%ve as the juytbl intel:igence; ve detemnined to rumain lues to zeat, if the people could give us any hopos of toorl to cur formes. I found on elderly wotume ard her awo alaughaters in the ibur; ilne tather was not at home. The old woman semmed quile astonisherl to heat that we bad erosead the Sieara-3 Peirim; shee said, she dial nut kitow frow soon she aud lew tamily might de oblined to leave their cottuge, as many others had done. Shec directed the major and my people to a delt $n$ s. some distance, wheie dry arass and leaves might perhaps still be picked top; she said, that it wist the last piace which could have ang, for travellers cliul mot in stberal
 ing in. But I paved tha way by mating her a prexsent wis someforminhe, throwing maize to tite fowls, and by pourinto iv an inmense mumber of minhas Scranoras. 1 lual purchused a kid and a fowl, and laid diown the mones immediazely. ?lensons circmasanced as stices were. are sometinges rofuex in a mosk unparchonable manner by travelers, who take advantare of theix housits, cht their prolitry, surd leave them: without paying; but considering the encire non-existence ol law is thble regions, I am only surprized that greater cuormities are not conumitted, lawewer, every man feels it to te bis own case, if tee has a house and family; he is aware that on going from home, thpose he may leave are in the same hidplesa state. These persons and their propersy were at the mercy of any travellers; if they had been murdered, and che cottage from beiver deserted hegaa to fall, it would bave heen supposed lual its indabitants, like many others, had decamped, and no enquiry would be mate about the direction they had taken, screth is the rambling disposition of the people in general, and the scate of this part of the country, at the period of which I
aprak. Thoy have worthing to malie them remain upon one spot, neiden combort nor security.

In the aftermoun we advanced as ustan, and passed sonne deserterd roncares, but towatas the chame of the dny arrivial at sume that: wave inbatizited, and at dusk put npe avar to two or threte that stood torge-
 seeond fiore. Dhis wiver takes its soutces fiom the mountains to the northward, itt the otmme alipection as those of the river Acca, of which I shall Lave ocension to spenk. The seara-Mefrion fialls ioto the Pothengi, find perlapos sone branclios of it bend therir course as fat as the Peraiba, The face of the: eountry presents ous oontinced fat, from Pai laulo to the place at which we left the river; the soil is a toose sumd, which is somelines thengh rarely, intermixed with black eath.
 without heares. The xiver: winds like ulse coils of a ser pent, to hase folfowerl then would have been ondiless; is sometimes fills after hoavy rait, in etre contrsc of a very short lime, the water coming down in a
 and the walls with which the rocks in some parrs oppose its progress. 'Thes annd in the beid of the river is litale different from that of which the batuki are compored, being however on the whole thicker, and appromehing naarer to gravol. 'The water which oozes from it, on digering into the sand, is in atl parts brackish, ford in some placey is t.oo sath tore any une to be made of it, This ts not, howeyer, peculiar w the Soara-Meirim, for 1 foumd that all the beds of the rivers which become dry in tibe summer contanned more or less sult; at bost, wife witer taken from them was newer quite sweet.

The place at which we bad arrived is reckioned to be tistant furly leafrucs from Natal; the league of the Sutham is nover lese than tovirmiles, and is oflen muche more; there are legoan pratedes, hesoas porfucrins, and legrous de rarla, or nothing leagues, wioch. I bave found quite long enongh, nolwithstanding their encourdging uame. Pui Paulo may be aboux cight or ten leargues from Natal, which makes the trazesia or baxen-crossing, ibirty or thinty-two leagues. Wo ul-
varced at about three miles wiluin the hour or rather more, and travelled from hall-ipost fwe 10 ten in the morning, and in the aftesnoon frome two, or half-past two, to six odoci-

We had now reached again the halsiugrions of man; thene was stil! the same burnt-kip appuarance, but the welis were taken care of the water was better, and grasse althougt it was dry, was still ro bo had. 1 intauted to secompary the Wajor, part of the way to his home, or ind. whole, lat it was necessary that I should be fuikled by rircumstanees,
 vanced in out uxazal maner, resting more ar. midt-day, rraversing a clend Jat, and passing two or three Fiasendfry, or catile estates, each days of which the tive stocti was looking wery miscrable: and the peor ple half starved.

After being with the Major four day't, since we sumbleft the SearaMeirim, I saw that it would not be prodent io proced farther; the acconnts from the interion were bad, and we arived at one estaie, of which the cattie were ail dying, and the people intending, if there wus no rain very soon, to leave Hieir houses. I now judgorl myself to be distant from the coast not leas than two kundred miles. Wie latid adrauced nocthuard and westward, and were therefore not iar to the sontliward of $A \subset c_{\text {, }}$ but were to the westward of it. T now resolved to make for it, for my horses might kik, and all tle country whs in so bad a state, that we might not have tound others in a proper conclition to go on with us; in tict, as $I$ was not acting firm orders, bnt merely for iny own ammsement, nad as the guide was afraid of proceeding, 1 did not think I was autizorired in pessevering; if 1 bad hath orders for the purpose, ifue case wonld have been altered, and I must have run all hazards. Here, also, desercion was easier in the might, as the country was comparatively inhabited towards A, cl - the difficulty was in advabcing, and not in tetreating.

Each cattle estate has as colerably decent house, in which the owner or herdsnani resides, and usirally in few smatier babitations arc scatzered about upon the plain around it. The peus stand near to the
principal house, and emable the travellers to distinguish immediatcly. although at some distance, the site of in Funenda.

I heard of a strange custom existing in these parts of the country that ste so thinly inlabited, which arises from this atate of thingts. Certain priests obtain a licence from the bishop (of Peruambuco, and travel through these regions witle a small altar constructed for Whe prupose; of a size to be placted upon one side of a pack-sadile, and chey have with them all riheir apparatus for saying mass. Thus with a horse conveying the necessary paraphernalia, and a boy to drive it, who fikewise aksists it gaying thase, and anocher bosee on which the priest hirrself rilies and carries his own small portmanterith, these mom make in the course of the year between 1.50 and goot.-is larige income in Brazil, but hardly eamet, if the inconvemiences and privations which they must undergo to obtain it are taken into consideration. They stop and exect the altat wherever \& suflicient number of persons who are willing to pty for the mass is collected This will sometimes be said for three or four shillings, but at other timess if a rich man talies a fancy wo a priest, or has a fit of extreme. devotion upon bim, he will give eight or ten mit reis, two or three pounds, aud it does kalpen, that one bundred mitgcis are recoived for saying at mass, but this is very rare; at times an ox or an horse, on two of three, are given. These men have their use in the worldy il' this custom dicl not exist, all form of worship would be corepletely out of the reach of the inhabitancs of many districts, or at any rate they would out be able to attend more than once or twice in the comre of the yenr, for it mast be remembered that there is no chumeln within twenty or thirty leagues of some parts; besides, where there is no law, nor real, rational religion, any thing is better then nothing. They christon and marry, and thus preserve these necessary forms of religion, and prevent a totial forgetfolness of the cstablisbed rules of civiliged saciecy; a sufficient link is kept tup to make any of these peopic, if they remored into more pepulous districts, conform to. received ideras.

T left the Major* to pursue his juurbey homewards, whilst I ro1.reated, or rather allunced. in at onneriary direction, but a retreat ic was t̂om this inhospitable region. We fonm no chanye during thar. day, itnel if we had not met with a grood natured herdsmans, should have tared very badly for want oz̈ water, untess we had scen some other persear eyually well disposed. I asked bim the way to the nearest estafe, which be told me. and them I made enquiries about water, to whtich he answered, that unlesis I was acquainted with the place, I should nor find the weil, and this part of our comersation ended by bis turnimer back to shotv it to me, reqardless of thas increasing bis journey frour or five miles. I asked bime when we zrrived at the well to stity und dine with me, for allhought had no great dainties to offer: stit be carried only what provision his beroacas chntained. These sre small leathern bags, ane of whiwhengs on euch side of the saddle. life would not, howerex, dismonont, and ismmediacely turned his horse and went his way; Aly guide harl remained behiud, as hisi horse was rather lume, and nots he joincd us. We passed over some stung yround, and the well itself was situated among rocks, betwour two of whick the horses passed and descended to it.

I may give some description of iny friend, who tmred bnek to shew me the well, and this may be Laken as the ususl appearanec of at tra-

[^23]


 ruste irou，ant Itis liot wiki of the same；the resios were lwo very








 fest prevent the risk of lasith the slippers．A Jong whif）ol twisted

 lis short dirty pipe in his mouch．Fastenod to his sachate behind，




 anil xacel，（dxiell leaves serve ats tinder）tobaceo，and topare pipe． To this equipunem is sometines addedi，a large pistol，illardst partly under the leff thish，abd thus securch．The usual pace of the there tancjo＇s honse is a walk，appronching to a jhort trot；so that the horyes of thase peopte often have acquiped the babit of dragering their hind leges，and throwing＂p the duat．The usial colour of the Ser－ carcejos ia 4 dark brown；for even those who are born white，soon bocotre as completely tonned as the dress which they wear，from ex－ posane to the sun．＇The annexed print will give sonse iclea of the Sertinejo，he he is datly secn in Recite．The colour of the leather， as it is representind in the print，is brighter thun thas of the dreases which are usually to be met with，which ia owing to the drawing having been fiade from a dress that had pot been muds used．

At ine of the estares I heurd an anecuote, wich is illustrative of the noglene or the implrissibility, on ath occusions, of coutorming to religious durics. A priest. an passing, was reqnested by the wiffe of the owner of the place to stay, for the purpose of baptizing ther som;
 wished to proced upon his journey, and cherefore deaided flutat the chitd might be brouretht to him; the wontan answered, "Prost wait a shout time longer, as the boy has taken fite homes con water, awd will soop return." The priest was surprised, lyur was still more astomished, when ho was requifed ro chmistern a fellow of thirtean or fourten years of a.ge.

Thas next dey we still proceerbed over the aume sprt of ground in
 so to from a decided ridge of Jills. John was, at night. caken sudclenty ill; he had dank ton much waters and wonld not mix amy spiril will it, neitluer would be smoke. I cousticlered sunaking us almost absolntely mecessary for the groservation of health on these occasinns; it is gemerally practived amtong the peosple of' che cuuntry, snd indeed meny it the women are as fond of ir as their husbands. Towards the morning, the man recovered.

The following day we reached, at text oclock, the estrate of St, Lexin; it is situated upon a wide plain, similar to those tupon which we had been travelling for many days. This is a cumpina, aud not 2 fabolciru. There wre no trees upon it, excepting a few near to the weth. The sight of this place raised our spirits, for there wrs no want of watesr, nor of grass, though it was eompletely dry. The lota, tofos, of roares came down to drink, all in fine condition, followed and protected by the master horse of each lot ; the cartle, the sheep. and evely other living thing, geemed we enjoy and to be conscious of the abundance of which they vere reaping the adrantage. We unlonded near to the well uncler the trees- The house of the chief berdsman stood before us, distanal about one hundred yarda, upon rather lagher ground ; it was a low white washed cottage, with the stables, pens, \& \& ic. on each side. About twelve o cillock, I sapy some
man emplayed in ruilkiug the goars; 1 zent Julio with a half-goned fur srme milk, deteiring lim to oifer paysurts; the guitle cautioned me wer but still I ordered Julio to present the nowey. The mijlk came, but the money was nat taken, and soon afterwatds, threce of the men, came down towarche us; $I$, hatsked them for the raill: and they addressed me sayilig, that they wished to know if $i$ had intendord ion inautr them, by offering paymenth as such thinds were not enstumary in their cruntry: - che guide hat Lold mes I shoudd affront them, ared thereforc I had brought this upon myself; but I put them ino good humour by answering that they wonld pardon my mistake, when I sold them, that I belonged to a country, in which we were obling to purclase the sand with which we sooured our huhses. They then said, thrifilae boy, on going for the milk, had mentioned theat there was are Eughiximan in compury, whion they wished much to sec, is ic was a brictor, un animal, they had nevar aeen. I said that be was gone with the harses, and would soon retura. I meanr John,-howeres the genicle soon told ihem that I was an Englishman. Their couthtenancess shewcd much disappointment when they were persuaded that this wes true; they had expected to sec some strange beast John soon came, and he vertainly was a chriosity, for he did not speak Portuguege: ; and when any thing went wrong, he swore away in English, at which they were all astonighment: they said, "He spoaks the negro lunguige $=. "$ They sat upow the ground nciar to my hammock, and askel me of the news from Peroambuco, for they cared about vothing more distant. I was acquainted at Recife with the owner of the place, which I made them contidut was the case, by describing his house and groden, aud lisey asked me after him, ike. The cumversation conchaded by an offor of horses to proceed, and, on their return to the bouse, a present of dried meat was sent. Thus $I$ was in the end a srainer, by offering to pay for the milk; but $T$ was more careful ever affec-

From St Luzian we procdeded across , he plain, expecting to reach a
iake, of which the muide luch nome recullection; but when the niafle but already ubed in, wo were still upou the sume cadiens fiainer over whech rice track wis only mirlaed by alte nsme ipon it being more wonn awiy, exmsequmedy. it might easily be jost al might. The Inks ati ulich we latel enterefinged hoper ot atrixiner, neve: bewhes cutitely the in the sumbitr ; but there was only mie place at which ir could be crossed, therefore it would ie dannerous to reach its bocders in the carks The plaín prescatect no tempting lodging; there wexe sereeral coelis apon in of diffarent sizes, hut an trees, and the wiod blew latid. The gaide dismointed, to lees if there wats auy of the long dry gras where we were; oun not finding anty, lue walked to the left of the road, but wag not alucoesful; he then tried to the xirthe, and found sume. We only discovered $\mathrm{l}_{\text {riz }}$ situnsjum by the 504 ind of his voice; he tailed, ancl we answored, suseral tinct, matil att last tre joined him; he hand also dissorered a large roci, under whe tee of which tre unloaded, and then lighted out firc, and fertered the horsen to feed. We soon found, ibat to cook any victunls was impossible, for the wind scatched our fire, which wets only formed of the brameses of the smali shouls and briars that grow upon these plains. Whater we hucl by accirlent, ss the graide hud brought is small skix, of it, in case be should be thirsty daring the afteraom, for wre had asale ouraclives quite certain of reaclaing the lake by night. I slept upon two of our packages, under the lee of the rock, and the whole porty did the same, wharitg, as equally a possible, oun scanty muesus of acommodation. This afternoon I had seem many rocts of remarkable forms; one, particulatly, statel me as extracordinery; it was placed upon another, of tauch smaller dimensions, and the rest. ins-point was so smali, at to render its removal apparently eany; but, on triad, it had not the slightest motion. The discomfort of this night was great, caused chiefly by che tiolence of the wind; we hach, at last, no fire,-all was dark around us, and we could acarculy mabe ourselver hearch. Tho horsis seemed to feel as muluch as we did, the unshcitered situration; they were near to us during the whole of the night.

On contisting our journey the follotving morving, we discovered
that we had hafted within half a league of the lake. The water way all gone; but the gromol was bogey, and not to be crossed, exeepuing at 1.1 log place over which is the usual path. It extends to the right and If to a consitiorabie distance, but is not broach If the mud was cleared away, it might, perhaps, afforil an inexinatustible source of wacer to the neighbourhood; but Brazil is not in a state for such works; hands, in these parts, wte not get sufficiently mumerous. In the afternoon, we crosied some stouy hills, and passell by two faxendics. This day, 1 observed, at sorme distance, a high hill, of st circular form, standing quite alone, aud uncunnected with any otber high gronnd. Ita sides appleared to be too steep for horsen to ascend; and I much rogret not beirg so situated as to be ensbled to delay, for the purpose of talking a nearer and more exact yiew of it. The guide was. surprised at my curiosity about it, and told me that horses could aot go up its sides, rbat chere were shakes upon it, \&c. All.this might be true; but, it was ovidently said, to prerent any intention I might have bad of delaying to see it more correctly. The plain appeared ixt many parts, as it the sea haw at some lime coveved it; - the dead Inat, the sand in places mixed wiul purticles of a substance which looked like broken shells, awd the rocks worn away in auch parta, a日, from their situstion, could not have been acted upon by rain. We slept this night at an estate, where there werc several homse日 forming in hamoty; having passed through a considerable quantity of wooded land.

The next morming we again proceeded ovor gome lands that were oovered wich wood; and, near twelve o'clock, reached the town of Actir Oh, the joy of again secing a eburch ! of the aight of a regular village, and civibised peraons; if even these can be called civilized, according to European ideas.

The country I passed over from Natal, never can, in any atate of civilization, or from wny increuse of population, be reudered a fertile track; but it might be, whthout doubl, mach innuoved, if proper wells ware sunk, reaervoirs macle for rain water, and trees planted; ruch might be dione. The plains I erossed ture of there kinds; those of whitich the soil ia a loose sand, producing the acaju, the mangabs



















 their way diromgh it, and leeding among it. The chirel deseription of
 inge eraso, but upon thacse no trees growt smath shretts and briars alont are to be seen, and often-tibues wot event tiest. Thev are. in patis, story, and have rising arroumd upon thens, which is uote mbin ficiently hights to diseerti 2lac name of a sidge ot hills; but is enothgh to break the ocean-dikeflatmess and imnncnsity which rhese plajns sotnetimes presend to the traveller; arter procecding for hours, the same distance still seems to renigin for him torraverse. Theaf are the crifininas. I pasised over bome sjous covered with high trees, which in our own coumtry would be called wood's of considerable extent; bur in Brazid, they sould not be accounted of sufficient maguitade to compose a dis-

[^24]qingrixhing tentere in the nakel restant which I traversed. The ithpresixion which a recollection os this purtion of land left tupon may


1 huarab very ditale of boatis of prey; they tatel renoved to belter


 would not hatvo become halsilual with chem. 【meroly say, that they are sot plentifit in this luirrens jart; for elacwhove, hear fakes and latge pools of water, it dirtile distericts, thes ratule of the stake, of which theis is the distiongendioge mathe is otten heard. We sax a small kind of rabbit, wear rexky grouncl, which is called moca. The courrifuto or tich, and the chiguta had entirely disappared. since we Jeti the dry Joke, נear Natal. The chigua lans heen so ofen described, that a minute accomint of it in this place is monecosimery it is a very sunall insect. which loolges itcelf pritucipolly under the mats of the fenct. In the coumber, bordoringe upon the sica, it is to be lound
 the Surt:am appear to lon formed of the same kind of saud, the insect
 and Aracatio

Whe arrivert at Aceu on ibe 1st December, having travelled about 340 miles in 19 days. Tho cominusl ansiety in which $l$ wis kept, prevented me from keeping any regulat jnatual of my probedings. From Agu to dracuti, 1 have preserverd the names of the places throngls which 1 passed. The country is more inhabited, and I was ne:erer to the const; I travelleal also with more ease; but, beteen Notal aud Açt, excopting the destrted Pai Pauto, I did not pass any setclement which deserved eren the name of village; single cotauges, much sepurised from cach ouher, and often unimhabited, contrintul the whole population of this district. It is a miserable. desolitie conntry.

The towu of Agru is buile in a square, and consists of about thee hundred imhabitants; it has two ehurches, und a town-ball











 But the natd of which others are compoself, remnens ixt it 1:armal neslour, butile withis and without, and the Foors alse are of earili: so

 ziliansi of all casts, frave mary dímy catioms, allied to thoic on saverce life, still urey awt remarkethly clean in their persons; one oí inc mreatest inconveriences of a situation: when a Brazilian complains or the place he happens to resitle in, is the ment of a river or pool of water in the neighbourliood, for the purpouse of bathing.

We enguired for the house of a man of colour, a saddler be trade, with w-born my guticle was aqquainted. This persor.: like many ochers, had come to his door to see the 1 ravellers; he suon recogrised bis friend, and came forwards to speak to hirn. The procured a house for us cluring our stay ; it was a small place, upon whicfl neither plaster nor white wash hed been bescowed, with two rocms, one opening to the square and the other to the river. When ve were a liute settled, and 1 had dressed myself, I sallied forch to wisit the vicar, who resided in the best, or rather least miserable looking leabitation in the town; it was about the siza of the cottayses of labomans, or smell farmers in England, bur not mearly so comfortsilie, thourgh the floons were bricked. It is truc, that this climate does uot demand, na much su theae of bleaker regions, that necessiry of an Eaglishs




 Some furline conversation dasised botwern us; but I tida tot shy bong, for I wis mutele licell. If mate arrangements for seading my



 up very well; but if they wive suftiend to rost, they woukl tresome stidT, lasie flesis, and be rendeneal entire] y unfit for serice, tor a considerable cines 1 thel zout then catite believe bim, but us thers wis
 uest thay ut two o'elock, that we and they might have, at aty rate, a

 leel.ter diak : rist of mere iban one whole slay.

Ont friant, olte sadthen, atmong other stories, rumbioned hovidg passed over the same gromad which we jud traversed from St. Lazith, onty a pioct timo before us. He was it company with abother nuan
 night inder abeferr of wae of the rocks, in the vicinity of the lake of
 tielle distune to graxe; the koy yud the gog remsinced withe hime ; de
 bee cooked, whet the bwy catlexl out "where is the dog,". . the mand ancowered "here he is, why what is the fantacer?" the boy said. "whas eyes, then, ure those;" pointing, at the sathe tinse, 20 the commer of the rock; the adas lookech, and satw the eycs, for nothinter else was to Le seen; hee called a che dog, took up his dowliatioplece, not fired, whiler the dog started up, and daved towards the spat. A jeugrat fustred out, ant made oft'; it land been parly concealcd under the



 she Açu, and than small chaf comse funt cliferent jazts ot tie mash


 I bepr hijn with me, tor althongl) he wis nor a pocrson I liked. stial he
 had, throlagh his mitention and knowledze of latis business, all arrived beme without tare beckis, which I round, fromi rhe sedrprise axtresect by alit those who exw tirem, was not a ustial picce vi foud fortune, $a=$



 Or this I said nothing; Gut on out returar. whilst I wits untrelf. boe gave himself out as clic chicf of the party, whiche l onco canght him in the act, of̂ doing; i disconcersed hin, b- threatoaring to aurn him out of $m y$ service; and when I recoverch, be took cire 10 dwaw in, arad bo more careful who ovctineard hing. The addicionsel man I rouk Fith me, was a dark-coloured molato. young and btout ; ins fatier lived at Acpus and this $50 n$ had a fitir ckaracter. He brountit with him a buadrifil docr, which $I$ afterwamds fosiesseck

The next dity, Juliq came with the horses a and betweed thred and four o'clock in tie atternoon, we lefl iccu.

## CIAPTER VL.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { FEITOZAS. }
\end{aligned}
$$

OCh way wies through woollands for wbout one leagre, when we came out upon the borders of the lake Piato; we proceeded along them for another half legguce and unloaded near to the caue fe palha, or straw coltage, of the commandant of the district. Piato is a lake of three leagues in lengrth, and about one league in breadth. In the summer its sides become suffelently dry to enable them to be cultivanced. but the centre of it is iuvariably marshy and im-passable- The fertility of its sides is verygreu, iffordiniznost pleatifully rice, miaize, sugar cane, melons, Recund inw sonte cotton trees planted very near to the edge. The lake is filhed from the river in the miny season, und as the lunds arcound it are much liggher than the lake itself, the waters which mus down from them wash away all vestiges of ecultivation, hill thexe agrin subside and tlee sunce operations are contiducd the following season. In such dreadifully severe years as that churing which I travelled, the perpule of the district would be staved if this lake did not exisi; it enabled the inhabitants of accus, at the time I was thete, in remain in their housen. The appearance of abondance, the bright greent, the well fed horses and citrle, which we saw the we rravelled aloust its banks, enlivened us stl ; there was a look of security, a sceruing certainty of at least the nccessaries of life let what would happen, which we had not for a long time felt. The parcbed bills which surround the lake, its beatitifally cultivated borders, aud the derk and dangerous bags which vompose iss centre and prevent the communicalion of the inhabitants of either laank, formed a very extraordidary sceue. No water was to be secis, but the mad
 -
 it $\boldsymbol{\text { itra... }}$

 \& \&

 selves to the dati, ran the opyosite lifl, whicls was cutircly rursinked


 fanily, who ware all very shw jndeed rho remaies I scarce!, saw,


 conimandant's sonst, it bog of ámente frometen veats of age. I had


 of bringing to the crialand, wntid he overagkeri it - lae then pierces its side bewween the ribs and thae hip-bote, which. it it is dorice at the moment the beast raises its hind feet trom tie ground, throws it witly such violence, as someaimes to make it roll over. Some oxen had odten trespassed upon the rommanalant's matize; kne ot the bots could no longer bear this quiedly, he therefore mounted one of his father's horses, of which there were several very fine onest took one of the lour poles anct set off withont a suddle, and in bis shirt and drawers, to attack ilae amimslis. I-Te drove them out of the meize, reached one of them wich the goad at the right moment end threw it down, lun before he could iurn lis horse, another had attacked him, ranaing his horns into the flesly part of one of the horse's thigbs. The boy hat taken the precaution of putinct a brike
on to his horse, otherwise, if he had mountex with a halter only, he would most probably have sutierel moch move. Ore of his brothers came to his Assistance, amal drove the oxen quice away: The lacility with which the beast was thrown, proved that practice asd quickness were more requisite than strengeth in this uperation.

Towards the evening a shower of rait come on, beinge the frat we bad had since we left Goiman, and incleed rhis was the only rain which fell duritg my jourucy between Goiana ant Seari, IDowever there is nod usually mituelt wet wather al this season of the year; the distress oceasioned by the want of it, arose trom the failure of the accustomed rains in the preceding vituter. Whe removed to the hut across the ravine, leaviag the greatest part of our baggage under the tree, but the shower did not contimue long. The hut was too small to admit of our taking up our lodging for the night in it, and is case of rain the tree was too fiar from the knt to reach it in time to prevent being wet, for which reason 1 cleterminext to sleept in the ravine clexe to thie tencice, at dhe foot of the hill upan which the kut stood. I made a bed for myself upon two packages, to withdward of the fire which we bad kindled, but multitudes of mosinuitos rose about midnight, which obliged me to remove and lie down upon a hide to leward; the fire was mostly composed of the dried ordure of cattle, the smoke from which is so thick and pungent as to prevent entirely any annoyance from these trnublesome insects, but the remedy is bad enough, iss it is almost impossible wopen your eves or to speat. The misery of being exposed to the myriads of mosquitos which leovered aroumd us this night, made us chuse the amoke as the more endurable evil. Notwithstandiug these inconveniences we had sarne amusement at. the distress of hinn whose fire way allowed to hurn law; none of us slept much, for attention to the fires abliged every one to be on the alcrt. Towerds moming the amoke was scarcely aufficient to protect us from these tormenting insects. I now learnt that near to any lake or pool of water, the highest ground is always to be fixed upon for a night station; even the commandant upon the hill had fires to windward of the house during the whole of the night.

Early it the morniug te continued onr jonmey for some distance along the banks of the take, and then encered upory sotue open land, which was now quice dry; we slejt under a clamp of soces, distant abont twenty miles from Piate. The cattle we stw this dry, were in goch condition, platuly showing that the country ctijoyed a plentiful supply of water.

The road of the next dity led us thrutgh woodlands, and orer loose stony ground; but the woods of this patt of the country are not large and luxuriant; they fave not the grandeur of the forests of Persannbuco, nor is the brushwood which grows under thern so chose und thick. We passed through some estates, of which the liser stock seened in good condition; and saw this day a whole drove or lot (lota) of cream-coloured mares. I asked for water to drink at one of the houses; some was brought to me by a pretty white girl, who was apparently ubout seventeen yeark of age; she talked a great desi, and in a lively manner, so as to show that she bad inhabited mare civilized regions. Therewere in the house two childeen of coloun, which she told me were her's; she was the daughter of a man of small propery, who had married her contrary wo wishes, 10 a meaitly mulatto man, She gave a measage to the gruide to dediver to her huaband, who was supprintending the felling of soms timber by the road side, along which we were to pass; we mact with him, he was of dark complexion, and about forty zears of age. I learnt her story from the Açu gaide; he saich. it had made some noise in these parts at the time. In the afternoon we passed over a $x$ alt mars), surroutrded by groat numbers of carnatiba trees. We borcleved the marsh, lookinis for as crossing and entered it, where we found the footsteps of others tho had recently passed; the mud was from twelve to eighieen inches decp where we crossed; hat jt was in some parts impassableThe salt had coagulated wherever the footstep of a horse bad formed an opeaing in the mud, and had collected a small quankity of water. The breadth of che marsh might be about wo bundred yards in the centre, and its length about one league. Atter leaving the marah, we reached the fadeleiro, upon which we were to sleep. Towards

Ovening, the withd was high. I was ridiug as if $I$ had besen seatexd upon a silicesaddle, with both my legs on the same sille of the horse, fund with iny umbrella over my heard to athade me from the heat of the Sun; a madren pust of wind took nue antimy umbrella, und danded th is the santl, in tlue no smied entertainment of my companions. If the horse had goove off, I should have been awkwavdly situated; hut he had cravellerl too many leagues to be frightened at trifles anch as these.

We continued truvcling for two days over the same bind of ground ; plains with reees thinly scattered, and spots of wooded land. We likewise crossed two salt markhes; but upon these there was no muct. The waler which ogzes from the lancl, on difgrith into it, is however, salt; but the soil was dry and hadd. Mimoza, tlic dog belonging to my new guide, afforded us considerabie smumsement. She geuerally made her way through the wood at a little distance from the road, now and $1 \mathrm{~J}_{\text {len }}$ reluming to the path. She was very expert in discoveriag the ratu botu, or rolling tatu, a swall species of armadillo; this arirrul is protected by its bony shell; on being topucked, if rolls itaelf' up in the manner of the hedge-frog. As soon as the dog taw one of these, she touched it with her nose, and barked, contivuing the shme operation as often an the arraadillo ataternpted to move, until her master auswered the wellaknown signal. Several were caught in thia manner: 'Tlue flesh is as n̂ne as that of a young' pig. The tatis acrducteiro, or legitimate ammadillo, which is much farger, does not roll itself up, aud Minnoza sometimes pursued it to its hole, and stood at the mouch of it, until slue had her master's permission to come away. There exists a third species of amadillo. called the tratu puebu, which is said to feed opon haman flest.

Ont the 7ik December, we arrived at ten o'clock in the morning at the village of St. Luzia, containing from two to three hundied inhabitants. It is buitt in a squrre, and has one church; the houses are small and low. Herc I was able to replenish my spirit botzles, and to purchase a supply of supaturas. These are cakes of brown sngar or treacie, boiled to a sufficient consistemey to harden, by which
 converance.











 of ammuntion, and hehad hiss long knife in his sizdie. Ore of the dogs get secent of the jagiunr: and followed it up to the der ; the beasi
 another much mained, which we saw, and even lje rditch wius hurt. The tasm fircd as soon as the jarruar wame own and wounded it a aurk when he saw that it was eonsiderably disabled, he ran in upon the snitral with his kifife, and kilied it; it doing wisich, oue of his atsas was mach lacergted, und this was bound up ac the time I courersed מith him. Ifeashed for some ponder, saving that there was still another jagtar in the neighbourhood. The stiss are anuch valued in Bravil for saddlectoths; and frow the make of the sadules uscd in that colmenty, a cloth of some sott, or a sitin is required for each. I have the skin of a jagtuar in my possession, which reasures five feet and threw incheti- The nafo vermelha, felis coneolor, amd the wnit prota, fedis discolor, are also to be nuet with; but the juguar is nore colrmon, and poove dreaded than eithut of these.

The same day we passed over the dry bed of the Paneme; it was the third river we had crossed since our depsoture from Ach, and all were in the same state.

St. Luzia stands apon the northern bank of a dry river, in a sardy








 1.hat if the comiutudatit luad wished tossonthe passport, he would cerluinly theve sent one of hin offiesers te a esk for it ; the young man rem






 The: sexpente wost of and we prephed oux arms, thath to the andaze
 I som saw hims acgain, grat he was coming towiarls tas, with, two or theo other portons; I cilled to hixn to keep at a diatates, telling hime tiatit Julio would fire if he did not. This he judeded advisalole to

 therelore we then sutw no mure of the sergeant. 'Thedry river, upon whicth this willage starmat, dividus the ceaptaincies of Riu Grande and Sestet, conaeguently there was moth reawon for the commandints dematich of noy passport; but it was necesuaty to preserve the high opinion demerally entertained of the name of figdew, lixiglishanan, wherover the people posaessed sufficient knowledge to understand

[^25]that the said Thalezw, were mut bichos, or enemals; and nlwo to keep
 have answered, fo late lb:is given way to a mat wio was indined







 had the whole villagh upon tue, and have beab deserted lyy ms own pappie invo the barguis.
 down ats sliselaying toverable lierdility ro the sotithward of Natal, and as having a !areen aspect to the northward of it, excoping the banks and innmediate neighlusurhrod of the Pozengi.

We passed throngh the estate of 5hat, disiant from Sr. Lavia ome leagie and at half. and proceeded, alter tadingr water, four learpues begemel it, to ne unimhabited nad anfinished houre. Flte owner had commenced butiding during the rains of the formar year. and had gone on with the work until the spring of water, teear to ahe places, fatiled. The house was tiled and spacions; bue the wond work noly of the walls was erected. It had bean the intention of this person, to establish of frizende here; but the failure of the spinsif of water would, probably, deter him from his purpose. The contrery from lhan to Tibou, where we balted at hoon on the following dayi, in distanec of ten leagues, was how willonut water. Two paties of traviders, besides our own, had taken up their aight's lodging at thiy mofinisued lrouse. The severul ifes, the groupes around them, some cooking, some enting, and others asteep; the park-satddes and trimks strewed about, as they had boen taken from the horsos' bucki, formed a sceve
 fresh, for the bouse had row walle, and no obstruction theprose its
 of che fires sometimes flathed upou one or otlecr of the countenances of the ravellers, and on these occusions alone could 1 discover their colont and cottsontuently, in sontc diegree, their ramk. I might be in the company of slares or of whire men, for both would have raken up their pightres station in the saine mamer. An old man of colour addruried me, asking if I was the buglishmau who lad tested at noort at St. fuzia; on shy answering in the affimative, he said that he wiws at the commandant's at the time, and that there mere soveral debates about the suode of procecding respacting me and mine-that my decermiontion nor un ajve upaby pessporx had caused some demur, and that among olleer supposizions of who I might be, one wiseacre zaid, there was no kmoring whether I wes not one of Bonaparce's ministers, and what might he my diabnlical plans. Indeed I witi oflen amuserd with the strange icleas which the country people eatertained of distant nations, of which tiney had heard the rames, and perhaps some further particulars; thewe were altered in sucha a manner by their misepriredrearion, that ic was ofeminnes difficolt to discover what the real circumstances were which had been relared to diem,

We traversient auther salt marsh this afterzioon. The marsh I bate memrioned as haviuy crossed on the 4 th of this month, was the only one of that description which I met with. The athers I have spoken of, and those which $T$ suall hase ocersion to mention, are dry, and the soil upon them in stimmer is hard, it is dazli colotired and protures no grass, but upon the skirts of the marnhes are seen several sen-side plants, and the water that oores from then is quite salt.

Our road the neat morning lay through krushwood for three feagues over heary sand, and three [empues over s salt manth. Near midhulay we passed a cottigege, in which reaitled the lierdsuan of a jazzerfac and imumediately beyond, ascended a hitll of heavy sand called Tibuta: from which we again satw the ser. I scarcely usu tescribe the sensations which were ocmsichert by his sight; if led as if I was at Inonse, as if fiee to act as I pleased. The spring of water near to che wotticre wid dricd up, but there was pne on the oprosite side of the
sand-hill, which still affordect a mmall supply; we now took thp ons min-day station under at misemable but, crected al the summit of the hill, by the mbabitant. af whe contige, for the purpose of curiog their fislis; they harl tixed upon inis spert from its height and eonsecpuent. exposime to the wind. The deanent to the sen-shore is steep, but not dangerous, as the deptin of the sand prevents any approliension of i horse falling and rolling down. The great texgith of the joumies of the t.vo lenst fiays, had ulmosil kuocked etp the horse upon whith my Goianar getide iode; I saw that the man was not inctined to wall for the purpose of casing the animal, und tharefore wishing to sce what could be done by example, 1 dianounted and wosk off the greatest part of my cloaths, removed the bit from my horse's mouth, tied the bridle romard his neck, and turned hita laose amonis the ollems this had the desired effect, and John also was inco ashanied to be the only perion on horsctuack.

Wo advrineed very cuickly over the wet annds, passed two fishermen's huts distant from Tibon two leagues; and one leagre further turned up fiom the shore by a steep, sandy path, which took tus to abse hamlet of Areiax, composed of'one respectable looking dwelling and five or six athay hirts. The lands we pased this aftemoon, bordering the shore, ste low and sandy, without trees amed without enlrivation. In seasons less severe than thia there is a small spring of wroter, nor fur from the fishermen's huts which we had passed, hut now it was entirely dried ups they stand near toan surall piece of ground, of which the soil is less sandy than that in the neighbouriood, and a erop of water melons is usually obtained frum it, which had bowever completely faileal thia year. Oe our areival at Areias I made for the principal housc, and usked for a nigtti:'s lowlging. The frout voom was offered to me, upon which out horses wore tisloaded, and our bagtage put into it. I gras surprised to see no elderly or middle afod person belouging to this house; there were three or four boys only, of whom the oldest was aboat sisteen yeara of afec, und he appeared to direct the coucerns of the eatabiaslament. FIe hurd a piece of inclosed ground near to the house, into which he allowed our horaes to be turned, and this arrange-
ment beine maxle, I had then time to loosk round, and see my quartera. Not a trec or shrub wis to be seen in the neighbourhood, but there were inaruense samd-hills on one side, and on the other the sea. The convenicuce of the spor for fishing could alonse have made these people fix upon it for it residence. I sent out w purchatice a fowif one was bronght, for whicin I paid 640 reix, about Sr. 6id. Julio tohl me that he had seon some goats and kids, upot which I stent him to purchase one of the latcer; be returned with a large onc. for which the owner asiced so mis, less रhan Gid. I thought. I was in duty hound to cat my fowl, bat the kid was mach finer of its kind. A boy passech in the evening with a largeturtle, whish he begroso the guidic to exchange for about one pound af the lid; the mait was given to him, but his turtle would have been of no use to us.

Tulio, when he went to purchase the kid, had heard a lonet story abouc a ghost, which made its appearance in the house at which we find starioned ourselres. The persons from whom he heard it, had advised hin to make me acguainted with the circurnstance, that I might wove to some other place for the night. I began to suspect some trick, and told my people my idea of the sort of ghost we were likely to moct with; I found that this cheered thern, as by them shadows were more drealed than flesh and blood. We slung our hummocks in different directions in the large room, and each took tis arras, and sethled fur the night; $\rightarrow$ a sudden panic seized my additional cruide, and the wias srienting out of the roonn ; but I stopped him, and said, that I would send him back to his own country if he wene out; the business war however sectled by taking the key from the door. The story ran thus the master and mistress of the howse had been murdered by two of their slaves, and it was suid that their ghosts occasionally took at wadk in this room; nay, it was eren reported that the old gentleman used his gold beaded canc, and woke with it those who slept in the house. We had not, hovever, the honour of his compery, and in the morviny bad much langhter, at the fellow who hat been so dreadfully frightened.

The country through which we procecded on the morrow; prep 2
sented a. mote checring appearanee. We regehed, at a short distatuce fiom Arciats, some inclused and collcivated lands, then phosest
 lexgues. The place reacives its mame form the great nameer of acaju trees, and tonsists of six or sevnn hials. Freve we dinol, finding good water and abunclaned of maize-staiks tor oir horsen There was some appearance of conlior and eppoyment of life, at least comparatively spaling- Beyond Cutuats there leagues we slept near to a hat. after ravelding thangh some more cultivated gromed. I was asked, by some persoms at. Caibuea, at what place I bard shept the preceding night; I maswecerd at. Areins, they then enquired inz what house ati Areiaz, as at that village absere was none into which tena Fellers could be received. I repliert, that on the conetraty, there was the great house, which 1 ludd foumd very comfortable; thoy wow perfectly ustovisbed at my sleeping in this hannted place, and for some time inngined that I was joking. Afterwards, on other occasions, I heard of the same stary, which appeared to have tuken deep root in the faitb of all those who spole of it.

The next day we reached aramati, distant seven leagenes from where we had slept, fibout five oclock in the aftemoor. Great purt of this day's journey whs thougla salt marshes or plains covered with the Carnàtuba; the tall naked stems of the jailms, crowned with branches dike the coco trec at the summit, which rastle wich tile least breath of sir, and the bare and dark oolourect soil upon which no grass
 The computed distance from Açil to Aracati is forty-five leagries. When I approacled Axaeri, I sent my Goiana getide forvarda with the later which I had reccived from the govermer of Rio Grande to Senlior Joze Fidelcis Barrozo, a wealthy merchant and landed proprietor. On ray arrival, I found that the guide had delivered the letter, and that Senhor lanmozo land given to him the keys of an unoccupied house, which I wis to inlabit during my stay.

Tike town of Aracati consists chiefly of one long atreet, with sevcral others of minor importsince brauching from it to the southward ${ }^{\text {it }}$
stande infon the souther:a bank of the river Jagharike, which is so fite ialfencuest ly the tiale. At the: obb, ilte streami is torchable, and as it




 retrat to dise upper puil ol' the houses. The town contains three churches, and a townoliall and prisou, lut not monasteries; this capdaillcy does not continitr any sucl) pest. The imhabitants are in mumbev about sis lmundred.

Tho honace was to ocenpy. consisted of two guod sized roons, wits large dosets or sanall berl-chambers leading liom eacth, called otcoras, and a kitchen, theac were nll above; and underneath there wats a sort of watelouse. Tos the bock we had an oblong yard, inclosed by to briek wall, with a grore at the titriter encl, by which our horsen entervel; and here they femained antil better arrangempents sonta be mada foe thens. I silung my hammack in the fiont room, and ciewired athet some lowls shontid be purchased, as stoede, whilst we rematined hewe- Onc was preparing for me, when three black sersants appented from Sienhor Finrozo ; the firat. brought a large tray wjth a plemtilit and ascellently cooked supper, wine, sweetmeats, \&en --a secoonk citrried a silver ewer and basin, ancl a fringed toweh, end an third came to know ilt there was any chiog which 1 partjenlarly wished fort besides whut buld been preparod; this man took beck my atswer, and the odior two romainexl to attend, until I had supped. It lenrat trom the guide stterwards, that another tray had been sent for my people. I supposed that Senhor Barrozo hat thengith groper to treat me in thim zammer on the day of my arrival, from an idua that I could hot have arranged any meats of cooking Bec until the noxt duy; but in che morning coffee atud cakes were trought te, mo, nad dilie same major-dumo enme to know if all was to my liking. Whilat E remaned at Arucati, Senhor Batrowo provided every thing for me and for my poople, in the same landsome

 highter orders.







 have sutid to prevoat its comimamee. fle orderech all my borses to be tanen to an island it the rives, upon which there was plenty of
 spoke to Sentur Barroze upon the selpers, when he imnactiarely saik. that one of his shachs was goliag, th whish meg servant wight hatve it birth. John was out of healtl) and not adapted to the kind of diês which we hath leen leading, assi sthould be yet under ihe necessity of tontinuing. This day 1 remained at burnc, employing the greateot part of it in keeping; and in the ewering rethred Seblor Warrozo's visit. at white matn, with whom my Gotana gride was acquainted, called upon the, and we arranged an expendition its a canoe, for the next day, to go down the river to its mouth.

My guide's fijend came se he had appointed, and his canoc was waiting for us. His two negrocs poled where the water was shallow, and puddled us along where it becathe derp. We passed several benutiful fslands, some of which haud catle upon them; and others, of which the land wos too low to produce aruss; the latter were entirely covered with magogoves, which grow likewise on the boodets of the rivet, the shores being elear of them nnly where settlemencs are formed, and the proprietors have extirpated them. The river is, in parts, about balf a mile in breadrls, and in some plnces, where chere are islands, it is broader, if taken from the outermost sides of the two branclies which it, in these situations, forms. The cown is distant foom the bart about


 surf is very vio?ctit. The sarmel is so laose ar the moutle of tint river, thati. the rateyters of the eonsting wasmels ane obliged to uso every pru-
 which they are unatopanated. 'Tlale river wirdens immediately within the bar, anfl forms mather a spucions baye Even it no othor obstacle
 of its entrence, ever bsemuc of any imporiancus. Constens alune can entery and I understand that the satad in che river :liso accumbelatea; the sand bumba probjec. Jrom each side int some places so metels ies to render the kavigarion, uver for a loust, somewhiai diffecult from a short distance ateove the Day ${ }^{*}$. On our return, we dimed at wh estate upon the bank of the river, ait which the owner wos an acquandance of the man who had proposed this party. Opposite to the Iwellingbouse of this estate stancla an island, which produccs abunclance of ghass; but there is no frosh water upon it; this obliges the cattle that feed there, wergularly to P ans over to tho main land every thay to drink, and return to che island, which they are so much aceuscomed to do, that no herdsman is necessary to compel them. We saw them swim aeress, and all passed cluse to the house in tbeir way to the pool. The owner said, that the calves invarinoly touk that side of their mothers to which the wide was rameing, to provent beinor entied away by the force of the stream; and inderd I observed, that all the calves took the satue stle.

In the evening atrangements weme made for the hire of wo horaes to carty meand one of my people to Scara, leavinar my own beatsts to rest for the joumsy back to Pexmambuco. I again called upon Senhor Barrozo, to make known to hinn whe plan, and he then guve

[^26]

































teques, accovdinge the vague computation of the comatry in thitey-
 mean aud horses whicla I hal brought with me.

Thic toun of the 1ortress of Seserit is built upon heave sand, in the form of a sefure, with four sreets leading from it, and it has an additionu: Fong street an ince north side of che stuatre, which runs in a paril]le! direcion, but is unconnecred witls in. The dwellings have only a gevued fions, and the sirects ave not pared, thets some of the houses hawe foot paths of brick in front. It axutains three churches, the gowerrior's palace, the tuwn-3atl and prisorn, a custamhouse, and the uretsiter. The nomber of inhabitanes I judige to be from one
 ite name, stands upon at samd-litl close to the zown, and consists of a
 ground on the land side; it contained four or five pieces of cuman of several sizes, which were pointed various ways; ancl $T$ obserwed that the grm of heavjest metul wiss mounted on the land side. Those which pointed to the sea were nol of suftcient calibre to have reached a ressel in the usnal inchorage ground The powder magazine is situated unom another part of the stad-hill. in full view of the harbour. There is not much to invite the preference given to this spot; it has no river, nor any harbour, and the bench is bad to land upon; the breakers are violent, and the reciff or meet of rocks affords very little protection in wemels riding at anchor upon these coast. The setelement was formerly situlated three leatybes to the nothirard, upon 3 namow ereek, where there cxists now only the remains of an old fots The beach is steep, which rerthrs the surf dangerous for at boat to prase throngh in making tor the shore at vessel maloaded churing my stay there, and part ol laer anyo consisted of the flour of the mandine in small bags; the long boat apporouched as near to the shove as it could without striking, and che bags were ianded on men'a hends; the persuns employerl so briug then ashow passed through the surf with then; lout if they were calught by a wave the flour was wattod and injured, and jnderd few readred the shore perfectly dry.

The anchorape ground is bad and ox:nowd ; the windis are aiweys



 Lower than towerfz Pernembucu, wibith hats obliged tive poopic or Searè ro latse adranzage of the rocks incing ration bighce bere. and afforting sone liule prutection in situs at wehon. Thespon suens to
 roeks are antich interior to :lowe which tome rlic bold reeí of Pernem-

 A smell vessel may coma wo anchor beween in and the xione; bat a large ship can only bring "p cillmer te thee nowthwinci or tu :be sounhward of the form, in one of the opmians of we ridge os on the outsicle of it. The opening to the nownmard is to be prezered. A ressel corring from the hontwrax slowuld make rhe point of Mocoripe, which fice onee leogete to hle somanward of the tuwn, and upon it stands a smatl tore: thas treing slone, she will chen be able io nake the melorage gromed. On the amonersnce of a sinip the tum oftite lown wjt have a wlite floy fying upoin at ligh flag-scafte To the northard of hae zown, hetreven the reat and the shore, there is a
 be seen ever ac bigyl water by the hreakers upon is. When a vessel leaves the port she may eibor pass berwean this cock and the shore, giving a birth to a shoal about one huncdred yarcis to the northward, or she mat run betweed atte roek and the principut ridure or reef.

The pullic buildiegs are small end low: hut are ocat and whitewoybed, and adapted to the puposes for which they ate interded. Notwinhstauding the disadvaniate to the genemal mpacarance, imparted by the wretched soi? upon which the torn has been erected, 1 could not avoid thiuking that its look was chat of a thriving place; but I believe that this can scarcely be said to bu the real state of che toma. The difficulty of land carriage, particularly in such a country,
the wank of a good horbour, and fie clicactitl diotighta, present any somgtionc luppe of its riae to opulence. The comnterce of Searà is very linited and is not likely to increase; the long eredits which it is necessary for the trader to give, froclucke dhe liope of yrick returas, 10 which, British merclathts are accubsomed.

I rode immediately on my arrival to thenouse al Sempor Marcos Antonics Fiscio, the uhief ol the Treasury and of rhe Naval department, with several other tithea which are not trassermelde into our dargutige ; to this gertleman ind it hiter of intruluction fiom Sentior luartozo. I found zeveral parsons nssernbled at juis house to drinks ten ind play ai cards. Senhon Mlarcos is an inteltigent and well-iuformed man, who lias secongoud society in Lisbon, and had leepla a laign situation at Daranham before he was appointed to Sen:tir. I wiss intruduced to Senhor Lomenço, a mecchant, whe had connections in trate wial Jiaglinds; lue recognized my name, for he bati heen acepainted with near relations of mitse in Lisborn, I was invite:d to stay with him and recoiven from hime every civility.

The mornjug utter my arrival I vixited the grovernor, Larix. Barlux Alardo de Alenczes ${ }^{\text {y }}$ : aud was receiver by him with much affibility: he satich, thand. he wishotal he had more opportunities of stowing the requad which he entertained for iny cunnavymen, and that some of them would come and settle in bis captaincy. FIe built, duritity hifa administration of the province, the eentre of the patace, and employed Indian workmen, paying them balf the thal price of labour. He wax in che halis of speaking of the proparty of individuga residing within the province as if it wast his own, saying, his ships, tits cotton, Sc- I happened to be at Searà on the Queen of Rottugal's birthday; the ommpany of remular troops, consistint of one humdred and fourteen men, wras reviewerl; they looked respectable, and were in tulerable order. In tise ehief apartment of the palace stood a fitl length picture of the Prince liegent of Brazil, wbich was placed

[^27]

 each ferson passed before j:in atsch bowech t:at: thas the otate of tite

 aut dwo or three mercha:-ts; he jlacole me at his riph: hande as a stranger, thes shewing the escitnation in which Lirgli, bemen awe hekl. About thirty persors were wresens nt: the titsle, of which more than half wore uniforms; inceed the whole displur was notuch mowe trin lient then I had expected; every thing wits yood awd deatisome.

I had opportumities of secing the Indiap vilages of Atonsats and Masuritana, und there is athird in this neighbourhood, of which I have formoten the uarme; each is distan trom Seare bewcen wo avid thece lesgues, in different directions; they are built in che torm of a squers, anci cum contains about three humdred inhabitants. Onc of my usuat companions on these occarions was ucquainted with the vicar of Aronwas, and we therefore made hima visil. He resiced in a building which had formerly helonged to the Jesuits; it is attached to the chareh, and has bedconies from the principai corrirlor, which look isto it.

The Indians of these villages, and indeed of all those which $t$ passed through, aze Christisins s though it is said that some ficw of them follow in secret their own heathenish riles, paying adoration to the naraces, and practising all the custons of their religion, it Y may use this word, of wich so exact a description is giren in Mr. Southcy's Xistory of Brezil. hǐhen the Roman Catholic religion does take root in them. it of pecestity dergeverates into the most abject superstition, An adherence to supcrstitious rites, whether of Roman Catholic ordination or preseribed by their own andeffed faith, appears to be the only part of their cluaracter in which they shew any constancy. Each village has its pricsi, who is oftentimes a vical, and resident for life upor the spol, A diector is niso artached to each rillage, who is supposed to be a white man; he has
great nomer aver the persons wihiv his jurisdiction. If a proprietor
 for the price at which the inaily jabuar is to be paikl, and lee commannts o:10 of his cliaf Indlans to take so many men and procecel with them to the escrie for with diey are hired. The labourers receire athe monoy themsclves, and expend it as they plesse; but the bargains thns male are usually below the regolar price of tabutr. Each rillage hias two fitizes Ordinarize or Nayors, who act for one year- One fui= is is white mau, wal the other an Indian; but tu may ens:Iy be suppusesf thrat ther former has, in fact. the management. These Fuizes have the power of putting spaspicious persons into confinement, and of punishitig for small crimes; those of more importarce wait for the Correigan, or circuit of the Oavidor of the captaincy: Each village contains a tomm-hall and prisen. The admuistration of justice in the Seriam is generaply spoken of as most wretchedly bed; cuery erime obtairs impunity by the payrant of a sim of mones: An innocent person is sometimes punished through the intercist ol a greal man, whom he may hive offended, and the mintlerer csicipes who has the food fortune to be under the protection of a powerful patron. This procoeds still more from the feudal state of the councry than from the commption of the magistrates, who mighat orten be inclined to do their duty, and yet be aware that their exertions would be of no avail, and would possibly prote fatal to themselves. Tlue Indians have Jikewise their Capsitaens-moree, and this title is conlirreif dur life; it gives the londer solue power over his fullows: bat as it is anoug theon, unaccompanied by the poisession
 whices; and indeed the helf niked offecr with bis gold-headed cane is a personage who wolad excite buafleter from the most rigid nerves.

The ladians are in geacral it quict and inoffensive people, they have not much fidelity. but although they desert they sfill not injure those whom they have served. 'Their lives are certainly not passed in a pleasant manner under the cye of a director, by whom they are im-
perionsly treated, conseganoty it is nol surprising that iney shand


 dian sarcely ever pronts for himselt; or it he alfos, reaty wais the

 ptrsuils arts fisting atd hanting a a lake or rivulet will aloac


 mits, becaluse it is out ot his power to resist. Alu toditan ean nesw be persnaded to address the waster to whom the may have hiced
 in sparking to each other, and by all ochat liwe people in the courntry; but the negroes also ose if. in spoaking to their monters, therefore the Inclian will nol; lee wdresses his menporary natere by the term of ano or yatedrm, protector or pation. The relinctante io use the term of Sconor may perhaps have commenced winh ale imundiatle descendants of those who were in stavary, and thons the diajection miy have beworne traditionary: 'llesy nity retise to give by controsy what whas once required from them by latt. Howerer, if it began in this manner, $i t$ is not now continued for the same reason, as nothe of those with whorn I converiod, and they wore very many, appeared to know thest their ancentors hath beell objiged to wurk 23 sinves.

The instances of murder committed by Indinas are rare. They are pilferers rather than thioves. Wben they can, they ear immoderatedy; but if it is necesaracy thay can live upon a very trifling cuanticy of food, to which thojif idfencess often reduces them. They nre nouch addicted to liquor, and wild dauce in a ring, singinug some of the monotonoun dities of their own labgunge, and drimk tor nights and days without ceasing. Their dinces are not indecent, ay alnose of Africa. The mulattos consider thenselaes superior to the Indiana, and even the Creole blacks look down upou them; "he is as paltry





 do not, atronige these somithatbuxitns, perfonn the principal drualgery; if the lonsidand is at home lat detehes water from the rivuled and

 chilelfen to earry, the pots, the burkets, ant the exenvaterl fourds,
 rolled in upron his back, feis fishing net and his atmen, and walks in che reur. The chiklere tore washed on the day of wheit birth ia the wearesc brook or gool ol' water. Buth the men and the women are elounly in many of their habits, and paticularly in those relating to their persons; leul it some olluer multers their chatorus are extremely dixgusting ; the ature kinife is used for all prurgoses, and with lititle: prepuratory cleaning is employed in sorvices of descriptions widely opposite, They tlo not reject aby kind of food, and dovour it alnost without being cooked; rats netal other smiall vermist, snalees and allightors ame all accerpted.
'Ithe instinet, for I letiow not what else to call it, which the Indians poasess above ouher mon, in finding their way acress a wood to a certain spot on the opposite side without path or apparent mark, is most surprising; they trace fiotsteps over the dey lenves which lie sentered under the trases. The letter-cartiers, from one province to another, are mostly Indiuns, for from hadit they suchure grest latigue, and wibl walk day atter thay, with litule rest, for monthe cogether. I hase mel thein with their wallets made of goat-slein upon their

[^28]





 concention Non is it possible for the macristrate to fis: tupon the


 but that iwo or thirce witl take vo their thecis al flec firs: alarm. Some of them however are resol:ter, and suffeiently can:åentus;

 obstinate in trines, rergandless of maters of inmportaves. Hon eisaracter of che נegro is more cecided; it is worse, tot it is thit inempr.
 are capable likeswise of gratut and sared selions. Thic Yadian seems to be withoul exerigy or exurion; tevid of great grond on great ovil. Much may ac the satne tinet be said in Eheir 今ivour; they have been unfuncis dealt with, they lave been trampled uperr, and afterwards treated as childrens; hey have been alwias stbjected to those who consider thenselves their superions, und this deaire to govern them has even been carried to the direction of theiv dondestie arrangernorts. but no, -if'they are o vace of acte beingst capable of cmergys of being deeply interested upon any subject, tiley would do more than they have done. The priesthood is open to them; but they do not take advantare of it *. I never anw an Indian mechanic in any of life towns; chere is no instance of a wealthy indian;

[^29]tich mulatios and recgroes are by no means rave. I have had many dealinga with them as guidos and cartiens, and subsequently as ?atroturers, ankl have no reason to commain, for $\mathbf{T}$ was never injured by any of them ; but micither di<k I receive any particular gond exvisee, excoptoge in thet instance of Julio. For guides and catriers they are well adapted, as theit mant babits lead 1.7 mem to the tambling life which liese cmploymerts encourage. As lithonvers, I fonud that they houl texally a great inclimation to over-reach; but. their sehemes were brully made, end consoquently ensily discovered. I. never conld depend upon them for thy lengeth of time and to advance money or clobathing tor them is a certain loss. If I had ang lebour which wata to be periomed by a riven time, the oversoer wrould always reckon upon his mulatto and negro tree people; bue did not mention in the list of persoris who were to mort, suy of the findiaus whom I was then employitg; mod on my speaking of then, he answered "An ludiun is only to lee memiloned for the preyent day"," menning that no reliance is to be placed noson them.

Like most of the aboriginal inhabitants of the western hemisphere, tiese people are of a copper colout. They are short, and stoutly made; furt their limbs, though large, have not the appearsnee of posscusing igread strength, they have no shew of muscle. The tace is disproporiouately broad, che nose dat, the mouth wide, the cytes deep and smalf, the litir block, coarsc, and lank; none of the inca have whiskera, and their bearls ave not thick. The women, when they are young, have by to meana an unpleasami appearance; but they soon fall off and become ugly; their figures are seldom well shaped. Deformity ia rare smong the Indians; I do not recollect to have seen an individual of this wee who hat been bom detective; and the well-informed gersons with whom I conversed were of opinion, thet the Indians are more fortunate in this reapect than any other race with whorn they were arquainted. All the Indians of Pernambuco speak

Forturneze bat few of them pronotnce ix well ; there is alwars a cortein twang whis.h discovers the speatice to be tax Indizo, althaucth the
 erer do rot uxterstand any mber lamybage The Indinns Feldom if ever spent Portugheze so wel? as the gencratity or the eroste nequaz.

If must be perfeely undergood, that althougli there may be some unáaic doalings occastonaly of che director towards the Indian. sill this rese cannot oe enslav ed; the Indian cannoc be made xo work for suy petson fogatist his imclination, he cannor be bought and sold. An indian wild sometimes matie over his dijda, wher very foung, to a rich, persen to be taught some tude. or to be brought "pran an honschoid serssint, but as soon as thee child is of an mye to provide ior iteelf; it cannot be provented from so doing; it may leave the person under whose carc it has lecen placed if it bu so iurlined.

Two Indians presented themselves at the gate of the Cartnelite confurt of Goianar and requested abll were fermitted to sce the prion. They pux inco bis hands a purse conduining several good coins, sitying that they liad found it near Dous Rios; they beggen that he would order a ramber of masses to be said in their bebalf, which were to be paid for trom the contents of che purse. The prior, admiring their horesty, isked onc of them to remain with him tis his seirant, to which the nava dereed. The friar was in the habit of going jpto the country zo a fricond's house to shoor, On one occasiur, after the Indian lad served bim tor some tionc, ho left the convent and rook him on one of these exneditions, bat when they were about half way, the triar diseorered that he had forgoten his powder-born; he gave the ker of his trink to the lidien and desired lim to fetch the powder whilst be procended. In vain he waited at his friend's house for his sernunt, and on his recurn to the converst in ti, evebing lie heard that he was not there. Ine wrent immediatcly to his eell: supposiug that he had been robbed of all his money; and whatever else the fellow could carry of; but to his joy he discovered on exaroination, that ibe max lima only takun the pouder-horn, two silver
coins of about 4.s. Valter each, an old clerical rown, and a prie' of wom ouk mankeen pantiloons. This stomy l had from un intimate friend of the prion.

Oue of the days of ony stay an Soarit we pussed upon the torders of a lake, which is betweer two and three leagues distant lion the town, for the pupose of shooting. This lake was nearly dry. That general feature of the sountry about Searis is axid; we captaincy produces no sugar, but tile lands ave adaposel for cottort, of which however the crop this year was very triting. Sn exemsive had the drought Wevome, that a famine way feated, and gread distruss woukd have been experienced if a vessel had not mrived from the soullaward ladele with the flour of the mandioc. The usual price of it waj 640 reis per alopucien, hut the ergo or this vessel was sold at b490 reis per afoueire; a tixct which proves the scarcity to have been very great. Fonnerly consideruble quastities of beef were salted and dried hate, and ware emported to the other exptaincies, but from the mortality among the cattle, aused by the fiequcat dry seasoas, this trade has been unavoidably given up entirely, ant the whole conntry is nots supplied from the Tio Grande do Sul, the sourhern boundury of the Pos'tugueze dominions. Bat the moat which anyives ot Fernsmbuco from the Rio Grande do Sul, atill preserves its name of Sead meat, earne do Seark. The country to the northroard and eastward I understood to be much superior to that in the neighbourbood of Searù. The cuptaions of Piauki, which. lies in that direction, is accounted fertile, and is not subject to drouthts.

Maby were the praises which I heard of the late goveraor of Searat, Toam Carlos, who was appoiated to this province before he had arrived at the rige of treenty years, and who was at the time I visitedi Seara captain-gencral of Niato Grosso. His administration of justice was in gencral summary, but on one occasion he waved his usual severity; the was informed, whilst playing at cards at the house of Senkor Marocos, which is near to the palace, that at soldier was xobbing his gatien. He arrswercd, "Poor fellow freat must be his buager when he runs the risk of entering his governor's garden-
donit modest bim." Somp perams were in rbe fractice of toking doce: uff theis henges, tud other uricks ot the same sert, daring the



 these righte, he demanded his name and. en diseovering who it was, athomishien kifm to be at home at an certion lictur on the following evenimer

Thte family of the Weiozak still exista iat the interitur of this cap


 out of the reakid of phaishment that they entirely refused obedience to the faws, wouln civil and eriminal, suchin they wee They reventeal their ows wronges; personi obnoxions to them were pathliely mardered in the villages ofill the interior ; the poor man who refised obedience to their combiands was devoted to destruction, and the rieh men, who was rot of their clan, way obliged silently to aectuleseg in Jeeda of which he dith not approve. The leitoras ate deseendituts of Europeans, but many of the branches are of mised blood, and porhaps fevs ate five trom some tinge of the origimal inhnlitants of Brazil. The chief of the tumily was a coloned of militia, and rould at a short notice eall together about one hundred men, which is equal to ten or twenty times the number in al well-pecipled conatry. Degertors were well received by him, and murderers who had committed this crime in the revenge of injuries; the thief was not acceptect, nud mack less the man who for the sake of piltade lath haken the lifa of another.

Joane Carlos hat received from Lisbon secret instrations to secme the penson of this chicf of the Ficitozna. Hisis first step was to inform the colonel, thal. he intended on a certain day to visit him at hia vit luge, for the purpose of reviewing his regiment. The village is not many leagues from the const, but is distatat considerably from Searit

Feitoza answered, that he should be ready to receive Elis Exaellenoy on hus atpobined day. The Eime came and Joum Carlos set out, accomentuien by ten or awclve persmas; she colunel greeted him most. courieconly, and dad assembled all his men to midic the groatest possilates shew: Alier due revicu, the colonel dismissed them, fatigued witll the duy's exercisc, for many of them bad iravelled several leagues. Hie relied with the governur to his house, accompanied by a ferw of his utar relations. Ai the time all the party was preparing to settik for the night, Joun Curlos, having arranged every thing with bis own peoplen rose and presented a pistol to the breast. of the chief, bis followers choing she same to the colonel's relations and servathes, who were unatble to make any resistance, as they were unprepared, and mot so mumerons as the govenor's men. Joam Carlos told Feito\%at that if he spoke or made the lesust noise he should immexliutely fire, though he well linew that his own destruction would be cortain. He conducted him to the back door, and ordered birn and all the persons present to mount the horses which had been propared for them. They mave for the searshone, zind arrived thicre very early in tlan inorning jantredns were in waiting to take them on board a smack, which was lying off and on near to the const. The alarm was fiven swon after their deparare from Fitoza's willage, and as the gravenor reached the smatek, he saw the colonel's adherents upon the beach, crnburking in jangadas to try to overtake them, but it was too late; the smack left the land, and the next diny made for the shote, Janded the governor, and then proceeded on her voyage. Feitoza wias supposed to be in the prison of the Limoeiro it Listron when the French entered Forkugal, and eicher died sbout that time or was released by theme. His followers still look forwands to bis

[^30]return. The loss of their thiefs broke the power and union of the clan, and they have loxd dispulem amone themselve. Brazil is likewise undergning a change of mathers, and cuncrgiug rapridly from sem i-barbarism.

A young tran of Soura hud been, a short time before my arrival, to the distance of thitty leagues into the intexiors acempantied by weo constablest, to serve a writ upon a man of some prepperty for a debl; they rode good bursen, that they might perform rheir erthud wefore lie could have any knowledge that they were going, and might attempt, in consequence, any thing against their lives. It is a dangerous service to go into the interior to recover debls. The Forturguese law does not allow of arrest for delbt, but by serving a wril any property which was bent down to the towt to he shipped might be seized.

I wea received at Scari most hospicably; the name of Eaglisiman wak a recommendation. In the moming I genorally remained w, home, and in the afternoon rode out with three or four of the young men of the place, who were mach superior to any I hed expected to find here, and in the eventing a lavge parcy nsually assembled at the house of Sermur Mtureos; his company and that of his wite and daughter would have been verypleasant any where, butwas particularly so in these uncivilized regions. Paties wore likewise occtaiounally

 that place. The persom who pet off ba artat him followerl time froms place to phatec, arrived at Inahia, and canburkod for and lutued at Livkous. I-te eaquiced for Foivona,

 secretary, and uhewed iln ardert which he had recelved for the arivel of Fericozc, ranking known the parkicular crinues which fish aude his uppwehenoion requisice. Pitazn wes taken into clustoly and put inco cha Limotiro prinens, where hir persucutar or prosiceutor
 gree crisve", alluding to him determidition of nppuebendiog hirn. 1-Ie retarned to Brazil and gnve an account of hin rivision to the grvertioe, from whou he had received hin ortura. This man wor well known in the pravinco of Seurih uncl the truth of the stary iy vauchod for

given at the pslace, and int both these places, after ten and coffee, ciuds and corversation made the eventing pass very guicalv- The palace wit the only dueling in the town which hat boarded floors; it Tppeared at first rather st anage to be received by une ot' the princijat officers of the province, in a тоon with a brick floor and plain white wastect wallis as occurred at the house of Seohno Marcos.

This gentluman had doljered to me at crimson coloured satin bage, containing govormment papers, :nd clirected to Jhe Prince Kegenc of lortugal and Brazil, and he wave me directions to prat it into the hatads of the post-master at Firmatmbnco. 1 obtained. frota being the beaver, the power of requiriug horzes from the seweral commandants upote the roud. Tu him it was convenient. as with me its chance of safety was freater than if it hat heen forwarded by at singlo man on foot, which is the usinal mode of convoy:nnce. The men enoployed for this purpose aye trusl-wortlyy but must of course sometimes meet with accidents.

I huilin my jotrmey from Goinna to Suerà seen Pernmmbuco, and the adjoining prosinces to the northward, in almost their worst state -that of one whole seasou withour rain; but extreme wretchedness is produced by two successive years of droutbri; in such a case, on the second year, the poasanta die by the roasd side; entire familics are swept away: entire districts are depopulated. The country was in this dreadfill state in $1791,2,3$, for these daree years passed without any considorable fall of rain. In 1810, food was atill to be purchased, though at exorbitant prices, and in the following year the cains came down in abundance, and removed the dread of finine. I hud, I say, seen the provinces through which I, passed upon the brink of extreme want, owing to the fillure of the rains; I had myself experiencod inconVeniance from this cause, and in one instance considerable distress from it; now in returning, the whole country onas changed, the rains had commonced, and I was made to feel that great discomfort is caused by cach extreme; but the sernsations which the apprehension of a want of water produses age much more painful than the dis-
arrpeable cffects of an intumoleate stantity of it -henver rains and floparled lands.
 owing to an accillowt which I anet with in haching this conti: ede me to my bed dor some days. An soon as $I$ wna allowed to move it made prepratabids ior my relurta; i purchamed tour horses, one (b)
 a thixal tor maize, and the foumh for nusclt: Sentor Lourento sont for three tuaty Imdians trom one ot we villages for the purpose of accompaising me, and on tive Sth Jantary, 1611, I commencod u" returis to Pernambuco.

## CHAPTER VTI.



```
    w上N. - FROM vatas. TO MECJFE
```

ILEFFT Searis at cay-brcak with theee Indians, and three Joumled horges, and one of che souny men with whon I had formed an sequaincance accomphonied we ta a short distance from the tomi. I deviated on my return to Aracai, in sorme measure, from ehe woad by which I ladi travelled to Searà The firsl dav pussed without any circumstance worthy of being mentioned, and I was cithefly occupied in finuivg out whan anct of' beines my Indians were, for I lad had very little conversation with them before we set off- In the aflemoon of the second day, having asked oue of the Indians if the road was intricate to our noxt resting-place, and being snowered, that thero was no turning by which i could lose the tight path, I lelt Whe loaded borses and rode on, buigr tired of following thens al, a four's pace; ihis I had often done on other occasions. About five o'clock I put n\̧ at a collage in which were two boyn, whose appesrance mas very wretched, but zhey seemed glad to say that they would let me have a night's ladging. On enquiry, they told me that their piererts were fente to some discance to make paste from the stem of the Carnikuba, for that their nsual food, the flowr of whe randioc, was ro lonarer to be had at any price in that neighbouthool. I was shown some of this paste, which was of a dark brown colour * and of the conaistence

[^31]of dough: c.tail las yon been suffiriculty lancaded; it was bitwer and natuscouns to dice tiate. On thiv subtance these miserable peopla were mater the nusestity ot suisishime whiun io it occasionally dried
 the cweniug che zounge looy began to besp; inconsilerately $T$ gave binn mone!, bit thortly he returned, baying hīs elder brother desired fum to tell ne, that it wombl be of no mse to them, as nothing could be purelased wich it. Then $I$ unclerstood their moaning in fucgeging or tiais moment, - my men were going to sixper, the childrens were of conse desired to sit down withe chem. Here Telicianc, one of the Tudians, sewed two hides looscly Found the two brige of farinha, styinge, that if we preceedud withour ilisgutising what fhey contained, we should ot some hamiet upon the fowd he obliged to spatisfy the people, who would probably beg pari of it from us. He had not kiowns. lefore he enquired from these children, that rifis part of the wountry was in such a dreadfut scate of wan. The inhabitailts had eaten up their own scanty croje, and some of them hied even been lempted by the exorbitant price, to carty theis stock to Bearet for sale. They harl nor heard of the supply which had arrived at thel piace thom the southward We reached Aracati on the fifth dasy:

I temained two days at Aracati, that the horses might be brought tronn the istant tuon whicl, they had been pot ow to grass, $X$ experienced fitlly now what the fruide had before wha me respercing the horser. They had all lost flesh, and weve appatentiy less fit for work than witex: I first arived at Arocari, ifoough doubtless the reliet from daily work for so long a period mast bave rendeted then better able to renew is aroius now. The Spanisle diacoverers in South America, wiso understood the businesa inco which they had entered, strongly inculcated to abcir people the necessity of the steady and regular continuance of their juurnies, umless a pause could hate been made for some length of time *. I hought a lirge dorir at Aracntis,

[^32]which had been caineil to keep, watch over the biggage of travellers.
A. mant presonter himself here, retucsting to be allowerl to go with me to Pernambuco. Ife described himself as a Portugueze sailor, a European by tuinh, and as laving holonged to the Portugueze sloop of war, catied the Andorinha, which was wrecked upon the coast betwect liard and Maranhami. Hie had travelled fiom the spot at which he had laucled to this place without any assiztancee from goverament. No provision had been made by any of the men in power for the subsistence: of the persons who escaped. I consented to his joining we; he belared well, and I never afterwards bati any ealase to doubr the truth of his story-

I hail now a greac incxase in my number of men sud horees, but tras adviaed to tyke the men all torwards wich me, ts the raina noight commence and the xivers fill. in which case the nore people Chad to assist in crossing them, with less dinger would it be acpomplished. The sddicional number of horses enabled me to divide the weight into smaller loade, and to have two or tirree beasis unencumbered, for the purpose of relieving the others it neexssary. The party now consisced of nine persons sud eleven horscs.

Senhor Burtos, hin lindeess wras atill vontimued towards me, and I hope I shall never cease to feel grateful for it.

I was adpisod to get on to the sea-shore as soon as possible on Ieaving Aracuti, this being che better road; consequently I slept the first night, distant three leagues from that place, at Alngou do Mato -a smith lake which was now nearly dried up. The following morning we travelleat orer the sands, pasted a small village neac to the shore called IRctiro, and slept at Cajuacs, a place we were tecuatinted with; and from hence to St. Lizis we followed the same route as in going to Seari. From Cajuzes we pasyed through Areias, famous for the ghost story, and rested at Tibou, procecding in the aftomoon with the intention of sleeping at the unfinished honse on the road to lha; but the night was closing in upon us when we were still two leagues short of it, and for this reasom it was thought adviseable to stop and
pass the nifht atmong the larushwood. Whe fact hat soveral showers of rein, occubiomtly fios sorme dinys past.- anck although i.locy were sliffit, the arraths had bogton to spring up in someplaces. The mapidity of vegetntion in Brazil is f.ruly ustonjohnger Rain in the eveniogs upon frood soil will lyy statrixe have given at aremish tingo ter the enth, whith is inereased, if ilso rain contintera, on the seennd day to sprouts of grass ot an inch in lengeld, and chese on the thired diy are


The brastiwood among whish we hat aletermined 50 pass the right was low and not close, ans that only two shritas were dound to be mear enough to exech other and of suffecent stredugtio to suppurt a lizurmock; between these mine was lurug, whilst the people iook up their quarters apon the packages as to them acomed bext. Bewwen one and two ochow in the morning the xain commencoll, at first, with some moderation; the golde fascened two corals from shent to shrub aboye any hammock, and laid some hites npon them as a covering lor me, but soon the rain increased, and the whole party crowded under the hides. I gat up, and all of an mtond together in sonse degrece sheltered, until the hides fell down owing to rbeir beiag fuito sonked. Our fires were of course eompletely extingtisited. 1 reminded my poople of the mecessily of kecping the locks of onr fire-arms diry; intieed those persons of the party who knew tho Sertam minst bo even more aware than myself of the manhers of Joguars which rure to be met with upon these frajessidet I fiad not spoken inany mitutes before Feljeifmo said that he heard the growl of one of these animaly - he was right, for a lot of maren galloped across the park not fir from us, and shortly after the growi was distinecty hoard; elther the asme or many of these butats were near to as diring the remainder of the night, as we liend the growl in several directions. We stoorl with our backs to cach other and by mo meang fiee from the chance of being attacked, thougls the Indians fromn time to tine set rip a sort of song or howl, (such as is practisad by the Sertancjos when guiding large droves of half tamed cattle) with the intent of fightatening the Jagusirs. Towards duy-bicak the delitye somewlut sbated, but stil!
che suin was hard and it did not coase. In the morning there was mach difliculty in findityg the luorses, as the Jachars latil frightenned and acatitered them; indend we much doutreed that choy would all bee alive, but I suppose the wild catte were prederred as being in better condition. The loads wore arwanyed and wo proceeded to Lhba, di! tunt six lexumes, ariving chace about two a'dock in the afurricion, after havirgg sustained twelve hours of continned rain. The ownete of the estate of llha aent a mesagge to sny llat he wished mut to renove from the ouldouse, in which I had setcled myatlf for the reinainder of the duy and entuing night, to his rowikence; I accejatenl lity offer. It was a low, mud cotage covered with tiles, which had been made from the clay thet is w be found upon the skirta of the aate mirah near to which his house stood. He gave as plenty of wilk and dried meat; there was a seateity of forinder, but a plerstifin year was expected. Immediately on my entrance into his house he offered me bis hammock; in which he hud been sitting, but mine was suorl shang ant we sat, talliedr and mmoligh for a considerable time. The mosquitos wore very troublewome irudeed from this day we were scarcely ever without theyo at nigigi, and they annoyed ua more or Jese, accorditisg to the state of the wind and the quantity of rimp which haxd fallal cluritgg the day. The inconvenitence oucasioncd by these insects in inconceivable, until it has bean experiencent.

The next, day we advanced to itre villenge of Sti. Luxis, and reated at nown there in wn unfished cottage. Soon atter we had unloatled otn horses atid I had latin myself down in my hanmock intending to slcep, the gride told me that a mumber of poaple appeared to be assembling nose to us, and chac I ought to repollect the quarrel which we had hurd here in going. I got up and asked for my trumk, opened it with as little apparent design as proseible, turned over saveral things? int is, and taking out the Red llagg, placed it upon a laxge log of titat ber rear to me, and then I continued to search in che tromk, us if for sotrething 1 could not inomediately find. When $I$ looked up again, in a lew minutes, all the persons who had assambled were gone -either the important consequences attending ihis bag werc. known, $\rightarrow$
that of having the power of making a requisition of horses, or some other iden of my situation in life was given by tive sight of this reareical breg. 'The river nemi St. Iugia had not ver filled. the proceeded in the afternown stad remelaed the banks of the river Ranema, a narrow but mow a rapid streans. Une of the men wat in ta ers if it was fordable. but belorg he was half way acoss he found that it would be impossible to pass, as the tapidity and deptl would effectually prevent ans altempe to carry the packerges aver upon the heads of the Indians. I desired the people to temain where they were, whilst I turned back with the Goiana ruide to look for some habbitation, because, owing to the commenecment of the ruins, sleeping in the open air woold have been highly imprudent.

We made for a house, which wsi siruated amoner the Crarnàm trees, at some distance from the road, and as the owner of it said that fie could accommodate ut, and that there was abundauce of grass for our borses, the guide returned to bring the party to this place, which was ealled St. Anna. In the course of the night I liad an attack of agrie, which would have delayed me at \$t. Annid even if the beight of the waters had nor prevented me from proceeding. IIowever I became more unwell, and perhaps I imagined myself to be worse than 1 really was, but I began to wist to arrive at Açu, as, by so doing, i should be advancing upon my joumey, and at the same time I should obtain the adrabage of being near to same priest, to whom I conld impart noy messarge which I might have to send to my friends. Alchough I wis not in immediate danger, I was awate of the sudden changes to which aifuish disorders sre linble. As soon as the waters began to subside I determined to remope, but as I could not mount on horseback, it would be necersary that I should be carried in a himmock; bowever the difficulty consisted in pronuring a sufficient number of men. By waiting another day six persona were obtained from the cottages in the vicinity, some of which were digtant more than a lesgue. On the fifth day from that of my arrival here, we set off, crossed the river, which was barely fordable, and entered upon the flooded lands. The waters covergd the whole fince of
 wats in parts rij to 1 he witist, but was in ghonginl less than kneedeep. The mea knew the waty trom $\Gamma$ Ticlice, but even the guide whom 1 had

 two (rees, desting the two amds of the pole ly which the men cenrried it nfoon two forked hianclies; and hides were flaved over this pole to slarle mo díous the surn, the wat trees hat nob recovercal fions the clroughti. mid were yel without leavesi. Filte metionang their hammocky also, the packages were supported upon tfte brameltes ol trees, arid the horses stood in the water ancl pat tleeir matize ont of bagy which were tied rount their noses. The water was shalion here, is this spot was ratluer higher that the landa around; and in one place the grourd was beginning to make ita appesmancas At dusk wo vendsed Chafieria, nfazenda, situated upon clry land. and here we put up ungler an mifiniahed bouse. The horse upon which my tratek and case of boatles had travelled, had fallen down, and to ndel to my diacomfort, my clooths were completely wetted, and even the red bag did nor: entirely cacope.

I passed a wretched night, from tive supuc and from ovar fatigue. The following morniwg I had some conversation wich the owner of the place, and parchuscil two of hia horses. $\Delta x$ noon I semt off the consoio, undex the cure of Feliciano, who was deaired to reach Piato the following night. I remained with the Goiana guide and Julio, who lad been promoted to John's place of groonn. With considexable difliculty the packuged were curriod ateros* the river, which runs jusib below this estate; the stream was at present rapid, and the strouy bed in which it, xums increased the difficulty. When I passed on che morning followirg, the depth and rapidity of the curcent were considerably diminialued, for no rain tax fallen during the night. I had mounterl the two persong whe accompanied me upos the two borses which had been purchased the day before, and E rode a led horse which was quite frew ; rexolving to arrive at Xiato, distani ten Iedgues, in ore dity; this I acomplisbed, resting only a short time
 the case slist not a! ous me any :licemation, and [ was determined to








 tumbers of the :utter wee to be sicen about the thus, uat a bigh



 that slie anal ber elbilaren could nor rearlve to bave any ol ham aidext. This belsavione became so fiequent, that at last when eitler the guide or nuysell mode up wa cotinge to parchase dibwl, it wat quite decerive with us, if' che hugbant called to his wite, sayityry that. she worald settle the: mather. Liuhss we bad time to spate lon talkiog, we genevally went out wity.

Wy friend the commandant was still rasicting at Fintê; I felt ax if I wow relurning home; my spirita trere low, and any trife relieved then. This nighth $I$ was still very unwell, ay thirst mas great, and nothing satistied and atlayed it so much as water-melons, of which there was here a superabundance I ste several of them. Tha guide satid I should kill myselr'; but $I$ thought otherwisc, for I lised the froit. In the morning I swoke quite a changed person, and the ague returned no moxe. The guide oflen said nttervards that he never hand knowt antil the preseal occaxion, that water-melons might be taken ay a care for the agae. He wity quite certain that they had performed the cutc, and that they would have the same effect upon atl persons in the same disease. Such are the chaneres to which this
virunge complaint is snbject; often thus sthdendy leaving the patient. ? ant ax recquenty or more su, ending in fever and dafirjuth; liowever if seldom $1^{\text {ronoves fatal. }}$

One the morrow wo left Pató, with the addition to ont party an a strall tame sheep, atur a tame tota-bude, or armadillo, both latring been sisen to me by clue commandiant. The fomer kept paee with the horses for monny days, aud it rewer grave us any troulde, until the jong comonnance of the journeg wearied it out, and then I was obliged to make room for it io one of tha pmoners; ith this manger it travelled tex st day or two at a zime. Thue irnatillo was conveyed in a small bang and only on one occision gutc us atry trowble; when we released tit in, our reating-places, it wanlly remmincal amoner the partinges, eicher feerling or rolled ug. It wan with some difficulty that. XVinnoza wes prevented from annoying it: bete latterly she and Ule armiadillo were rery good friends. AL Açu 1 changed one of my loories ion another that was in beter condition, and gave about the valuc of a grinea to bood.
 inholsited in going, recteved us vuty cordially, and offered to assist us itt crossing the rivet, which was full; bute they advised me to wait for a decrease of zhe deptli aud rapidizy of the streatut; however I wax anxious to advituce, and my penple made no objection. FTere I dis. charged the young man whom I had taken from bence as a guide to Aracsi. We crosised the smaller branch of the fiver, with the water reaching to the thaps of the sarddes. When we arxived at the second and frincipal branch, it was discovered that h jenzgetar would be necessary to convey the baggage across. Several of the inhabitants of the plice had followed ns, friging that this would be we case, snd abey were willing to be of service to ne in expectation of being corm pensated for their tronble A few logs of timber were soon procured; some of them luad been bronght down by the atream, and wexe row utpon the banks, antsl others were conveyed from the town; the cords with which the packages were fastened to the pack-saddles were made use of to tie the loga together, for the purpose of forming the raft. Tine father of







 witit the other；iset norwithscandiner hei：exertions．the sarean car－


 hanctrcd yaruls in brealith；it was now deep annl diangewows，thadirom
 be taked of the shallowest pars．The Sersanejos have a cremous contrivance for crossing rivers，which is forined ot＇invee pieces of wood，and upon this they paldile themselves to the ourposite sjic．I heard it often spoken oi by tlie mame oí crazalefe；bus as I did not see any $\boldsymbol{\sigma}^{*}$ then！， 1 tunum pretend io pive an exist de－ seription ${ }^{-}$．

The men soon lejit us to arrange the land which we were doing wirh all possible expedition，when on turribeg round．i saw Mimoza ronnirg up to me，liulf crouchech amd hatli atratid．I had oftere wished in parchase this ammal，but nothing would inatuce her maser to part with hor；he said that lac hact trad her from a whelp，ant added，that if he put the pot upon the fire，and then ment out with her．he was sure to return by the time it boiled，bringitig someduing with which to fill it．He did mot mean rhat this wats literady the csse；hut chus quaincly he wished to impress the illea of ber grest expertness in

[^33]bunting. She followed us, st she tound that she wis well receivect.
 ome leagate and it badf, and heme we slenpl: The roads laty through


 ent cootd to Nutal, but had frerguncly tis cross this wrinding river.

Whilit I was at dimer, Minesza wis bear to me, watching for her share, when auddenly she crept atuler the bench upour which i sat;
 fatheer ol het owter, way coming towards us; he naid that he catre for this son's dots li persuaded hint to, seld her, and when he was going his wnoy, Mimozit ran out from under the benah und fawned ixpon lion. I tosld litus to ger on, and invite ber to follow hinn; bat "pom this sive immodiacely recterned growinge to her ohd station urder the bench. Sllus liad treen betier treuted and better fed with toe than when she was with her master. I always led her myself, and liad scveral tines grevented him from beating her.

The nexi day we passet through the faztaches of l’usazgem and Barta; the rowd was over loove stony groutud and we eronsed antery marsin, In the ufternoon ufe tencelted from \$ Benco to Anjicos, which obliged us to pass over some higber eround, which whs verg stany and prinful to our horses. We cronsed a small shatlow aream weyeral times.

Our next day's march curticd us feross more stony ground. The persona to whom we spoke, naid that there had been no min, and inchegd div was evident. There was no grass, antl the country wis yet parcherl and draury. The horses had no watev at noou, for the well was smalh, and the yrinig which suppliced it with insufficient for so great a number of beasta. I wisk thisery fo the niternoon, and thereferve left the corrinio to follow at its untal prace, and rode on accompanied hy Julis; the two dogs likewine would some wich us. We entered upon it plait, nod now for the secomit time I saw an cante, is speciea of outrish. Notwithstaudizg my attempts to prev
vent thens, the dogs ser off aiker it, and unch argitsit miz inclimation I wis oblifed to wait uatil theiv vetan. The bird ran fionnt them with great velocive, fiapping its winge, bat jever jexiog the ground. The estes outsrij] the Heetent horsea. The coluur of the one which we saw was a dark geve; its height includintr the neck, which was very long, wat about that of a man un horseback, and it had that appearance ut first sight, when at some distanec. The Sertancjos say, chat when pursued the cma spurs itselin to run the Eascer; that the spurs or pointed bones are placed in the masicle of the wings, and that as these we flapped, chat bones strike the sides and wound them- I have heatil many people say, that when an tora is canarght after a Itard chace, the sides are fonsti to be bloody. It is posisible that, this effect may be prodthed bu゙ some cause similar to that hy which a pier eus its own thrwat in switnming. The eges of the entef ure larre, and althouth the food which they afögrd is coarse, it is not mpalatable. The ticnthers ave much esteeoled. When the dogs returued we cominued our journey; the road led us between high rocks innd after procecsling along it tout some time, the dogs suddenly atruck from the patlv, wrt weut up the side of a fat rock, which sloped down cowards die prad, but was sufficionty Jow to itluw of al horse sscending it. Our borstes stopped and snuffecd up the air. Julio cried out ut dhe same time "water, water," and spurred dis horse to follow the dogminnd I did the same. Julio was quite correct in what he lind sujpaseri, from the direction which the dors immeciately took, and z̈ron the stopping of the hoses. There was a long and natrow but deep weft in the rocik, waich was nearly fitll of sater, clear and cold. The sides of the cleft slanted inwards, atud the water was below the surface, so that the doge were rmminus round and howling, withont being able to reach it; the horses too, ns aoon as we diszounted, and they saw the water, bergnt to paw, and ati.empted to press lorwards to drink We had hrought ne vessel with which to take up any of it, and were uncler the tectisity of using our hats to satisfy the horses and dogs. Thit rest of the party came ap affor some time; Feliciano was acquainted with the spot, bur if

 ghonght to all the lursen an wo hach no Jatine versol in which to take



 others wore in rreat diatregs．I－It said，wwe tuver reftuse to give intormation，but wo say as litrile soboit it as possibsles＂I travalled
 remain in the ouseu air + es thore were neveral lowavy douads fying about，from tho look ol which we wold Jnces Llat it＇tle wiask aboteri， eain would come on．Wee ruached a fazeroda，nosl npplied for a

「The platese wax fitl］of persons who hat nasembled from the neigh－
 collenting cartle．The fillows were eating dried meat：，arrd had by sume means obtained a quantity of rum．I took mpe my atnion at a
 from the fert of rain，and in some mensurt thet wo might to pre． parel to prevent ary of our horses being stolen，as a picce of sport， Iby the peoples in the house．

The next．dily we erassed over a pletin which wins partly without treas and int part covered with brushwostl in going over this last portion I land phished on wich Julio，leaving the tamberis io follow us． We bad noarly lost our way at the division of severtl patis；cuen Tulig＇s knowlectite was insutiticiond，and haul we not mee some ravel－ lers engl enquired of them，I know nol low fiur from the bughage we might have been at night

On the following moraing we advanced again，took water in stitu near to some cottages，atid at thon stationed ourselved in the bed of a rivtilet，where abere was good frass，but no wroter．fis the bed was lower than the neighbouring land the very first shower had made the

 breshworad; Feliciata Followed it ly the: toarks of ita footsteph aver 1.he erreess and dry deavese and brought jt buck. 1 atrat quite cennthdent that he difl nol see whirh woy il went, and to a fecrean tatused to imatig footsteps there appestred to bo none. It it had prasiel over
 ing the way whikh the animal lad :alken, but repor grats and dry leaver sts smell ati ntimal condal make hut a most tríling jmprossion. I montioned at this place uccidentally that the skiss had spoiled the water, for it tasted of the geease with which they bul been rutsoed. Feliciano heard mos, and taok up, a small skitn that. lay empts, which was old and theretione nor greasy, and said, " It] try to fint some for you dhal is better;" and awny he went. In about an hour he retiarned witl the akin firll of excollent. water. Ite hat rocelieced a doft in a rock at some distasice, and had gone to see if any yot remained in it .
 ntion of reaching the Seerinneirin, which we did. This track of coututry lued not recovered froin the clraughe, but the tress were beronning to be elonthed, and the grass under them was it ruost parts of sufficient fength to afford subsistence to dar horses. TViater was still scarce and bad, hast the main had made it less brackish and more plentiful. Whe possed over the frazessiat with all prosible laste, as ine floods weare expectod shortily, and sometimes the water comes dowrt, as $I$ have before stated, with great rapidily. There is nome danger in being cuught by the water upon any of the peninsulas or isiands which are formed by its bends, for tos be under the necessily of crossing over in stream which runs with much violence, perhaps ten times or more sucecossively, would be too much kir alnowt. ung harse to bear, and particularly for thowe which weve already fatigued by a long journey. We ledt the Seariz-meirim in four deys, pasged Pai Paulo, and early on the fith day arriverl again at the dry jake. The people of this place were upon ite' point of clecumping,
as the rains were expected or rather had airmuly eommenced. We nuw ance sereral patijes of travellees, who lated taken advantage of thet lirst fains to puss over blis wack of commey. atd who vere Justering laffore the foods cinle down lite river.

January is unt projerly speakisurg the raitsy xenson. Flhe ritins at the commencement of the year are ealled the primaters arsuas or the firsi waters, and continuce tive aboud a fiotagight or blacee weeks, after

 untally gretty constant. Frote August or tieptember uatil the openting of ald yeat there is now uxtally any rain. 'Whe dyy wether ean be tepended upon with more certuinty from Septombernatil Jannary, then frour Febreary until ${ }^{2} 1$ luy' likewise the wot wenther can be loused for witli mose certainty from state antil Aughast than in Jumury: 'There are very few days durimes the whote course of the
 fowever be taken with some latitude, as in all climates they are subjuct: lo variation.

The: Lave I luft at the dry lalie was fithfully deliverod to me, and
 nor roceived me wich cloe same cordiality us beforn

I had now left the Sertam, and though it treated, me untier nughly, still I liave always wished I could have seen more of it. There is a sertain pleasure whid 1 cunnot describe in crossing new conntifes, and that porison of territory over which 1 had travelled was new to an Englisloman. From the sensations which I experienced I can well imapine what those are, whidn tmovellers in unexplored countries must feol at every wiep - at every novelty which comes under their view. There is yet mush ground upon the vortinent of Sosula America co be travorised, and I most heatily wish that it haul been my fite to be the civilized individual first doomed to erona from Pernmmbinco to Lima.

I have perhaps hardly asid sufficient to give a correct jden of the inhubitants of the fuxcridas or cattle estatess. Linlike the Reons of the











 lowest, us ill former tithes, and incled dace same praction fearails in





 sreat use is mude in monestic arrmagoments; they axe cat in two and the pulp is seooperl out, then the rind is alried and thexe ride vessels serve almost every furpose ad eatthomware - water is curried in them, Scc. and tley arc: fikewise used as unsarsures. Thoy tary from six inches in cireumference to whoul thene feet, and tre ustally rather of an oral sbape. Tlise ganard when whole is called corbaca, and the liulf ot' the rind is catled cuig. It is a eromping plant, and grows sipontuncously in many parts, but in others the people piont it amonig the mandioe.

The conversution of the Sertanejoa asaally turns ungon the state of their catile or of wornen, and occationally, accounti of adventuras which took pluce at Recife or at anme otbex town. The merits or demexits of the priesta with whon they may happen to be aequainted are likewise disctisacd, and their irrcfular practices are made a subjoct of ridiculc. The dress of the men hay already been described, but when they are ni home a whirt and drawers alone remain. 'flue
women have a more slovenly look, as their ofoly tress is a slift and pactircour, no stockinge, and oftentinues no shoes; but when they luave lrome, which is vory seldory, an adelition is made of a darge piece of coarse white cloth, pither of their ant or ot Entropenn manufachere, sud this is throws over the head and shoulders; a jaair of shoes is filcurise chea put on. Ther are good horatwomen, and the high Portugueze saddle zerves the purpose of a side-sadrlte very completcly. I never same thy Brazilian woman rieling, at is the eane oceasionatly in Portugal, in the manner that men do. Their employmeat consists in household atrungements entively, fist the mens crem milk the cows and goats: the women spin and work with the neeslle. No fentales of tiee birtla ate erer aems employed in any kink of labour in the open air, execpting in that of oreasionally tetching wood or water; if the men are not at hones. The chiddren generally run about naked until a ecrain iuge, but this is offern kem aven in Recife; to the age of six or seven years, boys are allowed to ron afocut without any clontinis. Formerly, I man betore the commencement of a direct tracke with Eugland, both sexes deessmi in the comeso eotton cloth which is mute in the country; dice petticoati of titis cloch were sometimes tinged with a red dye, which was obalined fiom the bark of the coipuna treer a native of their woods; and ayen now this dye is nsed for tinging fiskíng-ncts, zts it is said that thase which have undergone this prociceas last the: Ionger.

In those timea, a dross of the common priuted sotton of Euglish or of Fortugueze manufucture cost from eight to twelve mil reis, from two to thire gainess, owing to the monopoly of the tracles by which the merchants of Recife put what price they pleased opon their commoditios; other things were in proportion. Owing to the enormous prices, European articles oft dress could of sourso only be possessed by the rich peopic. However, since the opening of the ports to foreimen trade, English goods are finding their way all over the countyy nad the liawkers are now a namerous body of med. The monten seldon appear, and when they are seet do not take any part in the converations unleas it be some one good wife who ralea the roist; if thej









 by any means pretelud tor speak in its ittsififarion; but if the casuses
 into, I have thanity foutal that the reseerer had only ohtaibed what







 was their idera of ati Encelislman anel a lemeric, that it was on xome


 ructiments or knowledge. 'Their retigion is rontitent to the observance of certain forms ust ceremonics, and to the frequetit repatition of a dow pravers, faith in chirms, relica, und other things ol the smine order. The Sertanejos are tourageous, generous, sincere, and hospitable: if a tinvoux is begged, they linow now how to deny it; but if you trade with theme either for enttle, or aught, else, the chteracter changes, and then they wish to autwit you, concciving succers to be a piece of cleverueas of which they may bonst.

The following anecdote is characteristic. A Serancjo came down
from the interiot with a latge droze of cattle, which had bean enirusted to lidid to sell; he ojuinited a purchaser, who was to pay bim at the close of two or threv months. The sertaneio weited to receive che money, as his home was soo far distant to return for this parpose. Beturus the expination ait the term, dic purchascr of the c:utcle found some means of havige him iroprisoned; he went to hisn when he was in confinement, and precending to be extremely sorry for tris misiourcune, hinted, that if he would atlow him to appwopriute part of the debt to the prurpose, Ine woukd try to obtain his release; to this
he Serranejo acread, and conser uentis zoon olvalined his freedom. ILe hearch soon aferwards how the whole of the business had treen managed by the purchaser of the cartle, to avoid paying for what he had bonghte and he could nor obtain any parc of the money. Haring advised this employers in the Seram of these circumstances, he received for answer, that the loss of the money was of litrle conscquence, bur that he must either assussinate the man who foul injured him, or not recurn home; beause he should himself suffer if the insult remaincd urevenged. The Sertanejo inunediately made preparstions for returnings be had aiunys feigned great thindafizlress; towards fis debtor for obtaining his release, and a cotal ignorance of his unjustiflable conduct. On the day of his depature, ine rode to the house of the man whom he lad determined to destroy, and dismounted, whilst one of his two companions held his horse; he suw the owner of the housti, and as he gave him the undal parting embrace, ran his long tinife into his side; he thea quickly leapt on to his horse, and the three persons rode off Nonc dared to molest them, for they were wedT artned, and alchough this occurred in a large tow, they soon joined a considerable number of their soumtrymen who waited for them in the outskirts, and proceeded to their own coubtry, widoul any miompr. being made to approbend them. These cireurnstunces tool place soreral years tego; but the relativos of the man who was killed still bear in mind fis death, and a determination of revenging it ugoot him who commitucd it, if he was again to place
 the sersy.



 are of the same shade; sonme dijeronce is almost alwas percetrable,




 hote good in the Sertasu, but are applicable to all the courre which
 aside, is eartainly landsome; abl the women, whilet young, lave well-shaped Jornse, and many or shem grod katcurs; inded I hase sosen some of tig whitc pertonas whe wodlel be uchmitud in als
 a distance from the sea, chatiens the complexinn fore than it the
 decided dark colout; which has the appeurance ot' churability, anad is much preterable to a sullow siekiv look- thounch of a lighter tiut.

The parson: who veside thpon and have the care ar the catle estates,
 share of the calves turd foals that are roared upon the land. luta at ahe
 the quantity oi cuctle, numbers ate reckoned yery loosely; it is cherem fore a comfortable and lucralive glace but the clities attembireg it are heavy, require consickenathle comrare, sud great bodily strongith and

[^34]activily. Sinme or the owours live upon their extates; but the major part of those throurch whiche I pissed, were possensed by ment of Jarge property, who xosited in the towns upon the coisc, in who were at the same time sugar-planters.

The juteriot of lemambinco, Hio Grande, Paraiba, and Scara, containi, propbrly rpeaking, no wild catutei. Twiee every year the hovdsimen from sereral estates assemble tor the gurpuse of coltecting the catule. The cows are driven from all quarters into the areat in fiont of the housi, athd here, surrounded by several horsethes, sure put into spacious peus. This being done, the men dismount, astet How their object is, if any of the oows are incolined to be unrctly, which is often the ense, to noose them by the homs so is to secure them; or another mode is anopred, which is by noosiug one of the bind-legra, and cirrying the cord quite sound thie animal, so as to throve it down. The calves are then canght, and this is clono without much afficulty : they are murked on the right haunch with a redi-hat iron, which is mude ot the sthape that has been fixed upon by the awner as his peculiar mark. When the axen are to lue collected Lor a market, the scrvice is more dangerous, and fiequenlly the ricler is under the necessity of throwing the animal to tho ground with his long pole, as 1 liave in another place mentioned. On the mouns ipproach, the ox rums off into the nearest wood, and the man followis, a closely as ho posaibly can, that he may take advantage of the ouening of tlee branclues which ia made by the beast, as these shodty close aguin, reanaing their former situation. At limes the ox passes under a low and thick اanach of a lavge tree, then the man likewise passes under the bruncli, thel that he mayy to chis, he leans to wis right sitie so completely, as to enuble hime to lity jold of the girth of his

[^35]sadyle with his lefic hamd, and at the same lime hia letic heel catches
 trailing upon the ground, he follows withour slackening his pate,
 overake the ox, he runs lis goad into ics side, and ir this is dexterously done, lee cfrows it. Then he dismounts, and ties the apimal's legz angether, or piac:es oric firc-leg over one vi the furas, wixich sccures it most effectually. Many blows are received by these men, hur it is seldom that dearlas are occasioned.

Tin crossing tic Searu-meirim, I mentioncd an instance of a cow having scrayed to an immense distance trom its native pasture. This propensity to ramble is common among bomed fattle, even without its proceching from the semeity of grasi or water. Often at the time of collecting che cattle, those persons wha have been to a considerable distance to assist others, drive bacle a number of beasts with their owis mark; the satate to which they belonged boing distant twenty leagues or more. When a traveller is in distress for water, he camnot do better tiran to follow the first cattle-path, as these usually lead to the nearest pool of water, in a direct line. The puths are casily tistinguished, being fery narrow, and the wood uniting above. leaving open below only a shady walk, of the height of the avimals which made it.

Each lot of mares with its master horse is driven into the pens; this cousists of from fifeen to twenty in number. The forls are likewiae marked in the same mamner as the calves. It is worthy of remark, and the cixcurastance was often repeated to we, that the borse of the lot drives from il not only the colts but the fillies also, as soon ha they ate fuld grown. The fact was only qualified in twio or three instavces, when told to mae, by the person who related it addin!, that if the horse did not do so, he was taken from the lot, and brokep. for the pack-saddle, being considered of a bad breech. When a horsc is to be tamed for any purpose whatsocver, he is noosted, after being put into a pen, and is tied to a stake; on the following day, or perhaps the same sfiexnoon, if he appearis at all tractable, a small low
saddle is placed upor lition, and a man then mounts with at double initere. The animal rums off witl, litut, which the math, far froun atclempting to prevent, rathor urges him to do; though in general the whip and spur are not made are of, unless he is obstiazte and refuses to go forwartls. Horses of good breeds are sais to be those mosh easily tamed. The $l_{201 s e}$ runs until he becomes weary, and is then bronght back quietly $\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{y}}$ its rider; and yerhaps they do not reach ilte rider's home umtil the following day. The man must mot dismount until he has tetumed to the spat from whence he started, ax he would probably experience great difficuley when he wishad augain to procerd, from the restiveness of the horse. The same operation is contivued as long as the ansimal is not suppresed to be effectually broken in, amisafe to mount. It happeux on somes occasions, that by jutunging, the horse gees rid of both man and saddle, and is uot ingain seen for a leagell of time; however, maless the girths give way, be lase littlo chance of throwing his rider, for the Sertanejos ate wost excellent horsemen.

The horses are smatl, and somec of thent are fincly slaped, though little attention is prid to the improvement of the breed. Great stress is laid upon the colonr, in the choice of these animala; sonve colours being aceounted more demonstrative of strengeth than others. Thus it ercam-coloured horse, with a tail and mane of the satne colour, is rejected for the pack-satidle, or for any lind of severe labour; and if horses of this desctiption are sold for these purposes, the price is lower than that of an animal of an equally promising appearance in form and size, of any other tiage: they are much esteemed if well slaped, as saddle-horses, for short distances. A ceam-coloured horse, with a black tail and mane, is reckoned atrong. The horses that have one forc-lcy white, and the other of the colour of the body, are supposed to be liable to stumble. The usual colours are bay and grey; but chesnat, black, and cresarcolour are less common; those most esteemed for work are darit brys, with black tails and maucs, and greys datted with small bay spotsStallions sre broken in both for the saddle and for carrying loads in




 battle. send as both are equally clesirous ot fishatug the rider may puthajes find himese!f waded the necensity of pacine lituacil at a



 more estectared kinti bilh; tlant is, cither when the oxem are in at





 wool, and thia continues until thas are one beat and at tali or two
 species of hotis- Although the woal shoutid reabain longer in some instances, in appeaved to me that ic was conter and slotet $\dagger$. A wound



 Juan is the cuace respecting the bexf of the twa collattion,




 wiljen was much admired and esimentedr" I did mot certainis remark particulatiot the theep of Seario, altd the opinion mbst of caerse be whins in pruference 60 mithe, at thrs

upon the body of this animes is more difficule to heal than then that of nery collage, aucl the flesh of it is al' all athers the most rapid in its udvances to pucrolfation.

The clivision of proporry in Lhic sinpman is very undeterminate, and

 some cuses, lyy so many humbeda of cablves yourly, withoud any relerence to the quablity of [and. Finv periogs ialic the troubic of muking thetuselyos aquainted with chat watel extent of theix owir proporty, and perthps could not discover it if chcy urule line atcempt,

The climete is goods; indeod the imlant flat oountry is murk more IneaIthy tlan than immoxiaticly forchering the coast. $\mathbf{I}$ cur furclly name atay disorders ldaut appear to be peedial to it; but aeveral are knowa. Agtus are not common, Ent trey exiat. Dhopsy also they are nequainted with. Uleers in the legs are common, but less so than upon the const. 3iuptures treçuently vecur. The ymalli-pox makers dreadful ravages, und the menslews are much dreaded. Whan the venerenl disease has once setilal, the sufferer seldom gets rid of it entiroly; applicationa of herls ate used, hut as thene people are amacguaintad wilh or tuable to followits proper oude of treatment, some of the patients stre eripjeled, and the mefor part of them never sgrint enjoy grood healts. The yaws nisos is to be met with; but I fad atierwatcls more opportamitios of eeeing this complaint; and will therefore not now give aty atocount of it. Itsitamocs of constumprion oceur. The hoopindeconty did not mppear to be koown in any part of the country which 1 visited; I made many inquirics respecting it, but could not obtain any information upon the subject. I slept namy times in the ofen sir, tard bever ficlt any bad effecta from so doing. The dew is irifling, and a high wind is uxtail in the night. The som

[^36]is powerful, anch is of coutse [\%







 betur, is is filvourize food; it is sutiered ro rime tos secel, and is ompy plucked up when quite dry and latd. I hace oben been sterysised to see of how litule service maize is to thery as foug but ser it is ocridionally useth. In defals of theie, che: paste of the cartìitbo is thado ; ancl I hisve seat mest earen with erards. Or creen regetables ritoy

 but lew species une cultivated; smoner the bitter are thic waternelon and the rulantriti. The cheosient ofe Burtinn, when it is tienh,
 Some fow persons make butter, by sbabins the mils in a common black bottle, but this must oi' course bre experinutital. noni rot generst. In the towns even off Wic Sertam, ratecid Inish butcer is the only kind which is to be obtained. Wherever the labals othatit of it, these
 of the vegetable portion ol their food, is brought cither "ixm more fertile districts wear to the eonst, on fions the retalements still further bedi, --- the vallies and skits; ol the Corivis, Sorra to Teixeirib, and other inland monmtaits.

The trade of the Sertann tonsists in receiving small quentitics of Etropean marufactared roods*; the cotton cloth of the conntry, of which they make some among thernsedves a simall pomion of Einra-

 Jrown wiore of the country, which is maste lor the inose part by the Inclians who live in che risuricts that contain the proper kind of elay; ruth in small caslis; butwer, tolmoco, anufi, shagar ov treacle macle up itn cakes. spuri, bils lor hridles, and ocher gear for their Lorses, exceplingt the suddlus, of which the greater pari are made in their own districto; gold ard silver oumaments also frnd a narket to a certsin amount. The pedlars drawel about from vidlage tur village, and from one estare to ancother, burceringer their commondities for cattle of all Kinds, cheese, and hides of fwomed cartle. A colt of from two to three years, aells for abont one suinen; a horie broken in for the pack-saddle, for two or thre guineas; a lapta broken in fior mounting, from five to fix guineis. A bidluck of two yasrs, tem shillinga; a lidl grown ox, onc gruiver and a liolf; 4 cow varies unely, accord$\mathrm{i}_{1 \mathrm{~g}}$ to the quantity of milk, from one guisen to five guineas. A shicep, fiwm two to tiree shillings; a gout for slanglater is worth even less, but a good mileh goat is valued at one granea, und somelinzes bighor. Clindren are fiequemily suckled by goacts which increases the value of thexe muinala. The goat that lats lecen sw cruployed alvays oblains the name of comatove the temn which is nade use of betwece the mother and godmother of a child; and so general is this, that shc-gonts ave frequently enlled comveires, withont baving had the honour of sucklinfr at young master or mistross. Doges ate somotimes valned at from one to two ghinens, and evon bighers, if wey moto goud sjorting, or grom house and baggago-dors. A low-1 is as dear as as sleesp or gont; and in one instance, as has been relsted, I paid four times the money for one of these birds that $\boldsymbol{l}$ had given for a kid. The hawkers seldom obtnin money in exchange for their wares; they take whatever is affered, and hire people to assist in conveying the cattle or produce to a maxket, where they are exchinged for goods, and then lhe owner aysin returns. A twelvemontly is sometimes passed in turning over the propery once; but the profits are usually enormons; two on thyee humdred per cent.

Duriag my stay at Natal, the govemot shewed tae a species of $\mathrm{x} \underline{2}$
wax whicin is prodsced from the leaves of the caruì ba，a tree I hare frequently mentioned，A quantity of chis wax wish senc by hitn to Fios de Janeiro；it js mentioned in one or＇Dr Ar Aruda＇s pub：！cations， ants a sample of it lound its was to Eugessad，and has been eaken nocice of by the Royal Society ${ }^{*}$ ．The governor，in one of his joztnjes throagh bis protince，passed che nighr，as ofeen lappenec，in a peasont＇s cortage．A wax candle was lighted and piaced before hito， which was rudciy made，but afforced a good light；he was onnewhat surprised at this，because oil js stererally usel；on makirog enguary， be found ont that the way dropped from the leares whicls envered the cottuge，during the heat of the dey；－I suppose the cottanes had been rewly built，or that a fresh coveringt of leaves bad been put on to it He afterwarde made the experiment binsedf，tried some of the caudles：and became confident of the importance of the regetable was．The governor also gave me a plece of tron ore，which was the produce of the captaincy of Rio Granae．Ho told me that ho enter－ tained litule doubt of the exisience of considerable gutuntieics of this ruesal ins this part of the country，and that the Government would be well recompensed for their trouble，if proper persons were rppointed for the purpose of making discoresies on this subject．I saw sume cloth which he had ordered to be woven from the thread of the eraratá $\dagger$－－Its texture was not unlike that or the coarse lincu which is used for sheeting；iz is very strong，I hase some of the theread in my possession．

As soon as I had arrapged thast $I$ should leave Nital in the morn－ ing of the sth February，the governor told me that he intencied set－ ting off on husiness relaticy to bis province at the same time．We took leare of each other at night，and in the morning when 1 rose，I found myself in possession of the house，as he had set out at four o＇clock．We did mol get awzy until about seven，owing to the

[^37]adinlar: of horsce' loads, and other matters which it was neeessary to arrange. Ifelt tuite at lrome at Natid, though I was yet distant from Kecife soventy leughes; but tie country is well watered, well pooded, and comparatively well peopled.

I pusserl again thoough St. Ione, the Inclian village, but did not turn offi from the roud towards Papari. I slepr af a hamlet, and in the motning proceeded to Ctinkiti Abotat ten oiclock we were wnder the necessity of turning loose, and leusing behind upon one of the plaias, a borse whiel 1 hard parchased ex Chafaris; he was completely fisgyed, ind could not procesi firriber. The colongl of Cunhà was not at houic, but lis stemard aislual me to make use of his master's house; however, I merely nuentioned lawing lefe a harse at some distance upn the lands of the plantation, and the givide drew for his government the mark which it had upon the haunch. I have often observed the quicinciss of these people is recognining a mark which they lave once seen, und the accuracy with which they will druw it atter fuving only taken seemingly a casual glance, and perbaps after a period of some weets has elapsed sinte they had hiad even this*. We then rocle on half a league to the hanclec The commandant of this place introduced himself to me, and was extremely civil; be put my horse into his stable and wished me to stay until the following morning, but I preferred advenciag, and slept the same night at anorker hamlet two leagues beyond. This day we passed several rivulets which were all much swoln, but none of them were sufficiently full to prevent the continuance of our journey. There had slreaty leen some rain, and fhe foce of the country bore a more pleasing appearance. Two lectewcarriers passed through the place in the eveniug, and I wrate by them to a friend at Pernambuco, that the cottage at the Crus das Almas might be ready for me on tay atrival.

[^38]The next dat tre passed snme sugar plamations and ore some hills；the country was moxt beutiful，hor everg tbing froked geecr and leedth．．I crossed a consideratule rivuler att the fout of athe and，ascending on the opucoite side：put lip at a sinele sotage， which was inholaited by white pecple；an olk man，a wikower，with a finc Aamily of handsome anos sud cianghters．Their coutate had not room for us ali，and diefrelore me intended to sleejs En tic open sir alcogether，litut the oid man insisted upon my goingt so sleep in the honse，thri I was not sorry z̈or this，being rather afiaid ot a return of the ague．Fearly ar surmet，or at the ciose of the day， which in chat country a：：e almost about the same lime，the tame shecp wats missing；great search was maxie for it，but to ro pur－ pose．The ald man ordered two of his sons to ser our，aud not to retum until everve enquime had ipeen nunce in the meighbounford．I did all in my power to prevert griving this drowjò b，but he persisued， ssying．＂Nīo，you ame uncier miy roof and this unfortunace circum－ stence mey lead rou to have an unferourable opinion of me－＂Yong after dart the soung men veturned ribl she sheep aud a malactn man in custody．I wished the nan wo je relensed．but they said that this could not be．for he wis at monay slave，who had com－ mitted mant depredations，and for whose appeshension e consider－ able rematd mas oftered by his master．They han followed the foot－ steps of the sheep upon a sandy pach as long as the stav－jight lastef， and then had habers a direction，which they claought mighte lead no some mocuntuos，or bucs of the wood，made by xureway slaves．Atter they had proceeded a little way；the bleatiry of the sheep was beard， upon which ther prepared themselves and camie suddenly upon this fellow and a woman who were in a hut；the womar escaped，which they regretted，us she was likewise mosr probably a mannvay slave． The man was taken into the houre，and was ticd fast upon a long bench with his face downwards，and the cord was passed ronnd his arrns and legs several times；this was done in the foom which $I$ was to inhatit for the night．The whole of the fimmily retired to rest， and left us together；I had my buife with me，but naturally sogn

 posice wid of' the raon. 'I'he roung men of the hoube wore nodly vesech, but 1 toll theme it was flicir envo fitule. fir some of them shoukd Jonve kepst watch, the they coukd tort supposic that I sloould remain awaker who lsatel come in fatigned tiront ravebliag. We were now
 venjent. escape, but this wix not lio chso.
 and it litule disiance luyond ic, I keft the rond, wooumpomical by the fitide, and went to the prineipxil houso of a sugtir plantation, where we asked for a rifghe's lodging. I was told that the master was mot at homes, aul great donbts scomed to be entertained of laking us in. Whilst wo were talking at the door, a young man of datk colour carne uß, motanted a horse which was standing there sithout a saddle, and roxle offo neenuingly awoiding to obsurve that thare wore any strangrers present. One of the sulach women said, "Why did not you speatr to bim, dor he is one of our young musters." I now encyuited and altscovered that the owner of the place and his fimily were matJattox. Ihia was the only imstanes of incivility I fotet widh, and the only oceasion on which a nighe's lodging was denied to me iluring the whele conrse of my saty in Brazil. We lordged this night urder a axec, diutunt about one hundred yards fiom the engertho, noat to a neat and comfortable looking cotinge, of which the owner wite an elderly voman; she pus civil to us, mad experessed lier sorrow at the treatment which wo had raceived. There linul bern very little rain here, for the grass in the field of the plantation had still a parched look, and the cartle warce in buti condition.

Towarda the evening of the following day we reacied a hamtet, and at one of the cottages I oblained permission to pess the night. Thare was a pent-foouse athmding out from the front; these are uabl even for dwollings af wealthy persons. Under it I slung my harnmock, but was satpriaed to find, that though the house. was inbabited ${ }^{2}$ still
the door was shent, and that the person within spoke to nes, bet did not oper it. This l thought strange, and began io surpose that he noighr. be aff:cted with sonde contagions disordex ar:d hed been forssinen by his friends, or zather, thut his fimity had been adtised to remove to some neiforbouring cottage. Bat the foride explained, saving thet the man had been bitten by a sneke, and that che bite of this species only became faral if the man who bad received it saw any female asimal, and particularty a wornan, for thirty duys after the misfortume. As the lower orders imagine that all snabes aro poisondus, it is not and prixing that many remedies or charms should be quoted ate eftelecious. It is well known that many of those reptiler are innoxious, bat us this is not beliered by the pcople in geveral, it is naturalls to he supposert that any cause rather than the true one is ascribed on a recovery from a bite.

On the morrow we left these good people in expectution of their friend's restoration to health at the allocted period, and proceeded to dine on the banks of the river Paxaiboh at a spoc which was not far distant from the plantation ol Espinite Santo, where we bed slept on our way northwards. The river was still ass dry as it bad been during the drought, that is, the pools or hollows in the bed of it had water in them, but they did nol contain a sufficient quantily to overflow, unite, and form a stream. We arrived upon the banks about ten coclock, and hoard from several persons of as report which had been spread, that the river was filling fast. Aboot twelve o'clock the water made its appearance, and before we left it the river was three feet deep. We afterwards heard that the stream was not fordable at five o'clock of the same afternoon, and that it continned to yon with great rapidity for some days. I went round to Espirito Santo and spoke to the coppitam-mor, but did not disinount, as I was more and more abxions to end my journeg. We slept ar a single cottage about two leagues beyond, and on the following morning again set forth. About noon, for I hack pushed on without resting until this boir, we were descending a long and steep hill, when a
violengt sinower of rain cante on, which sonn cathed a torreat to rum
 dizy of wi.jeh thas lill wits yomposenl was remered tacessivety slip-
 csitions ; and on dicse utcrsions it is neexllosis to attenpt on urge then formatrls fiater than they themxelves are willing to go; they are
 make an olif vordseer ajur tis winal manner of proceerling it the foot of the hill stood an setstia or lithur shop, at which travellers were in the disubit of putting up. Alost ot'clic hampets contain one oilibese phaces. and we lati met wial them mudh more frequenty since we hand entcred upon the greit cattle rourl. Wet as we were, through and through: is would have been impossingle to go on fixther this day, theretore wo were thankful in having a house su near; incleed, the rain continuerl during the greatest pialt of the afterncon. S'e had descended into a rarrow and beautiful vailuy, much of which mas corered wiah flowishing planiations of shgate canc, looking very green and luxtutiane This was not the firse night that I had seen the beuntifill luminous inscet, ceser wacifuctrs, which is called by the Pormugueze carofnequ. It ts to be net with chiefty in well wooked landxy and cmits at intervals a strongr but short lived liggat.

Alter lesving this place the next morning we discovered that we had lost strune trifles belonging to our buiggage I sent the guide and another man back to seek for them; but they returbed unsuccessful. Wie bad, it is true, seldom taken up our lodgings ir public houses, but perlmaps if we had done so ofteace, I should heve had more reason to complain; bowever as it is, this was the only occasion upon which I lost any purt of ruy bagextere, with a suspicion of thetic attached to its disappenting.

We reated at mideday near Dous Rins, and in the aftermonn passed through that place, arriving at Goiana about sumact. It pill be remombured that I purchasel some of $m y$ borses at Goiana; now on my return, tro of the same aninals were still with me, and this alone
proves that they were of the best jathel. Whaen we were diatant from Giviane aloout une leagice o:ic of thern made rowarise a hitrow path


 from bis ioncl, and af ilexirins onte of tite men to leaci lime, otlecewise he would thave tumed back. He hat fions this time che apparance of ociug quite tatigued. I can only accounc to: the circumstenco by supposing that the path led to his former master's residemen, anditat the animal hed proceeded thus far in expeciation of encli:g his journey lere.

I was received by my friends ar Goiena in their usual injencils manner; but I found that the town wes in e dreadful stare fiom the searciry of provisions. Ohe person wes said to have died of lunger, and I was wold $\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{F}}$ an inhabicant tial several respercable women had becti at his honse to beg tor farinita, offering to yawn their goid oruaniments ror it.

On the moming on the 1.5 tin Febrasrs, I left Goians, and assisted my people in crossing the river. As soon as they vere all shoton the Recite side of it, I pushed on accompanited by Jitio and Eeliciano, all tiree $\mu t$ tis being mounted upon our best horses. We rested during the hest of the dizy at Jiguraçu My horse recogenized the place, for as the entered the town, lae yonczened his pace, and wilhout being guiderl, went up to the door of che im, trom whenee he refused to stir again until $T$ disinounced. $\}$ we arrived a little aíte sunsel at the Cruz das Alnas. John was prepared ior me, bit cied not expect me for one or two deys.

The following marning I rode to Recife. and was tceeiced by my fiends as one who had been somewhat despaiced of; and even my particuler friend to whom I had nritten, did not expect me so soon. When I returned home in the evening, the rest of the party had ancived; and Feliciano and his. two companions sed off two days
aficrwards on theit return to Scaris". Julic lijewise Jefir me, wilt with I was mach displeased. -




 one of tw'd what otar ci:c, ma:cery *:








 have litiada compang. Itw leviesyigerl to Athradrat.

## CLHAEVER (X.





E

 bueo and froceed to Marimham. Ab at cargo cotatl nor be wistuiancl

 first opportunity, I prepsured for the voyage, and miled in ule couter of forty-cight hours.

We weighed anchor on the esth Weloruary, and hat a proxjecrons
 time, anci ocrasionslly, ats the brig was monall, aukl the manter wistexd it possible to become uequtainted with the points of letpd we wete very near to it. The Mortuguean ships selchm some tap this wosit. without a pilot, nor jsit prodent to do othertwise; lmid wo condid tout. obtain one wilhont delay, to which the utisher otgjected. Wte hard seaverily ever before been ont of the J3ritish asens; but their selhow is good. and now he found his way to ALur:urlatim with as much desterily as an expericmead pilut This coast: is geturestily ketrent to be dangrerous; and the hand lias for the most fatie a dreary anal diaimal kook, parlicularly after passing lio (ixancle. We entererl that b:y of


cette 10 an anchor rjpposite and sory neatr to the sand hanke al tire



 the: fort, atad when we approaclied id, an enormous spenking trutupet wise produced, and theosht it we received orders not 10 proceed 1.0
 tixe tuaster was particnatarly desimoty of haviog a pilat, as he was
 conctain niatry sumd banks. Wh were answered that the prilot would cutue in due ifme; and finditgg remonstrarnee of no ivail, relarnod to
 and a conscom-bouse nfiect. It. Whis with sante difficulty clast I could

 sinicl that he thad no idera of fiks shifj being talion fiom him by a feflow



 wals composerl of soveral well-dresied men, wome of whom wore


 I fearcely ever saw so mach astonishment pictured in the countenames
 fomed to enter ont own portis, where so much basiofess ix chome its so "fuel a manner' a and he now sull to me in half joled. hatif earnest, " Whelk it is not ouly one: but thay ate coming in shoals t.o take the ship from me." Afler all these personnges, and all the tronble they haw giver nis, $Y$ was still obliged to panis the nitylt on loarcl, lowense tise greardetmen, the oficer expecially appointed to prevent watirgling. Itad not made lajs visil. Fortmately, I tound means of havirge

Lite lettere conveyed on shrore, othemwine the vessel would have arrived fobr and fwtuly husts bufore the merehand co whoth she was


 dry enrnes.



 wo the distathee of tuout one mile tud a hasi in a N. W. divection. The
 is accurliy the cate ; bunt the eity is built in an strixy



 ploce is ruderal lens heallily than if ic was more esponch. The poptalition nuay be: computod fut about 12,000 peraont or more, including nesproes, of which the propurtion is great, butiog xumeh more considutable than at l'e'vambece. 'Tha ateeca ate mostly paved, but
 arisl of olue stary in beisth; the lower part of them is anperopriased to
 poyed, as ut Parmembuco. 'the jomity lives upron the moper taory, and the wiodows of this reach down to the hicor, and are arnameated wisk
 I'mancisend, Carmelite, mad other convents. 'The placey of workhip are gatidily docorated in tive inside; but no play of areloitecture is airage at in the formations of the building themselven, with the execyotion of the cmivelts, wifich prieserse the regular fertures rppor-
 ground, not far frum the water sidhe, with the frome towatids whe bown. It is a long wiform atone butding of one story in beight; the prins-
cipal entrance is wibe but without a poxtivo. The woblern ent joins the town-hall and prison, which apppar to be part of the sutue edtfice; and the oblowg piece of ground in its teone, covered with grass, gives to it on the whole a handsonve ated striking mpparance. One end ot thia is copen to the harthour and in a fert in clic hollow, close to Whe water; the other extremity is aenrly closed by the cathedral. One eide is ulmost talen ug with the palace and other public huildings, and the opposite space is occupied by dwelling-houses and stretels leading down intor ouber parts of the city. The ground upon which the whole place stands, is camposed of a sote red stone; so that the amaller surects leuding from the town into the copuntry, wome of which are not paved, bie fall of gothing though which, the water rans in the rainy season. The'segtreets are formed of houser cunsisting only of the gromnd foor, and havily thatched roofs; the windows are without glasa, und this dwellings bave a noust mem and shabhy appearance. The sity contains a custom-lonuse aurd treawiy; the former is smatl, but was quite lurge ehaugh for the busineas of the place, untill lately.

The Jarbour is formed by a cteck in the islnad, and is to be catured from she bryy of St . Marcos. The eluntuel is of sufficienc depth tor cownoon si\%ed merchant ships; but is very hatrow, and not to be encered rithour a pilot. Opposice to the town the water is stallow at the ebb. It is enorthy of remark, that the tide riser gradually more and more along the coase on' Brazil, ftom sonth to north. Thus at Rio de Jemeiro the yise is said to be rtifitig; as Permanbuto it is from five to six fecli at Itamaraca cight feet; tend at Minranham, is is eigiteen feet. Tise forts on Mararihatrate all of them said zo bo in hod order, I heard one person olserve, t 2 lf in carnesty that he did not xuppose each iort contained more than four guns whioln were io a fit state to be fired. 1 did not sec that ot 紤 Marcos, which is situnted at the entrance of the bay; but it is reqorted to be in the same state us ibe otbers. Those Ifaw are small, sul built of stones. The soldiers were well drested and well fed, and they locived respectable. The bantacks are new and large comparatively









 comsequmbtly this bay iy wo the westwarth al it. To the eandward of the islud is the bay of St. Joze. From aone similatity lectreen the point oi' Itacolomi, by which versels are in part fratider when about to enter
 of Si. Auna, which is tit the entravee of the bay of Sc. Joze, itisiances hive oceurred of vossels mistakingy ille latler for the former, and ent tering the bay of Sc..Toze. This errot canses great drager and itconvanience, beonase owing to the provalence of easterly winds, it is nowe to imposaible for a veasel to beat her way out of it. itc is therefore nuecessary that she should go through the nartow cjamnel betwoen



[^39]


 1. Jes witen of a rivera aleang the lamber of which are situatad several

 share off raltivation; itx bainks ate extremely fixtile, emex apon them have bxen establisheat the principal platations of cotion and rive. whick are die two chicl unsl almost only athelase of commerce fiomu abe city of St. Luiz. 'Tles istand is in itsel! very litale cultivated. There is aso consitherable plantation mon it. A few of lat risu aner-
 one learite, laut the rempinder of tha lands are lele antouched, owing, us is swisl. to the untituers of the sod tor hae purposes ot agricultare*.



























 chople] o: sil. la\%





 Cunfly





 bnugh: :










; Iserc is likewise groat*; but the sugar which is required for the consumption ot لhe frovince is bronghz trom the ports to the south-
 molasses only have heen maker, f hesed many persons say, that thi: lands ate roti addpeesk to the growth of che sugar cancel. The
 30 ions burtien. 'Thext come down the rivern with the stavist foom (lae $p^{3}$ )matianios; fikeir relurd is ant however so casy. as chey are
 thé dithenty is not very sitest.

Consideruble guandities uld muntiactured geods lave been sene out tirom Grox: Britain since the ofeniny of the trates us kuts leend done to che other principul pork upon the coust; bue a ready sale hits not. heen fonnd for them heve to any groat thount. The province of Ma:anhami will nol beat comparison with ilate of Perbombuew. It
 plamtations upon the miais land are atill in danger fiom their attachas. The pronomtion ot fiec permons is much smaller; the slaves very much preponderate, but this clnsi csun of necossity use ben litele of whac is in eny deggrec expensive, of what fin such it cimode is mere luxury. 'lhere exists at St. Luiz a great inequality of rauks; the chint. riches of the place are in the hands of a few muth who possess lanclen property to a great exteni, nutmerons gang of zizpes, and are abo merchents. T"fu weialtti ol' these per:ous and 1.he eharacters of sorte of the inglivithols wha elpioy it, have raised them to great























 are of' a dark copper colomer, slather atam lablians tiat have been
 fise, were brenght ime the tom'n equice baked, were jut inco elose confinernent. and I was intornaed that theve they clied. I couid not find
 out 4]at any plath of conciliation land lesen ertered inta: and ou mentioning smatheching of this kind, I was in move shatn one instance told that it wonld be of mo ase, that rimotre was the orily mechool. I dos mes
 prebend that, but faint lopos cars be entervaiod of any acal beiag shown for their civilization. Thare are now mo enchasiastic noisxionarios; the Insutst nus longer exist it that councrs, and the oller orders of friats have become lazy and worse rhan tuckess. However the Indians caniont be enslaved; therefore, ar least, shey "re sot hemed down like wild cattle, n.3 tomerly was the praceice. The name which is given gencrally borla hete and ar Pemmabuce of all wild Indians is Topuga; and that ol Citibedo is applied to thoise who have been domesticated.

Having thus given aty ontine of the plate at which I hat awrived. I may now leane my quarters on buatd the brig athl be allowet to laril. which I incamurtished on die moroing subsexijuent ia that of our :nxance into the liarbonis. I was reaceiverl upon the quay by tug frited. :s yourger Portelgueze vi.h whom I lad then intinate in Finglatcl anti ar Pernamibuco. IJe tohl we it was necessary to go to the palace, for the porpose of presenting my passporl, an the tegulinbions of the port had for some lime been nost strictly followed, and ser ceal inklews bad been lately added. I thern, tor the first time, recollectecl that I had no passpont, haviug forgorten to obtaid one. owing to the haste wich which 1 fejl f̈'ernarobuco. This produced a dernur, ans my frient was afraid that I xhould be ingritsonced, the governo- not beitur friendly to Englixhmen; however I determined to call myad the supercargo of the brig. W'c pruceeded to the palace, rike erstrance to whicle was guarded by two sontinels, tath tre passed several others in opoing up the seaira into the antichanber, where we were received by a gemblenanlike officer, who heard whiel $l$ had to sage asked no questions, and soon dismised n.5. I luought I had soen the groent nath firvself, but was undeccived, and heard that he veldoms honoured agy one with in audience. Tlic offeer to whom we had spoken was the licuteniantweolonel of tbe regitacnt of repollar infantry. The guard at the palinee consinted of one company; the muskets were piled in frow of clat chief ertribuceand appoared to be in good order.

I soon discoverul that St. Lai\% was ruled wjth most despotic sway; 1.3e people were afirait of speakiog as no man bace how soen it might be his fifte to he arrested, from some lritingr expression which he mighe allow to oseape thixu. The governor was so tenacious of the hoHours fate to his siteation, that he requirofi every person who erossed the area in front of the pabace to remain uncovered until ise land eurirely passed the whole building. Not that the governor was birnself alunes in riew, but this sudoration was thonght necessary exen to the building witfin wheh be dwelc. The distinction, until then reserved, by tle Tionsish church for its bighest dignitaries, wias huwever nob chourdit by IIis Fxcellency toc exalted for hionsell; the bells of the cathedral nitug weery time he went out in bis carriages Per-




















 ewived aty ordex fore his relcease.
-The Colmel Sibuplicirs hati been sent tinu hy clue poveritor to







 fres ingrats to see lima, and 5 puseent sume plensunt evemirugs with
 be wats allowed two small doonas jt the prixon, atul wate enstimed in






 heli, and the fatuget of it ander sixht a goverimionar. 'Tixe mowstr



 the time ard attit before 1 visited tdal $\mu$ facte.




 lise is suect io ritle.
 hath. $x$ in siculted by the warer siter snci almost widhin hoil of the
 mpidity with which the firkemmen pactulech their cenoes; these are long and of juss width. xu木tiont in allow of two men sitting afreash I hsfa sech in one af thens as many us eistean meen

 necessary pincing che padile yo as 1.0 drmwer hise potpose of a riduter;
 whirh the vessel is th tilve, Thesie fellows atc mastly dirlk-

 shore, they paritally elunth theangrloch The print oill give some


[^40]the matro thaves is also not suficenty contenied; neitter maies nor







 ing of the chains is contianally striking che car. senabding every man of the seate of the goverument ander velivix ho resides Suct is the

 from the mat of' the supveme eevernment ax Tio de Tancito, is period of tour months or more intersering.

 bourhood of the city, with a:t dinglizlt gentleman who was residing
 of Sr. Thiz, and our ususl practice wsi so ride sevent fines sound che open piece of ground upau wlieh che bevrecks atint. Maran-
 the mumber of country houses is small; the parlas are tew; and no care is taken of thens. Notwithstindiater this, severaj persons have carriacers, which ane of a foum similat io those used in Lisbon. and rot. unlike the eabriolers drawn by a pair of hoeses, which are to be seen in France and Flunders, Flic fuotes that neay be prowehased at St, luiz are small, and few of them are well formed. Grass is scavee, and the inducements to take cxercisc on horseluack are so fow, that the aumber ot theice anmals trpon rike islund is not considerable; this too maz be one ause why fine borscs are not wo be mel with there; for if a ready sole was found for the ixeasts of this description. some would, duubtless, be earrical from Piaubi io Maranham, whicld might be done with almois ti little dilliculty os is expe-
rienced in conteying minny of them fiom the incerior of PernamLuto so Recífe.

An tinctish gentlemart with whom I was acquainted, arrived at Haranham, a short Lims atier the opening al tue lame wo British shenping ; he wiat riding in 1.lee sicinity oi the city one afiesnoon. when le was accosted by an olet womash, whas sieid
 know: if it was trate, as she wat roing to St. Lui\% and much ile-
 upon the subject, the cold hev that the tirhor she was speaking to, was
 found in persuading her; bul. when she was somident that it wiss 60 , she crisd our. "sli fam bomito." O, how bandsotne- slae expecred to have beat ahowis somae borrid!y ugly beast, which it was datirgerthax io appronch, and was t:onsequerilly argrueably xurprised to find that she was mistalices, and to see flesh and biood in hmmen torm, handsumely put toriether.

I nearIy Iost a number of books which I had brouglu with we; the box coutaining thern was carried to the cuscom-flowse; xher ware taken out, gud I was desised trs translate eath tith-pages, which I did. Though the works were chiefly hiscorical, still I libund thax the officer who luoked over them, was not iuclinesd to let me lhave thers, and a hint was given to me by one of my acquaintaucte, that chey might be comsidered as irrccoverablo; howener f made innratedietitiy a petition to the govcrvor, to be allowed to sead thern on hoard agnin; thit was granted, und thus I regoined possersion. l C 1 l hat delazerl, I am atnost cerrain bhat I should not have seen them agnin. Such are the difficulties which are experienteri with bookt in the parta of Brayil which 1 viaited, thax the only resousce which remains is


[^41]



 myself, accomparien by twe servants, agreed to bire is vesmel and go ever, for the purpore of maling itim arisit, athe or swing the place.
 light wind. The beanties of the: bas are ondy to be seen in crossing it; zhe mumber of ixlands divarsily the view oncry five ninutesis fion the discovery of smme lididen point, o: I'rom a chatuen in the fis:m of the land, owing to Ehe progress of' etee bout 'The emtratace into the harbour of denntara, the town itself, and she xize of the rensel in whick we were, remindeni ane moth of the undels of thuse realities. The place. Whe port, and our boat weret all simatl, ath of proportionate




 for us a small nowrige. seit to the beecit; we intended to be independent, and haveour vectuls couked by ous own servants; but soon after we were settled in ous new habitation, cle termbleman introduced himselt to $w$-hipm we were turnished with a lecter. Ife said that Je had head of our atrival, ard le insisted upon out removal to his house.

The town is built npon a semicrircular hill, and at firsi sitht from the port is very pretty; but it inlls short of its promise on a nearer

[^42]examination. The houses are many of them of one story in fueisht. and are built of stone; l,ut the major patt have ouly the groutud floor. It extends biack to stsme distance in a strangling manner, with garders, nod lirge spaces between each honse; and many of the hiabiations in that situation are shatehed, and some of them are our of repide. As the lide whicla rises from the water side is not high, and the find beyond ather declines in a contrary direction, the neatera part of tile town is not seen at the firte view, Alcatitara is howeret at 1.1 riving platee, and ins inmortance increases rapidity as the fatads in the neighbourhood ate in request tior cotrunt planeations. A hamarome stone quay was buidding upon the inside of a reek of latid, romd which the harbuur extencls for forall ciaft. The place contaiss a town-hall and prison, and several churches.

The cvening we passed witi our new friend zund his partmer, both of whotn wiere pleasant mett. The latter took usito 4 neighboaring chureh. to hess a famons proacher, and to see all the tushion and bataty of che ghace. It was much crowdenf, and theretere wo saw bictle or nothing of the congregation ; but ahe preacher, a large handsome Franciscau frizer, vith a fitae wand and clear voice, delivered ia very flarid discourse, with much eneriny and animarion. I'tis man and one other were the only persons of rhose I heartl preach in Brazil, who devianed from the conntronz praises usually given to the Virgin and to afee Saints It was a rood prictical sermon, inculeating moral duties; but by way of conformity to eatablished chstort, he now and then mentioned the worthy in whose bonour the festival was givents. The nezt dny was agreeably passed in conversation; and in the evening two geitars were incroduced, and some of the young mew of the place came in, and adted to the amusement of the party; they sang and played, and there was murch quot. There was no ceramony; but

[^43] sstion unieclurning.



 dind gone on in thix reaxuser fors same time, a native of l'ortuggal proseuted hituself to the proprielor of the tatite, and offered io these

 anl agreement by which te slsould not bucome reinomsible for ary slares who might be killed in reducing the remainder to obedience. To sll clis no objection was made; and chat mon set off, accompsinied by two orhter persons, bis friends and a guide, all tof thern boixug woli provided with fire ammsand ammuntiont. They arrived thon the seense of uction one evenirg, and finding the tion of the pripecipai
 the aegroess, on chiscoveribg the ifteltions of the persoun who were ia poseression of the hotne, assembleal ist che area in frone of it but at
 aracel, not pertittiag his compmisors to oppear, and wished to one of clue ritegeatise by name, is if nothing war atoixs. The minn
 prowell any nexare than thas spot to witheh hut had newneced. The xfewatid made no reply, hat quickly thok an loaded rousket, which
 gromen, and withont delay, called iof another of the shaves also by Aithe. No smawer being given, his corramions came fowwards, מutad
 shmoriary sommer of procesedíng, y.lgat in two or tlivee days all was
 anly of the wlaves abaconiding.

On our terurn form Alcantats we had a disagresuble passqge, as the




 teutalater，and we nitimatrly arrived is xatety．Nat fur from the mouti of the juev of Aicontaris sands an islared of three miles in leanett

 dedictued 1.0 Our Iaxhy of Thetiverance whiel，is visited by the its－ thataitants of the seikhbourifur shores，once：every your tor tite nurpose
 forture frem 入iarambatis somier than 1 hat gurgosed at first，prevenc． ed tife filifilment of my intesmion of lundinis and suetrdisg of dav









 bronic a thest of dizwCls and several eltaits．The niatress of the

 sat upon chajrs．Tlie rompany，which eshsiated of tric or theow m甲rs besides outselves，fiormed a semicircle tovarda live hameroch；－ There was ntoris efremony，and the conversation was cuntied on chicfey by ilve men，and an oceasional remarle wax made by one ob onher oir thec ofid ladies，in answer wax given by the eftughtecri to a guestion nsken，bot ne aroore，and sunic of the wubjects tonched uyou twould not inve been telerated in mived socicty in Enelent． A part of the domality mighe ferlapss buse warn of oll forther ara
quaitutane. The edration howser of wembets is mot attencled io,

 por, §till the ladies of St. Leniz comment be said to te geporally thus


 aratment in which her fetlece was at play with xevem? of his reapajn.
 who dial. She wene on filayipg until she lint lose thene hunctasd

 pariy, where wost probubly play was likewise the encertatument of
 chatere, and is conly risoited to on snme crand occasion. 'The Inve

 xneank of uxpationg sham. Livisug in cheaf, 2 fine hrouge, d couriag and a bumber of servalics inny be lad for a sinall anm. The opuso rug of Lie trade has botvever given 40 these prophat a unv turn of espendituro, in the facility at obtaining attieless osi ciress ard furnituxp

Twa Enytish merclinnis onily wike catablisherd at St. Luiz; the commeveiat trunsactions of British holines of 1 mide were entumsedt chiedy to Porthguexe merchatits of the place*. Maly of these were
 ketin some of ibem vere wibout needeclothik and a few without stockings; but othery fixea accurding to the manimer of personts in Euxape. lt was with much diffienity that I eould persuratie the gencrality of those with whotal I entaversed thact I trike so jusiofss to transuct; they could not comprehend the motive by which a motic could bo aciuated

[^44]
 be convitued, ane thought tiat fu so shying i hed some sizsister. vicw:

1 find mot nasy oppormpities of gaining intormation respecting 13.e interior but gtill I axifl wention orlast Theazih The lanky of the
 cullisated comprecl to what iliey wete il few yegrs sego: are yet vary wad, sad thore is space incalcalidele for new eoloniste, tine cap-
 cattie, and thase dranks of the eouratry ate noc subjuct to dxoughts. The tawn of A |deas Alitns", whick is situatesh in the Latter, and the
 jugt piacer. Cheat numbers of cattle ane antimatiy driven fernta these quarters of the Sectern to Jahial ask' Pertia;nbico. 'Lhe proprieturs of the estiales winich ase sikzetith in iistuicts so tat fermored from the apal. of goverimpent are al. himos ururely, awh a party of soldiens, which was sent op to arrate one of those meri, some tube before 1 arrived

 From has josater, ance in the coonse of yease had droconic a wealthy



 arce, anti rode up arti spoke to dith, sayigg that the wish ted to loane soue privade convaxiation with bim. Aller a litile tive they recired together, and when they were alene the traver of tho estate said, "I thanh you for aot meruliming the conaection between us, whilst my peeple were paescrt." It was his master, who had fillen into dis

[^45]

 wis ont oflac gucstion - Jue was in tive mon's powe wiou mithlt


 chat lee hed thas taide debt ot old standins to: which he had onty




 Dre of che shipx which were alwow to suil. T welerred the Brutis.
 sail firon st. Luiz on tize Sth of hapril, in compuny ot'onother British ship; bar we were soon our of wight of each ocher. owjetry to ole terssel holding a berter winct. On the $1 \%$ th we reathed variable wirds,
 the southwards, therctore we might consider oursebves trmarkably

 but we had a good slip and plency nê sea-rewin, fitave sizuck che stern and entered the cabin on the 8t| in the morning, setring every thing afloat; this mavered soon alter ne had risen. Ott lio grh we discovered two tessels in a gereat distonce u-inead and mether to windward, borlt of thern were laving to. but woon each appeared to scand on different tacks. One prosed:o be an English brig loeded with tinber; she was water-logged stad about to sink; and the latter whs an American ship, which hatch latil zo, and was in the act of essisting the people in leaving ber. If the brig had not been londed witl, cimber she must have gone down logg betore. As the American ship was bound to her own commry, we wook the crem on boand the Brutus, nine persons; they were in most woeful plight; somelane,
uthiek nearly naked, anel all of claem davif starred with cokd and lunger. The vessel fud sjarmigy aterki, which juceroased so ropichly, as wo

 p.ovisicolts.



## CHATCER X.




```
    A*D RE'C'IN SU REL:I:.
```

AT the commeaternent of the wituter iny titordingoin recommended a return 10 a mure temperate alimate than that ot Fnçland; and chereiore muderstaudi:g cher the Pozturatecze ship
 her. She was $\mathrm{I}_{\mathrm{y}}$ ing at Gravesend, and an the frh Oliober; 181 l . I enoburised again for Pernamisuco.

Contrary winds deiained the ship at Poranmouth for about ais weeks. On the gorb Noveralacr, the wind canng round to the anort. ward and castwart, and the signal gurs froth the ships of wate appointed is comvays, awalened us. A.ll wasbuste and contivsion :uCcura. where grate numbers of persins, belonginy wo the shiths: who were
 the vesacha were undur wejbh, and locrore the nigkt closed in, all of them had cleared the Needfis. The Serra Seruetn and oulne Poraciacke ships had taken instructionts irom a fogate. whinh way bound to alie Mediterrancen. intending to leep company with her as far as ther desrination and theis's obstiged ahem to tollow the same course; but in the mortinge we discoverald thett we werc with another titgate, which was bound so Lisbon. We spon belt jev, and were accompanied by other two Portugueze ships. On che rigyn of the gegdr we fell in with the Kangatoo slouy ot war, which was bound to the cosst of Africit, with a deen rexsels under convor. On the

24 al we parted fiom this cumvoy, and on the agth proceeded with mile onc korkagutze slip. Our pitsugge wits most prosperous; we




 mote tonquiry clanis wroult wherwise have been deemen receasary. Wic erowsit the linu on the SQA. In the creaint of tle goth we stowd for tho land, xappositug that we lad reathed the latitude of yur port., but clat we were moneti to the enstward of it ; towower, we ritade itic: land about two oblock ina the morning, which was somer ty several foours that the officers of the xhip imsgined we shoadd.


 was ripe:oveled that wi were smmewhat in the northward of Olinde.
 lower harboter ralled the Poço.

The Stara Pequetio is one no the deavy deep-wainted Brazit shifts, requiring a great nomber of hands to manage toer. The buviness of the sbip wis euricil on in a manter similar ith almost all points to Unat whitif is practiscl] ba board of British marchant reasels; threre wax however less deandiness obseyvel, and more noise was made. The stecond officer, whos is ealled ir the British merchant service the mate, boars in Porlugtreze ressels chist of pilot; and the remulalione of their maline confine him so the navigution of the ship, giting up in an interior olficer rite duty of attendine to the discharging of soowage of the botd wimen loading or anloading, and all ocher mintucife of the aflits sitions ar seat or its a harbour.

1 was received on shore by all those persans with whon r iad before had the pleasure of being actuainted, with the same friendliness which $f$ alvays experienced at Pernambuco. Severab English gentlemen offered ma at) ajsartment in their houses, until! I








 so short a perioul．Sureral honasks lined bean atre－ed；the heavig
 rindows zai iton baltonier，Some fev famitias liad avived haye


 the day，ftu：nmbemeit．These intprovemenss being once introducect and practised by a ien persons，were soon adoperd by some，who had beeta ainod to bo rine fisst，ard be shers who thund thist ther wert
 decss an bigh deve andinalidays arill urete now much suqutanded hy white ard colonteni mistins，acid olbe：cotion mantiscturan．THe men，libcwise．wher inad in ionmer times daíy aypeazed in iǹll dress euits of black，gold touchles，nod cocked hato，bad row：in miny instancos，exchanged chese for nankean pantsloons，bisli boozios and rovid hats．Exen sha high ald hory saddie was now bess in use， and that oí wore toolern forta wa foll the tishion．This aedin




 presents onc of these equi－niges．

The copirty residences wbich had been lately build，wete also n－merotis；lends in the siciury of Recife lad risen in price；the

trithe of briel:-ntakiag was becoraing la<zasive; trofk-peophe ₹twe in coquesi; zand besides many other spots <if lan:d, ate tracis hetween the


 church of Compo Samio, sieqated is that pire of thre Lovell whiteh io properly cailed Recilen was now Enished, and varions impouements


 glaring of the outide, innil new furnishing witinn modercizing Uranuselveg. their familitos, and their dweibings

This spiric of alteracion produceri, in sunc cane, rather hutierous som*atuences. There was $s$ lady of considerable dimensions, who hard sentered into b, tis love ot innovation, and carries in wa vast entont. Stect was ahmost equad in circiecfeecest and beight, but notwiflatand-
 to be despised: the wixherl to drees it Engolish fastion, and was luerst.]f docialedty of opinioa that sbe bud succeeded. Cpous her heal she worn a very small tropsey bat tied under the cbin). Stavx have saly facely beron intradaced, that this jongrovernent she fod not yel adopated; stild ber gogm wras to be in English fiehnion too, and therofore was cut and slasheth awar- so 2510 leave rodat uatrietcifully บi vipu several beantien which otberwíge would base remainal conequed This fown wiss of mustio. and wist worked down the middle sul pound che botam in several colours; her athoes vere ns smail ys

[^46]
 the superabumanele which mature laad lavishal: bertowergh, projected and boting down ver: eache siche ot the shach.
 of a reighabouring districh, its:a ficquentle meatime hom, in my





 ation, from whence we wert to proceed wich hitn and his suite furcher irtu the womstry.
 power. They have civil as well as military datics to pertorm, aut oxght tw be appointed firons лthong the phanters of inost wealdh and itedividanal weight in the several formox, boundaries or thestiecs; but the interest of family or of relatious alanth the Corret, haver occaxionded deviations from this rule; amd persons 2 ery unfit for these situations, have been sometimes nominated to lhest. The whole axpent of the? government in Braxil is military. All men between the oges of xixteen and sixty, must be encolled cither is sobdiers of the liue, as militia-men, or as belonging to the body of Oritemancax. Of the ragular soldiers, I have already spoken in another place. Ot the second elass, each towaship his a rerrimenc, of whicti the individuals, with the excegtion of the major and adjutant, and in some cases the colonel, do not receive asy pay. But ilucy are considered as embodied men, and as such are called out upon some few occisions, in the course of the year, to assemble in unifarm, and otherwise scooutred. The expence which must be incorrod in this respect, of necessity, precludes the possibility of many persons becoming members of this class, even if the Government was desitous of increasing the number of militia regiteneuls. The soldiers of these are
senbject to their cuptajn:, to the colonel, and to the governor of the prasince. The colonels are einther rich plimetris, or the major or
 command of one of chese; in this case, and it chite case only, he reccives pay. I am inclined to alaink that he cogigit to jrossoss some property in the district, and that any deviatien lion this rule is
 susi zhe adjutants are libewise octinsionally promoced froms the line; burt whetber they tre regularly mifitary wen or plantcrs, they receive pay: as their trouble in distribuning orders. arid in other arrumgements councutod with the regiment ia condsidertible
 portion of the white perions and of free mulute mer of ali shades. bave är their immediate chicfs the Cujutacnumonotis, who serve withoul fiay, zusd all the persune v:ho age connected with whe Ordonan fax, are obliged likewisa to affowd cheir serrices gracuitotial.-. Ench clistrict coutains one Capitern-mor, who is iuvarially a person
 pointed. He is ussisted by a maior, ceprains, and alforce, who are
 of the Condtam-inor ate to see that every individual under his command hats in his posstasion sonfe specits of arms; either at firelock, a sword, or a pike. I-Ie distributes the fovernor's orders durongh his distriet, and can whlige any of his mom to talen athese orders to the resurast ruphiais, who sems another peasant forrarals to the mext: cezpain, snd so forth, ald which isthome without any pas. A Creguifergsinor can alao imprison for cwenty-four hours, aud seod under arrest sor trial a person who is ececied ot hivirg committal any crible, to the
 Now the abuses of this office of Copitanmana nee very many, and the lower orders of tree persons are much oppresserl by these gruat reen, and by their subalterns, tlown to alse corporals 'I'be peasants are ofteu sent upon orrands which have no relation to publie lansinets; for leagaes and leagues these pour fellows are made to travel, for the




 pats of clae comary complain; it is : mosse heave sorievence.



 evil magisernte o: pven athaiterd to is bearing However. 1 am: happly to say, that I ant acctainted with some nem, whowe co:the: is wicielv diferent liom what 1 hawe ubove stated; but che

 it in a proper matme:

The frec neltlattos and fire wegwoes whose rames ure tupot the rofls, either of the militin regineents which are cornmanded by white officery, or box thase ot theic own class and colour, ate no: properly speationg, subjeer to chis Cuphiteme-mores. Thuse office:s ant the colonelis of misitise wre apoonted by the supreme geavermment, and the subaleror nfficers are nominated by che governor of ecell province-

The above expianation of the state o choouglt necessar: that the roaito misht uaderstand the grounds
 account will immedistéy be given.

On the S6sin January, 1812, the Cupitan-mor sent onc of bis servarts to shmon:on ins to his pitantatione aut to be our glide. Early on the morning following, my fiend, mavelt; our own two serintis, and the boy wloo liad been seat to us by the Conitem-mon, see forth on horseback in high spirits; my fiend atd I experang to see some. thing rew and strange. I had before, as has been alreaty rilaced, travelied into the less populous parts of che comuty; bric i hach hed verg little commonication wich the planters. On that occasion, 1 pro-
ecerled tom rapidly to obtain as much knowledge of their manmers and mbitortos as I wished.

We proceeded to Olimin, anci passed through its wretcbedly pavod streers; with much esre; and when we were descendiug the lill, upon which it stands on the land site, hicre was laid open co us a consickralile extent of manshy irrounl, which was partly sovered with muturlios, plantiort upon ratised beda or lithocks, which were made of a circular fom, that the wator night not reach the roons of the plants; the remainder of the lind was still undrained and unprodnctive. The diackacse of the green of the plants which grow upon marshy gronind immediately points out the lands that are in flois state. The conntry which was to be seen in the disunce was covered with wood. We crossect a rivalel, communicating with the marsky land on each side of the roud, find pussoll on over aome rising grounct, and by several scactereil cottages, mutil we rewhed, distant from Olinda one league, the low lands survounding the fill which forms the site of the sugar plancation of Fragozo. From hence the landa are dow and damp, atmost without any rising ground, to the augar plantation of Puulistas. The beautifiel spota upon this laack of country are numerous; cottages ure ofientimes to be met with, half concealed among tise trees and brushwood; they arce buile of and and are covered with the leaves of coco-trecs. They have usually a projecting pent-house with is small arest io front, which is clear of weeds; woder this pent-bouse is shong the hammook, with its dark-coloured owner, idly kwinging backwards und forwards, who raises bia head as Icherar's the horses' footstepsis the dogt ia babaing in the sitn, or lyiug nuder the slade, or rontuing ont to annoy the traveller; and the fishing benskets and rbe genrda hang as cbunte directs ripon the protruding stems of the coco-leavos, which cover the Iowly hut- Some times the sight of these rade dwellings is enlivened by due figure of a fermale, who runs off, and conceals herself, as the passenger upon the roul looks down the narrow paxts which leada to the cuitage. The road itaclf wias likewise narrow, for this was not the greit cattle track) and all view of the country was generally shut out, by the
wooch ste each sidus, agatist. whirh the kizs of the luomeman ara ofleat

 either side of lijx beast, or onte of the cants which anc: amployed tipon



 resiemblance ita consistence atrid ir taste to at melon that is wor fiper
 пoumd melon.
 covered with woods. which prevent an extensive view of ele sur-
 satione which wre produced by a fore gieen field, obeenjety abl at ouce 1.0 tite sight, and awept by at refeabing breese, cannot possitsly be telt.
 nomexous; that most of thens were low, ated sompewhat ont of zepoive 'Tliege are the breiling-honse ot tine owner, which is apacions, and liss

 buitbing without welly, its roof ireithe kaptorted whon briek pillam;
 ofbers ol minor importance. These edidicet are ali of thern scattered

 what at a tistarme from the dwelling-house of the owner, and through it rans the wader which tutux the mill. On the opposite sidne of the
 hilem, its plantain garden, arsid ite wide spreading mango thees behtincl it. Beyond the prineipal house, ate low and extensive cance ata

[^47]
meadrow latids, which are shixted on orse sidde by the builelings of ano-leer small piantations, zid boalererl at a great distantce by wouds,


This valuable and beautionk plantation way in the posenzaion of a news relalio: of our (fopitem-man: We were :achnainted with the son of ihe ovoter, who wide shaplain 100 the estate and had iacited un
 prared to receive us, and sftex jowing hatakiased, we proceneleci to jas a visit to clue old acathernank nt the frear House, as the dwellingo of the otrixeis of planistious arc ealked. The wat unvell, and conidd not bu seeng byt we ware reasived by has wite and two dsughters.
 subjects thich they supposed we mishlit be acquaintect with. This Escate wiok mot mach wrorked; the glaves led a most exsy lide, and the Great Housie was full of young children. Of these urebins esferal tame in and out of the romm, they were quite naked, and phayed with Stuch other, und with soms large dogs which were iying at fill lenglt, woon tibue bejor. There ebon cupidy were plainly great tivonurites, and smemed to empioy the greater part of the thoughis of the soosd ladies, the youngest of shom vise or tite wrong side of fifty; and eve:? the priest ladghed at their gambals. These exceblent momed abd the gead priest posess is consideratile number of shaves whin are
 cifate all of them, aral that they may be pregated for the ebiange. severnl of tha men heve been brought up :t motbanics of difitrent descriptions $f$ and the women have treen tanioht noudlework, enbruiderys, and all brenches of eulinary knowededge Thus, by the dettll of four individuals, who ate naw approncining to old sge, will be act free about sixty persons, men, womest, and chiliten. As thexe people have been made acquainted with the intencions of ibeir owners respecting them, it is not surprising that the bebraviour on many of them should be overbearing, To some, the theeds of momumissín bave been alrcady passod conditionaly, obliging them to serve as sidver urtil the death of the individual to whom they are
subject．Thessie papers cannot bo revoked，and yet נo ingratitude was feared；but among so eonsidenime untmber of persons，sone instancex
 their own immediale rulations are rich，und nect ait sill ill fieed of
 nected encenerally with ：le system of slaverys tinese thoir chidelten had no right 60 work for any one else．Oت̈ the slaves in question．on＇y a tow wre A fricuns，the major part being nulatos anil areole acgroes．

We returned to the collage of che＂ricst to ditucer＝and ta che athemom proceeded to the sugar plantation of Aghiur，belongime to the Cupitant－wher，which is distant fiom Paulatas five leagues，where we arrived about ten o＇clock ial mirgh，maxh tatigried．liromediately beyond Paulistag is the nartow but rapich streani of Patatibj，whith near to its mouth changes tinis mume to：that of Doce．In che misy season it overflows its basks，und becomezs untordable．The widek of it，when it is in the usaal state，near to lrantistas，is not above twenty yarda．In its bontre to tle sen，it runs thromgh much marshy grountio We passed by fonc sugnt－mills this atternoor；that whici bears the anme of Utringe of baino，is stinaterl in un ampajelesatre；being sur－ rounden by bight hilla，covered with large trees．These woorls tatee not been much disturbul，and therefore give retige to enornsons quantities of game，among whivh the porco do mota，on pir of the woodi，is common．I never saw his animal，tunt theretore cannor pretend to describe it；but I have ofiten maircl it spoken of，as heing extremely destriutive to mundioa．and that izs 也e＇sh is good．Chis animal is not large，and is not ualike the common louge．Mary cri－

[^48]minels and !mawav negroes are taribouredi in thero woods. Tha
 worki, ax tbu path which learls foom ic is not immediately sliz-


 wur guíde mole in fromt, and mant limes din! lix bead vome in concact wilil thenk.
 sbove the sromsd flous: the lower part. of whicio towns tue warehouse for the sograr and other articles which the estarc froduces, be
 entered in smati ;nti-rlommbrr, atid wewo received by our hose and one of his soms, who tunducted tis into a x[jaciums apartimest, bleyumd.
 and a few broken send unpainted chairs furnsed the whole furniture ot these rooms. Four or five bleck beys, who were oir a size too tar ad. vancert to wear the bow and anow bui who were rinite as lifile onmombered with dreas as if thoy scill might wield rhene damgerous weaporss in ahe character of oupidi, srood all astonislnment to view the strange beiviss that had just, atrived; ancl at all cljc thoc:s werce women's heudis peeping to sec whom we mighe be. 'lie supper eonsisced as is usmal of groal quantities of weat, placed upon the tablo withoth arrangentient.

At fire o'elock in the morning, the cupitazinomo iny fricad, myself, and threc serrancs procecterl to the distance of tliriee leagres wichout any additiont to our purty; bue we nere soon joined by the adjutant of the district and screal other officers, in uniforms of dark bilue with yellow iacings most monstrously broud-the gay cuft's reaching half way up to the elbows; they. wore round hats with shore tien.Exiss straight swords al most prodigious lergeth, and very loose nankeen puntsloons and boors; the former were theust within the latter, which caused the higher part of the panmatoons to ipporic to lee of preposiencus pidetr. Wre dismounted at a siggar plantation, being the blurd we hat









 Itive been praetised the most monstroun cruelties; the condatet of


 only inscatce of which I heard of systentatic, oontintect, watom
 (b)is one ix sufficient, even if nome oller exisurit, to xtamp the ilave 8уat. was inherited loy the purson in presilion, with sixty goarl silieves upon it; fifteen yeara hate dajsed since ahat time to the pariod ol which I speak, and there twere then ronaining only font or five individuals who were able to work. Some lave tleat angl have escaperl, othary hatye died, God knows how, and olhers dgraiu lave commidied suicide in sitght of cheir master*'s mestignce.

We arrivach at midday at Santin Cruz, and hat now reaverid the cotlon comutry: The track thourgh which we had passed was for the most part well waterect and well woodeal; the wiarsly lands being less frequently interapersed than upon the journey ol'tlee preacding
 this morning. The ground was oftor uneven, and we crossed one rather steep hitl. The lands upon which we had now arrived and thote to which we were advurcing are alrogether bigher, and the gruss upon them was now much burnt up, the " tirat waters" not luviog yet fallen. The soil in these parts retains kes moisture than that
of the country which we hacl left, and soon becoune soo hard to be woriced. The party was wow inuch increased, and in the aticernoon
 che ,umber al id is wenlt!y atud posscses many slaves. IIe receivect
 pair of stockings. flter the first greetings were over, be broughin oun
 helperl lixe guests, one solitary gloss, urhich was filled, and theo empLiel by eaceln frersom, being made aise of by the whole parts, Alter senper a guitar player bclonging to the house entertained us until a late hour, wbiest out hossi set upon at table sincking from a pipe of litly six feer in length. Several hammocks were slingt in two large apaztments, and each person eitfor talked or went to sleep, or wecutsionufty did ous and the onber, no form or ceremony being observed.

The peasants began to stascomble early on the folloming morning, as three companies of the Ordenanyan were to be reviewed. These were the tirst which were to undergo inspection, as be ampitmon-nor purposed visiting again the places throurg which we had passed on hix retums, and intended then to perform this duty- The men wore their usual dress of shirt and dravers, and perhaps a nankeen jecket and puotaloons were atuleci: and trosst of them lad muskets. The coritamingor came forth this day in his scarlex uniform, and sat himself down next wo a table. 'The osptain of the company which was about whe revierrad stcoul near to him with the muster-roll. The mames of the privates were called orer by the captain, and as each name was repented by the sergeinh, who stcoud at the door-may, the indirichet to whom it belonged came in and presented arms to the earitam-mor, then curned about and retired. It wsts truly ridienlone, but at the same time pshinful, were the fright which the countenances of some of the poor felloms expressed, and their cxcessive awkwarimens rehen they carne to present theraselves; wheilst others dígplayd evichent self-sufficiener; these were wiell-dreased and portormed every manceuvre with as much neatness and prompainude as they werc supable of, expressive of superior bnowledge and in bopes of oumir-








 was put into onte of' iffa aparements of the hou*s: which ve vere ioliabitilig, and a sergeunt was stationed mitho thers ans sombinel. 'L'he cexpifan-inor' soon Jowever relented, upon whiteh lae wis releitsçd ant nllowerI ta return liome.

At alinger the grefil, man zook the head of the biblo, ;rat the owner
 up in emormols <uantities, for the prarry vas larayo und this is the
 lianself to tlic dixte which plenser him leest, and this was oftoutinosi done, with the kuife which the juersan land been matiog nee off mpon
 for the purpose. A nice bit was nat saff oren upoin one's owin jalater
 turn. Mherla wine was drank during dinuter, and the glasses Repo ased in cummons. We sorn rose from table, duld the javity, gencrally speakirig, took rile atcuastomed grata or nap after dinume which is Hatal in warn climaces. XY[y frionsland I willied out in the afternown, but thera, was nothitg to tempt us to ge fity for the neishthomhompl possessed no matubal beanty and the dry weather hema bumb np the grass, and had made the fite ol the comntry extrernely dreary.

Early on the morrow abould forty persons sidlied forth for the vil-
 half. We arrived there at sevan o'clock. This village is built in che form of a aquare; the houses arc low, but die dowrels is large and hamdsomes. Like the hats of Achand of somon othor placen, those of Born Jardinn are not whitemaitted, and cherefore the nud of which
they are composed retuans th its origimat selour. The plate conuains about $\mathbf{5 0 0}$ inhabitinnte, Wie ascended a stecep hill to atrive as ic, and on the opposite side srill intuther of equal height is to be surromated in proceending farther inland. The villages is sithated upon a break of the hill. The soil is chietly composed of rod atth, approsachisorg in placese to a bright scarlet trith veins of yellow running through it; this is the description of soil, which in asid to be the best adapted to the growth of cotton. Bom Jardin is a great rendezvors for the havkera who are proceeding to the Serctur, and for otless wha merely advance thus far. It is distant trom Recife twenty good lesgues, in a N. E. direction.

My friend and I wabled out and descended the hill by a path which lect us to the bed of tue riser, for there wats now no water in it. Great want of witer is often experienced at Bon Jardim, but I think thut if wells of safficient depth weere disge a supply might be obtained *. On our return to the village, we discovered that 3hess was about to be kaid. and therefore we accompanied some of onr pany to the cintareh. It why crowded; indeed it is a remark which I wat frequeotly led to make, chat on Smmays and Holidiass when the peasantry assemble at the church doors, their nurnbers must astunish those persons who merely pios through the country without opportunities being afforded to them of a morewinute examinstion. "I he cottages upon the road side do mot. promise so numerous a population as is on these occasions to be seen; but from the thickness of the woads and the lowness of the huts, even when a view of the couniry is by any accident to be obtained from a high hill, the dwellings of atie lower orders of people are not to be pertejived; shefy fire kcatered all over the country; and narrow paths which appear impusabable or nearly so, and are scarcely to be obenerved, often lead to four or five huts, sitasted in the cuntre of a wood or upon some low ground, adarted to the cultivation of mandion and maize.

[^49]








 it wiil chen subnide, 'Uut continne' smozinered in the hellow or some





 sher to thl well, the comseguences which fircuent? have entaded. The act of settinz fite to a nood is solyizec te putisitracri by law,






 pond, throsigh which a rivulet runs in zle ziny sianon. The pwacr
 the boorlers of the pond. Tite dmoding-house was new fud bad a seond luxr; it wis very cleac and well furnished. This was the most pleasandy sicusted wod tibe thes attanzed mansion which we risited during this journey; the hite tor thue slaras wete mell buitio


negroes with bagpipes attempted to ghtay a fex tupes orhilde we worn at cfisuter, but they seersed to piay in different kej's from each other', and sometimes each appeared co have struck tip a func of this own composing. I think I never lieard so batd an attempt. at prodacidys harmotious wounds as the charguetectos made. 'the possextion of ' at band of these bespeaks at certail degree of sugerioricy, conwoFinently the planterk pride abearachea upon their misicians.

Our party coruld ror let pase this opportanicy of betiey together wichout practising ahe amusement of the inducfo*, althaugh the usual tutac of ixs telabration was yet distant nne week. Ot the day subsequerz to that of our acyival, dimner was sextecly ovec before the farinter, the banana", the rice, and other dainties tuwn the tadole, were hurles! st each othar's beridx; won the smart uniform coats were
 heart and soll. Every king was bornc with perfert good humour, nod at Jasts fatigned and bedauberl, all of us retited to the hataanocky wiluch had theen provided for che purty- hut as our evil states wuld havo it, a brave eaplain dosed quienty all the slutuers [as clue broon was shinigg very bright into the mom] aad then he plated tignself near to an enormous jar of wheter, whick stood in ore corner of the apartment, and with a stantl pitetger in thia hand soon dealt around hism its comtents, awakening tas wish repeated showers, and obligingt us w take shelter uncler the chaits and tathles. This, and othex jokes allieal to it, coratinued until the break of day, winea we prepared for a conlípuation of our journcy. One company wes, revieved here.

We proceecled to the ivouse of Capt;in Paula Travasso, diutant onte league. A; was our aswal rastom, my fricud and I walked our aoob

[^50]stter act arrivat, and in reanming, instead al paisuing tie parbs, whech was ataber ciccultous, we actempteat an slimbly a bank, that we wirtat the sooner rebch the thouse; m my fiend was betore me, and as he scrambied up ir, his foor slipped, u bient canaed thins toi catcin at che stump of a suali piart, that grew upon the side ot the bank. Ho gave up bis jidea at eqing by that way to the house, and returned io ne, briuging with him the plant, with isk roo: and the eerth about it. Ons gaing to throw it uway, he perceived uyon his hand the plitur oit' a substance which made wis rewurn to the spoc. We gachered some more of the carift, aud this gentlemen, wh:o had long resideri apou the cosst of itrica, judged the substavee whicll was mised with ic to be fold dasc.

At this jlace the intrado wis continued more violently chan before; for even the blackened pots and puus fionn the kitchen were introduced co loosmear onch other's faces. Wre olatained bere as view of the fermates belomgitg to the lrouse; but every where else, they had been too rigorously guarded. or were daturally too reserved to cinable us to see them. Some excuse was made by the voung men who were acquainced with the family, to draw then into the sport $;$ and the ladies and their slaves were nothing loutls to sce amkt worbicin
 created much laughtex, and which is but too characeeristic. One man whon we met at this place hed all along begged of those who were engaged in the sport, that they would not wet him, because he wss umell; however it was seen that lee did not observe towards pehers that forbearance which lee entreated from them towards himself. One of our purty secing this, actacked biw with a large silver Indle filled with water; the mans ran out of the house, ard the older followedi; but when they were at some distance from it, he turned upon his pursuet, and dravingris knife, srood at some distunce, thrustening to stab him if he adranced. The other, atriking his left side st the place in which knives ate ustatly curried, likewise threateded hin, and without delay advanced towards hims, having pieked up a thick stick as he approaclied. Bat bis adversary did not like the
thoughts of a close combas, anal swon set off at fall epreed, with his knite in his hand. In this manoer, he eusered the fack door of the
 in the apartmert from which they hast stitect, witen the latrer opened his waistcoal and sheweck that the Itacl not a knife; i.hes provilig leserove the whole party, that lee of the katife had run anway from oue who was uarmed. This was quite sulficieut; the women made a gemetal atiack mpon him: lue went to the stable, mountert his horse, anil set forth; but his misfortumes had not yet ended, for the path by whiul, he must retreat lay under two of the windows of the house, and us he passed. two large tuls of water drencleed fim and his steve, which inmediacely tuuckened its pace: anidst the trootiag of every one preserst.

We continued our journey in the afternom to a sugar plantation, the propserty of Captais fonm Soares, where we cernainexl until rile iollowinge day. tionae of us were tirerd aif the intrude, and therefore sought shedter in the mill und acluoining out-lobites, when we saw the sport aysin commencing ; but we were ahout th be atacked, when we gamerd the roofs of one or the buildingst and frum hence antld mot. be disfisilued.

I bad frequatrily seess the subreiro of yaip trec. Which is to be thieks found in these disuricts. It is a large shrul, which puts finth nomerous bancbes in every direction, on chat when it is in tinll leat, is has somewhat the appentaze of trees that lave been elippert, (as was fintrerly practised in gardens, , which is increased by the leavex being small and growing very close to exach other. The receptecte of the seed is about the size of a sumatl plum; when ehis is pus into water, and rabbed wilh some violence, it produces the sathe effect ar that which is enused by soap in water: and it has cle same property of cleansing". 'lbe poro "fo alke or garlic irce, is to be met with in

[^51]great aburdance in these districis. The name is derived forn the similitude of the smedt of the leasessand the wood ot i.his plant to garlic. The tree abounds so greaty solsters so much of one of their favourite European onlinaty ingredients, that it has giver name to a town, and tor at whole district.

About five o'clock in the ateernoon we procecaled to Limoeito, ; large enal thriving village in. It is composed of one street of thout
 churth and vicarage: this building belonged tormerly to the Foskish. The trate of Limoution with the interion is consideruble, and preticu. larly on the day of the marbet, which is leetd neelity, the bustle ix
 conamitted, or at least many wounds and thlaws being given; tout the markets of Nateretlior Lagon d'Antuare chose which are prarticularly fiamed for the disturbances that tsually fithe plaee there. Thase became so consiluerable at one time, that the troncruor found it necessary to issue orders for a patrole to keep the pence on market days.

Limocirs contains sboust sis hunded whatitatex, weld is irercasing dwily. It stands upon the banks of the tiver Capibaribe, which was at this tione quite dry. Tine distitnee trom liecile ix fonteen good leagues. We were entertained by che vicate who has taken very litule pains to have a decent resideree, and caniot fail to be somewhat indifferent about his own lifis, tor every step to whicle we advanced as we ascended to the npurtments abowe, promised to be the last that would hold us. The fisors of the rooms into which we were ushered, seemed to be loid out us traps to ensmare those who might not tyead cautionsly; some of the boardy werc braken, and latace holes remained = others were loose, and it wan dangerous to pass over them;

[^52]
 dide $Y$ sore sor miserable a dwelling whose inluathitant thight with so much eate have berrow the state in which we founcl it. ILowever,
 poot, shargir bosith. uat other parts of the equiparge of silver.

The Capitamomor had snill several poats to visic. which woukt delay fion for a considerable time; therefore as my ficted was anxious to return to kecide, we jefi our party, widt moch regect, tund were necompanied in the inotniug by the acljutant, who way about to teturn honse. I lead been greally ambsed, and wished to have sieen the conclasion of the affitir. At Limeneiso, soweral companies were to be revicwod, and jrom thence the Cinpitan-mor proceenled to Pio do Athor and Nazaret $1_{1}$, ur I.agrai d'Antad, twa large villages of considerable importunce. Woth of them are withiu a few leagues of the ;bace from which we separated from our companions. Wre retarred to sunta © © the houne of the atjutam. Whe reackuel Aguiar in the afternooth, beirg rectevived at that place by ant of the Cifpifam-mor's soms, a
 wor*s imteresting wife, who is dikewime lif niece ; slie was vboul fitieen years of age, he being atiour forry-sin. We slept there, and stopped at l'anlintus on the following day at noon, from wherice we proceerded


I heard ouse of the sugar phanters bitterly complaining of his povert, arad hat his want of hateds to work his mill obliged hith to

[^53]give up the cultivation of mach of the bem land of hin extate. Soon uftur the hatd attered thuse somphainas, the convosatien turned upon
 lately furcluased at new saddle ard tridfe whint: he wished us to seo.

 of the sunte metal ware proftisely watcored and places upon all parts of this and of the bridle. THe told ws finat the whole bad cosit hims fouk hundred mif reis, abont 110 A . This sum of thoney would brave
 ed at chrawer in which werestrewed several broken silver spoons, spurs, \&ce and he said that he wats collectiog aduticient quantity of this metal for the purpose of haviag bis groom's bonse orazaneated its the smme manner as his own.

The free prersons of colour who inhabin the track ol conntry through which we pasged ara noore numerous than 1 liad proviously imagined. The companier of Ordemançu4 vary muth in strength; sonce consist of one hundiced eund fifty naen ant more, and others of not atove fifty. The peasancry of the Mata, that is, of the coontry which lies betweon the plentiful well-watered discricls of the couse and the Sertoorsh, have not a general goond charneter. The misexible life which they, oftener than oderers, are obliged to Jend from the want of water and or provibions, secms to have an unfavourable effect upont then; they are repremented as being more vindictive and more quarrelsome, and less hospitable than their neighbours. To say that a man is a matute dia guater, a woodranan of the woorl, is no recommentation to him.

During this journey I heard the following atory; and as $X$ was acquainted with the person to whom the circumstancos oceurred. I can vouch for its veracity. A Brazilian who had been mealthy, but who bad, through many impruderacics, and from many deeds which deserve a much severet name, reduced himself to a state of comparative poverty, tesided in this prat of the comiry at the time I tran velled through it. Fie way a mau of loose morals innd savage diepo-
sition, but of moat pleasant maners. He had in onc paxticular instance, whicb pro-cininently starmped his character, behaved in at most shameliul manner to a hady to whom he professed himself 1.0 be attachel. He had posscssed many slaves; but af ithe time the following Decurrences took place three or four only remsined, and of these one alone was in hcalth. Apprehenaive of being aaasssinated by some of the persons whom he had injured and insulted, be usually kept the doors and windows of his reaidenee well secured, excepting one entriuse whith was likewise closed ar dusk. One evening, three men knocked at the door, sad asked leave to pass the night in wome of the onndonses of the plantitcion; the owner answered from svithin, but did not open the door, asying that they suighl sleep is the mill. About an hour afterwands there was another knock, and a person requested that some fruit might be sold to him. Xhe owner fetched some, and inconsiderately opened the door to give is to the matr; but when he looked out, all the three ware there, and as the reached the frait to onc of them, a scconul fired, and the greatest part of the shon entered the ufedomen. The hown cowrage of the mounded man made these fellows hesitate in approuching himm irnmediately, by which means he had time to reacla his sword, which stood near to where be was, and he wes enabled to clase and bolt the door. This beihy done, he reached his berl with great difficulty, expecting that every minute would the his last. The men tried to gair admittance through aome of the doore or windows; but not sureceding in this, they rode off. As soun us the slave who was in health heard the report of the gun, and saw his master wotinded, he lett the house, recollecting (which is somewhat surprising) to lock the door; he made all haste to a neinghbouring planration, distant one leagate. The owner of the place to whicha the slave had fled, ordercd a hammock to be prepared, and set off with sixleen negroee; he wak accompanied by his chaplain, who bromirnt with him at eindle, and all the utbor necessary equendages to the led-side of a dying Catholic They arrived, and found the wounded man in at state which led them to suppose that he could
 the holy ens, atod atul: prepared for ibe worst. 'ftiva tley put hind isito thar hamioock, and bis neighbour bad him convered to his resiufence. The pursort who related thie sto:ly ta ther alul not fal to adcl, that a lighted randle was carcied in is kitera, that the
 ljybt. iat his hond, as is the eastom, $A$ surgeon was semi for to Iglianaco. witic:h is distant several league, wod he succeeded in exteackitg almose all thu sbat. Notwithstanding the cieluy, and cther
 Whilst he stid remainet in a dongerema atate at the house of his friend, os Sertanejo Judian, well armed, pasged throught the place, and wated one of the negroes if he was sti! alive. It was perserally szid Liat he mual refrove zo same liar chateat part of the conatry, ofterwiet luc might daily expect another attach, and favilictuanly as inis evemic* Tetre Sertapajos. Thu men wha ksul attempted to
 ware seen on the folloping day ravelling towards the inserion. They mextionad at soms of the cotsages at thich they stopped, that
 which is equal to an Europenn using in the äame \#tarmer the worl bread. The perxion whom they had attacked could oor be sure oir the qquartar frum whetwe the biow pruceeded; fot moaty were those from which be oight bire experled it. hn Brazil, injurud petenus
 their daroilies to go minpunisherl, or they rnast thernselves undertabe The chastiseraent of hím who has corongited che critura Tbe evil phoreeds, imnneciastely, frum the vastuess of the coumtry; and Erom the want af antention in she gowemment to counteract this dissadvantage,

```
    CHAF["%H NII.
```



```
    MO SAEMGHILE
```

A



 wher calaso.

In whe beginnigg of April, 1512, we seatai ithe -algne-phatation
 tion, and about one leayue frum itse coast; it hut upan it several


 of mecting the prorson who was sbouth ro leave it, being the second vieit whichl I bad malle to nny inteltelod phace of residence. Having agreed with this anam, the owner and alyaclf telurned foo sletp at the dwalling of grye of his brothers, which wes situizkod utaut a mild
 be was now clexring, irnd itpan whielt be wiak ereebing yevernl buiduingic Fie und his faraily ithabited is barm, add we were to shece in his new lrouse of which the root und the mood-worls of the wills
 unfinished durelling was almost surpounded by pachy of stagrant water, inhabited by cnormcus toads, whose lowl ath hosrge arosking oontinued durifg the whole of the right, wichout intermistion. The
trumks of che trees whicin had been eut down a slow time betore, were lying ta they had fatlen in all tisections. In whe moraing I fet offalons, on meretern to Recite; I matle for the seat-shore, and soon reselied the river Doce, a narrow stram, which ofter a course of iour or five lexgues hore discharges itk water, into the sea. The tide exters it. atud armain recudes with consicersble rapittion; at such times is. is nod tordasple, but ar the cbb the remajning waters are very trifing, and some parts of the chanel are leift quite dry. It is necessary to pins quickly over, as the sand of which its bed is compotend is very fine and although nor alrogeher what is called quicksend, stilit to delay in one spot is not yuite safe. When the tide is out the warer of the river is quite sweet, which has obtained tor it the nance of Doce

It mas upon the borders of this river that the Portugucze and the Dutch weee first opposed to each orber in that part of Brazjl"; berc commenced that memorable struggle upon which the Pernarubucans, with so much reason, pride themselves. The begrinning what nor propitious, and did not alogur well of the restult, but tinae proved the people to be worrhy of the beautiful comutry which they inbstit. The river Tapada, upon the banks of which the Portugueze commander afterwards attempted to rally his men $n$, fies botween the Dose and Olinds. It is a rivalet or drke (for it resembles more the latter than the fomper) without any outlet to the sea, but it is only separated from it by the sands, which are here about twenty yards across. When the rails have been violent the additional waters of the Taprudo are discharged over the studs, ankl sometimes at spring tides, when the wiod blows fiesh, a few waves will reach over them and fall into the dyke; this being the only monner in which they can compotuicate with ench other. At the Doce likewise landed Peatro Jaquea de Magalhaens, the general, and Brito Ereine (now kuown as an historian), the admiral of the fleet which

[^54]fasistad the paraiots of Xemambuco in the camplefion of their Jong.
 consergucut expmision of the j)utcht.t*

But to kexurn. - T arrived apori che hatoks of che Doce, and asked int a cottuge, which was not fate diatarit, if the river was cordable, and being answered ith the uffirmative. I youle utp io its bathat arad attempted 10 tanke my horse enter it, which to relused to do. I made a. second ant athird trial, wher he plunged in swimming; it oras with much difficulty that he gained the outercnost poine of the sand-batak on the opposite side. Fle had prassed a bad night and was not in a proper state to perform this takk, nor should I have attempted it if I hul knowa the depth, but I imarined that the tide had anfficiently retreated, ily cloches were dry betore I arrivert at home, but I long felt the consequences of ctossing the Nocer.

About the middle of May $\lambda$ remperd to Jaguaribe The roed to ir in throught the plantation of Paulistas, fiom whence, after crossing the Patutibi, a narrow path leads to the lerk throngh an deep wond tor nearly oue jeagae. $\Lambda$ sterp hill is to be sumanouted, and its eomesteroving declivity rarefully descended. The wond cuntinues to a breate in the hill, on the side nearest to Jagitaribe. On reaching this spot tbere was a vicu betore me, which would in most situations be ascounted very beautiful, but in this delighttid coontry so many fine prospects are contimually presenting themselvea, that I opened upon this with few feelings of pleasure at the sight. I cannot avoil awning that the advantages of the place as a pluntation oncupied my mind more deeply than ita beantica. Immediately be. forc me was a cottige and a rotir of negro buta, surrounded by banana-trees, standing upon a shelf of the hill. Beyond these to the left was the narrow, but far-extending valley, ipon whose rearest bonder: were situated the buildings of Jaguaribe upon an open field, with the hills behind, and in front was the rivulet. To the right wat
a deep dell. with and exparmie of echuat'y not thickly corerwi with
 deep-coloured mongroves. which poineed out that a stream of cotsideratate size ran down emonk thens. On the wher sidele of de nearest of thesese matigroves, and yee nor very far, was the hight jorak of Sc. Bento. with the mandioc. ink maize lances, ancl wood uphon its side, und the path winding up through clemen, which is at tithes concealed, ased at tones in viow; - Lu: the buidings are :ent to be seen.
 spot upon which I wias sabalinte.
 the rhapel, ats the ©ront Howse wias still acenpied. The negroes were already at worle for th, int under the dircection otia propher fiter or munares. Thae whele neiphtourlood was astonished at the place I had decermined to inhabit, until some other dwelling ! !rexduted itself: I was rentaigly hot rantiontaly sifitated, for the vescry conxisited of only one spa:tment, with a doorway to tle fell and
 churele was unfinisled, and wats the resort of bacs and owls; however it was priacipully my umanacern ruxpeeting ghasts which my neighbours were sumprisul at. A hugro boy and anself remnined as night to emcounter these, if any shoukl oppear, and to receive our amstatit risirors the bars. My companion rolles himself up ulou the ground in a piece of baize and a mat, and clous cased, was quite arfe. I slepe in a hamnock, and oftentimes shese uswelcome geteste aidighted upon in, as if they had come for the chance of a toc or a fuger making its appoarance, upon which chey mitht fis. This way of living did mon. lasx long, nor didi $I$ wistr that it should.

The homse of which I have spokert as being situated upon a shelf of the bill, and as looking dowe: upot the valley, was soon without an inhabivnnt, and thercfore to this I removed. It was darge, but the floors of the rooms were without bricks, and the interior walls hat not been white-wabbed for ages, and some of chem had never whdergone the operation. I received visits and presents, as is curse
tumary, from my itmmoliane meithlhours, - ilse white perstens and those of eolort who aspice to gentility; :utd indead many indiriduals




 my hammack; the men atot round on chairs, but the woincon gevorally
 to thern of my imentions, ancl of my widt to conciliale, and I heard
 ant ol' Ceuds betweed their stipurjom, the sume stories being related to me in many different ways. This weve mach surporised dian I


 pertion of my time.
'J.lac lands uramad me wo the Noriby, belorged to the Benclichirse
 negrected lout chose which were posisoswey by the former were in high
 coming 1.0 , laguaribe, are the lands of Paulistas; aud to the West and North West ate nome excellent enne lands, belonging to a religepus lay brotherhood of free nechroos of Oilidn, which were tenanted by nod subdivided among a great. number of persons of low rank, whitest, mulators, aud blicks.

The work went on regularly, and I bad soon very little it which to emplay my time, axcepting in thuse chimgs by which I might think proper to amme myself.

In the beginning of Jnne, it was necessary that $X$ should visic Goinna; however I took a cireuitous route for the parpose of secing sompelting uew. I was accomparied by un old tree crum ol colour and by Wanoel, n fatcluful Africals. We sleptthe first aight at Aguiar, the estate of the capitantoror with whom I had travellch to Bond Jitclira; ancł
on the tellowing morming proceeded through seterel surgar phanations.
 plantacior, Sou we conid nor purchasc any thintrot which comake a dinner, and therefore, us was (istal on sweh occasions, we smoked itu placte of catiog. When the sun had declinud a lifte we agrin ser forcth. At tew of the sugar plantutions though rehish we passed itt the aitemoon were in a decnyed state. We stoppod at a cottacke, and begged the owner to sell us a fowl bur skee retused; - we had not eatun any ching clis dat. I was loath so to do, but I cou'd not avoid seyjug that size maxi sell one, that in dith not miad the price, but that bunger would not allow me to lec her do ss she plessed in chis case. She fixed mpon one. and made me pay exorbitertly fur it. We parced in the end very good friends; she offered mee some herbs with which wh cook the bird, and atier this rexonciliatien we agrem advanced. By going to Purgatorio we had lett the usual direct road -
 Brazil? ${ }^{n} 11$ ouv pirat we were obiged to lean down upon our horsea' Decks, and to proceed in tbis manmer tor sonte distanse, witio the branches of the trees complecely closed above. The plantation of Mundo Novo, or the new world, which we renched ine it ulse afternoon, was in raina; trees grem in the eltapel, and the brushwood in front of the dwelling-bouse rose highter than its root I slept it a cotage hard ly, which was inhebited by an elderly man and a number of children, large and small. The ill-fated lowl, smed enother which we hard also obtained by che way, were dressed by the daughters of our host. Soon the cooking was efferterl, and I commenced operations, litemally with tomch and nail, upon one of the birde, for there mere no kvives, forks, or spoons to be hond; lowever l did receive some assistance from my ofn facc de pronta, a pointed bnife of dirk, which, though prohibited by law, is worn by all wanks of persons. At niglit, my hammock was slang uader the penthouse; at a late bour a shower of rain chme oul our host biad a vast herd of goasts; thesc crowded in from the win, and soon I was obliged, in self-defirte, to ribe, as I discovered that they bad very liube respect for me; - my
head and some of thejes laving come in contact, marle me look out for beluer quarters; and these $l$. found upon a ligeh table, whicte 3 . semained until the visitors again venstured forth. We proceeeded on che morrow, and reached Goizuta by the low marehy lands of Catit. The river was searedy fordable; bnt. we raosken, and ou the opposide side the lonse mut in the rosd reached above the borses' knees and continned along it for more than one handrat yards; we entexed it, and the horses gently wroded through; but mine unfortenately felt that his tail was rot quite fasy in the mulb atod therelore hegan to move it to and fro on either side; and as it was long. (mnch tou long on this occasion) it shuck me at every jerk. hiy dress whe it lightwoloured nankeen jackel and trowsers, and I wime forth, withoul exacgeration, one cake of mud from head to foot.
liode to the residence of a person with whom I haik been long acquainted; he had taken up his quarters at at now mandioc plantation which had been lately estulblished in the outskirts of Goiana; my friend had removed to this flace to superintend sorne of the workmen. I stayed only two dayz at Goians, for I soon accompifsloed the ofjees: of $m y$ jomrney, which was to obtain twenty Indiun labourers from Alharidra. My return to Jaguaribe was by the usual roall.

The day after my arrival at my new home, I rote to Recife, and lind on the fullowing day ar, attuck of agne $X$ had exposed myself lately too mich to the aun, and had been several times wet through. The disorder left me in a fortnight; my horses were semb ior, - they came, and I set off lor Jegguatibe; but in mid-way, I was drenched with rain, and reaching that place much tired, went to slewep anintontionally in my fanmock, without changing my eloatha. In the morning if delt that the ague was remurning, and thorctione ordexed my horse and rode out to try to shake off the attack, which the peasants aay it is poisible to do. However, whilst I wus tallaing with u ucigclibour, on horseback at his door, the aguc came on, and I was unable to return to my own dwelling.

The next day the Indiuns from Alhandva nrived; they had im-
bubci strante motinus of the fichess of: :n Englisfiman; and their cap-

 respect, bur all to no purpese. I oftered the $1 \times 5 \mathrm{k}$, the tounter; tant their churatiariscit: obstmatey had enteredi into



 of my people saik. os they "isilppeatan, ascemsiong lise tinll, beyoud the field. " They had ratien work for any one else for la! the unomey, than lower in their bemathis to fon."

I was vemored irom ahis meliglborers hoase, atien a 它w drys, in a hammenck; but fandirg that the divomer jutareased. I wont for the manager, an old man of colour whose wize aticonded (epx) ane. By my desire, he collected a sufitient montrer of betrers, as it was my wisk to lace curxied io Inecite, Abere frove ockock in the nterenoms we set off; there wets sixteen rach to bear bixc trammock by tirns, sId the manager tras hikewise in sompany ; of these persons only lifo were shares. After we had pansed the wood sind hed arrised upon a goud woad, the boaren procecded ut a lonis waik mpromubiner to 2 run.
 chief in throwing sconee fot the loge by the road side, and in tabase, half joking linlt wishing for zur OTaporkumity of quardelling, confideti itt cheir number*, and that es they ware in the service ot an white man he would bring them ou: of any scrupe $;-$ waw rove strange, and had I been less nnwell, this journey woild have much amased we. As we passed through Olizul2, t worman wiked my mers if thcy carried a dead body (for is is $i_{12}$ thik matimer hast they aro trongigh, from th Bistoluce for intermont) . One of the bearers answered, "No. it is the devils :" and then turning to me, said, "Is it not ac, my master $\psi_{\text {t }}$ "" I ssid, "Yes;" and whe gond womark wnikech away, saying "Ave-





 the jrohibition.

I Lacyine enradually wotise, until iny xccovery nas rot expected;



 lating to roy illoses. I went ors boerd an Ebsglisk mutenant ship,
 bying upon che deck, I strusk it intemtionally, bret: wilhunt any paxticuleu object. The master, who way ata old gerytienting with whore I hucd wome fiom Fiatghan, and win hat bave long necpupinted wich me, anid, "Yes, foo would not have it." 1 atacil bim what he

 "Why\% do you think I would liwe led yous esmain aracng these follown heran who would not have given you christian burial' I indended
 by one of my melienl retcactants when if was reccoveritar, that some dull maiden ladies, who Lived memar ta whece I rosided, diad fre-
 Sacrament brought to inc, for they wore much grieveld that I ehould - die withert any ebance of salration. Aus Englikh mercharat of liecite ysked my proticular friend when the forterul wis to eake phote; and one oit the modieal metr wrote a soce to the satio pereon late ous
 lauk been tendered unneccesary.

[^55]










 abounds so mand whin these aumults. Is is aluost we onls sjecies of roblacery for the practising of which regitior ganes of men have be-no diseovered is have been tormen; hut hitur tixilows will sometimes also chance to bus laok of a stay on on cect. ${ }^{2}$

[^56]I was moxi ansiths to return to Jagraribe, and about the midelle of October was making preparetions for the purpose; when the manager arrived from the plantation, with the intelligeme that ore of his sisistants hidd been :aliarled two mighte lefore, and mextly killed, by some persome who had heen comaisioneta 1.0 pertorirn chis decal in revemge of some real of imerismed itjury which thag wan bed combsíued. 'This tletermined my protee lings; the following morning. I sek off wit], the manages : ind a servant, to see the wounded inan. 1 formed thime at his fatler's house, in most woofill pliglat; his firce was dreadfully lacerated, and his bedy mureh broised; the work had beon done by bludgeons, and eviderdly it lear, else the bisk wond bave been performed less cluntaily and more effectually. I never cand d diacover by whon the murter was intended, nor the persona who attempted sr ; they were dressed is Jeacher, like minto Sertanejos; but the sunflerex imafiged thut this costume was macle use of aa a disguise Two men sirang out upon him, in an matrow lawe which hach high banks on each side; he defiended himaelf for some time with his sword, but atoy owerpowered hime at lisil,s and his weapong was the onls part of his property which they carried off I removed ates gethor from wonteiro in a few days; my presence hath long bean nexessary at Jigmaribe, for the mill wata at work, and as freguently hoppreas in every country, some of the porsons who were exnplayed had not remained empty bonded.

The poor fillow who hat been waylajd, soon retmexed to the phantation; he tald ne that every night larye atone were thrown violendy against hijs door, betweer the houra of one and four in the morning. I called the manager the following evening, and both of us beting armed, we took our station near to the gate which leada into whe fieth, one beiner on cach side, lebind the high bank. We could bear the

[^57]



 :


















[^58]tage, corcroct with lites, ank white-washed within and withont; it






 right was tilu mell worked dey water, and thee warchouse or barn in
 those builutinge maty be atdead the pens tor the cattle, the castes, heaps of $1 . i$ mber, and a small prond rhourel which che water xuns to the mild

 thered on cart wite ley sreep hills cormut? with thjuk woods.

Otenntimes $T$ hatre sat at hisgly upos the threshboted ot che door, after all my poople fiat recited wo theie habiations; they buwe sup-


 been sume feast or mergenalding, ilats late at nighb, thas conceaderl. Neighbouring regrons bave benn incited, and have ergept in durjng the evening unperceived. It is on thene mexasions chat plans for rteceiving the master are contrived; in the so sweet mperroitred meeringa, the sehemes ato formed. Tiren the slave asyer who is swave ol sholl seerat prac:icts, inxd roflects, wast feel of bow lithle avtil ares all his regelacions, alf hid goud managetuent. Restraint ereatea the wish to act contraty to given rules. The slave lus a mutural bias to deceive baim who holds hion in subjeccion, A man maxy love the master vihom he may at pleasatue leave; but to be tied down, ancl as aduly erijoined to exteem, fails not in most instanees to rouse contriaty feelings, to anvaken w sense of pleatsurc dather than of pain, in counteracting the wishea, and in rendering nugatory the determinationa of bim who coramavels.

















 others that: I woulal aid the liw ratior thati evade it. shatad their

[^59] iisllowech."









[^60]sirange talcs ; he wats a man of tendal stajng, bonest and fuithlall in

 This is vory iterfuently che case among these jeople. I-fe wos how-
 there, l. shoukd seek him out.

I bat become somowhat iniamate in several tamilies ot the noighbearhood; but was the most anulned with my acrpunitence in those of seoondury rank, where thare is less ectebiony chana atmong persoms of the first elass. In the Jomer, the females ofteu rppenr, when the visitor is a weighbona has concerns with the mater of -he hotion, and becomes intimate with him.

The Festival of st. liento wan to be celebrated about the close of the year in the abloining phatuion, belonging to the monks ot' whom he is the patron sinint. The converst is at olinds, and thero the abbot resides; the fraternicy is rich, possessing macil landed property. Upon the estate adjoining to Jarguaribe, mandioc, maize, rice, and other arictes of tood aree cultivated, witle whicef the convent is supplied. The slaves upon it are in number about one hundred, of all ages; and the last Africhu: died whilst I resided in that part of the country. The festival, ne which 1 iutended to be present, was to our Lady of the Kosary, the prtroucss of negrocy. The expence which was to be ineorred was sulporibed for by the slaves of the entate, and che festival was entirely managed by them. Tbree litiats athended to officinte at the altar; but the lighls, the firct-works, and all other necessary articles were provider tior by a commithee ol the slaves. The manager of the estate whs a mulutto slave, who made me an visit upen Hiny arrival at Inguaribe, and on the occasion of the festival caine to invite me to the norma and to the feates (the nine previous evenings and the festival); or rather he came to request that I wonld nou fail to go, ay he feared diat my people and his might quarrel. I went with a large party of men and women; we asecoded the hill, and on our arrisal at ity summit, I was invited by one of the black women to enter her cottage, the same invitation loeing mude to several other
persons of our payty. The diapel is pinced quite upon the highest point of the hill; and the honse in which the triars dwell, when they tome to the ustate and abe row of negro huts form a semi-citele about it, thus in part inclosing the ohaprel. These habitations look down upon the broad river of Haria Furinhe, woding below anoner the mangrovis, and there are several creck; on the oppoxite side, which look like so many branches.

The crowd wifich had assembled was considerable. ant was not a Jittle increased by my itce workiten; sume so whom were unmarried meti, nonenumbered, and ready fon any mischict. I wam armed with a long pike and the large brife of clie country; and bad brought three of my slaves, accoutred mach in the same mamner, - threc reschate Atricans, ppon whom $X$ coudd depencl, and whose busincss it was closely to watcl, their master. Before the commencensent of the prayers and singirg in the clapel, the blach prople exteaded several mats upon the ground in the open air ; athed our party sat down upon them to cmaserse and to eat cakes aud swectmeats, of which many kinds were exposed for sale in great abundance. All went on quietly firs threse rights, for the mulatio munager fortad the sale of rum; but on the fourth nifint some liquer unfortunately found its way up the hill, and Nicolau, the unanager, came in thaste to inform me that a few ot my Indians were dartheyrly bent on guarrelling with a party of his people. I rose from the anat upon which I had been seated, and followed by my body guard, accompanied him back to the spor, where I noon saw that if fight had comruenced : persuasion was of no avail, and therefore my negrous made use of the but ends of their prikes, and brouthtan Itadian co the groand, who wan deliveredover to Siman, one of my fellows; and I desired the two alaves whoremained to aseist the St. Bentonegroes. I thus proved, that 1 would not uphold my own people if they acted iregularly; and the matter fiorumately ended with only some trifitug hruises, and one broken liead. The Indian was conveyed home by Simam, who returned to tell the that the had placed the man in the stocks, with the iatent of sobering him. No more quarrels were entered idoto for this kffair G \& 2
guite sickenct all those who tight have luen an inclinem. In itte
 woris, mut baing mach tite worse.

 slavery can be; bue although the hask alre comparativuly speaking, easy, and comprad bumishment are orly resorted to tor childte:t, still the freate oftjece at. which then aim is ow be free, and to purclense abee
 had ubtained the matanassion ot his wite, though he was stilf a shave dirnselï, with the interl that if she should still have any anere chilicrens, they might be free; and lue purposed adterwards purehasisig his own freedom, kud that of his yoing ones. Several instances of the same fehaviour are trerpuencly occuremg upon the extincs bolonging to these and other triars. 'lhus every one wishes to be a Goes agent; and it is dinis feeling atons wheth make: a St. Bento negro do all in his power to be able to act for hiroself; for rery probubly be may be obliged to labour with thore diligence to obtain his living as a dree math thun as atave The cmanalipated negro oftedtimes becomes an excelient membor of society, for he contracts dikits of industry, in which he continues; laut agsin, if the has been hardly treated Jyy is rigonou* master, he becomes disgusted with, and indifferent to lite, is rentered callons to shame, sud drags on an idie, miserable existence.

Another festivat was twake phace at one of ahe chapels upon the coast, which is dedicated to our Lady of the Conception. This was distant one league and a half from Jaguaribe; dowever we formed a party und mounted our horises one moonlight evening; the fernalea riding behind their husbands and ralations, with a sheet or counterpaue thrown over the horse's baunches, upon which they sat. We carte

[^61]







 is. nsuat.


 patts the low seresy louls ure unicen, or atearly so, in long rows for Jatf a mile together. Wbitewashed cottrges with tiked roote are frequently interapersed; eliurehes and ehapels lave been built, amal Suv intervals of' weach extont. monain tupeoplech. 'Tlu Inatis are

 const, ianon whiels only very low ollere will verelate; here id touriahes and aepuls to derive monishment loun its vicinity to the sea, but when it: in situmbed in inch lund the coco-reec clroops, and aven upon ithe wundy plains of the interjor, it does not boar its fruit with the shme luxuriance, or reach that bieight, whick it actainas when exposed to the sen breeze. These coce groved throngh which the eye can reach for miles, with the hovela compossod cntircly of the lertres of these treses spread among thems. form in some parte very pieturesque views; and if, as troquently wecons. the coltage is sinnated tpou the boreler of a wood, just where the woos cond, and the dark green foliage of the forest trees is seen belind, then the view is even ronantic; and if the wind is lingh, the rustling of the coco-trees, wud lihe dashing of' the waves, increasex muds the wildness of the sccac-

[^62]Howeyer to relurn. An scom as tle churth service was encled we mountex our horsce. and roxe back en Otr Lady or the 0 . We afighted at at cotage uhtich stood near wo the whrt:? rbo inhatitants $\sigma^{*}$ which wete arquainsed with some of our panyitile moosn was bright and the brseze moslerane. Whe sat down upon mats beatore the cloor, and were regaled wich quanities of young coco nate, a most
 rowards the beach; the tide was aut, and I wherved several large blocks of hewn stone, parkly burierd in the sand lolow high water mark. I enquired what had catsed them ion tae there, inat urak answered, that a diurch had diormerly stoud upon that sjoon ; and I heard then, and afterwards often save, thar the soa was makiag eonsidernble
 more each way. The neve churela of Our Lady of the O. was now building at the discante of atoout three hundred yards from dhe shore. Stange tales are told of the siraculours deeds oi shis lady: When the church was nibost to be rebuilt, many of the landlobders of the neighlourhood were desirous of baving the edifice urou their ground; chis proceended fron ureligions teteing. Lots wern trawn to determine upon che site oit the new chnerh, and althoagh maniTeatly inconvenient, from mayy causes, it has been erected apon the spot where it now starios, becunbe the sitroc lot was draw three times. \& very great objection. and one whicle in common enses would have been insmmomadie, is that this is che lowest piece of land in the neighbourbond, and is opposite to the place upon which the spas is making the most rapid adiances. Witer teo, fior mixing the lime and sant, must have been conveyced fiom a considerable distance; bute a spring of it gushed forth is the moment thit one of the labourers was making preparations for the commencoment of his work, and since the copeefla-ntur, or principel chapel, has been build all kiends of diseares are gaid to be cured. $T l_{10}$ facme of this thost powerfil lady has reachul fir and wide, and from the interior to the distance of 150 leaguer, persons whowere afficted with disorders which hal been comsidered incurable by hunam means, have comc down
to matit clecit offuringe to this ayaritious perstanage, whose powerfut intercession is not to lex shbtained unleas she ia in return well paid for liee 1.roulsle n:

As the rate fiom the sectarn to che seanshore was by faguarize,
 soas, whose soke arrand was to witip part of their posisessious, ugon contition of relict firom the malacly under whish they sufferes. The patrimony ol this churct is now considerable, from the numerons denatious which have been made; some of these have been adranced on credies, the slonars beiog fully ronfident of reparment in the manner which they clesire; others have beed manc, owing to the persons who gave them having becm foully cured; - faith has done what medieine could not do. Sinch has been the relinnee upon the efieacy of the prayers whicti were oftered upt and upron the power of the Lady, that the probability of disappointment. las never occonted to them; swat when the disoriler proceesls mane fiom the imarination than tiom the kody, I should suppoze ithut a cure may be effected, much in the stime mandmet that in other cotatien cares are saitit to be performed by medicinal watera; oil which, although the qualitios may be very excollent, yed the nume may surimse the reafity, in bringing about the desired end. The mirkoles of Our Ledy of the $O$. are performed in three ways.-by prayer from the patient - by drinking the water of the spring or by application of some of it to the part affectect - and by euting or outwarclly nyplying, ai small quartity of the salt which oozes from the wail against which the High Altar staudst. A village hias risen up around the chnech, comprased of

[^63]















 time 10 converse. At a late lout we set wif homewards, and

















 violent wave.
liom earelessmess lost our wiy; we wandered through the patha of the woods of Marmaruape, nmil we jadeged (rightily's ns if batppened) that we wete in the waid whish would lead as to Jagutribe 'lhere was much merrituent notwithatanding the disaster, for we know that dey-light would end our diflicultien, and it was now pask 1.wo isclock.

The inill whs continualiy at worik; I usually took the first watch, and superintending the busineas until midnight; scverst of my neighbouns and their families came to amuse tite tuselves in conversation, and ochers came for the purpose of earing sugaticane, of which every one who has tasted muse be fond.

About this cime a fernale slave died in child-bed who was generully regretred. She was a good servant, and an excellent wife and mother. The getiel of her lusbated laore much the appesanace of insanity; he would not eat until che following day, and then he only tasted fond from the persuasion of one of his childien. Until the time of my departure fiom Pcrathbucs, he hatd not recovered his former epirita, and he never apoke of his wife without cears in bite eyes. Even some of the other slaves were for a fow days atter her death, unsectled; the rude instuments, upon which they were in ike habin. of playing int the evening at their doore, were laid astule; - all merriment was discontinned for some time.

I was requested about this period to be bride'suman at the marriage of a mulacto couple. I agreed, and on the day appointed, set forth for Paratibi, necompanied by a tree servant and a slave on horsebact- I arrived about ten oclock, and found-a Iarge party of People of colour uscumbled ; the priest eoon arrived, and he too was of the same cast. Breakfat of meat and piram (a paste made of frugrivere) was pleceed upon the table; aome parc of the company sat down and ate, others stood, doing the satic, and others waing ias if they were aliaid al losing a minute's conversation, continued to talk loudly, and without ceasing. Y lave witnessed few auch scenea of confusion. At last we procceded to the church, to whith I begred to be permitled to ride, for the distance was considerable, and it
was somucwiat tante tronn an accident; as som as chan ecrenany H.as over, we relurugi to the hause The hride was of u der! brown colous, for ber fither s as a mayro, and jer triakther of mixech
 veil was throwr over ber heed athd shoulders; she wore white thoes ind white stotikinge with opon clocks. The bridegroone wat aldo or
 caded silks and nankeen pimtabons; le tiad on shoes with latge buckles, snd a cocked hat- beuth of thewe persons were your-4, and they see:ned to be droadfully fampered with the incrumsed stock of apparel which they carricd. Che scente at diwnce u's: a coumsterpart of the brestigat adiair. with clue addition of more coise and owore consusiout, which wece timseal by a jurger ansemblage
 as surod as possible; but would not on atily account bave riizsud being pressent at this day's wrork

On che night of Cbristmas ere, I did not go to hed; diar xe rave to there the disse to Gollo, or cack mass, as is custoruary, The priest arriveci, and the nigbt was apelat meterily. This person did not st that time coule regularly as a chapjain, bat he mas so engraged 3AたCwsids.

## CHAYTER XIV.





ABOLT the middlenf Tanuary, I81S, I went to stay for some days at the cottage of m arquaintance, who reaided upon the plain of barbaitho, for the purpoxo of yurchasing a few horses. This plnoce is ncar to the rijlage of Monteiro; but is is an rac opposite stile of the river. Barbalho is a plopis of tome extent, "pown whiek satcke are torbed out to feert; the soik of it is a stiff dark-evilunged clav, and the ytass whirh geows upen it is of a cmarse species: this beeorpes quite $\mathrm{d}_{\text {ry }}$ dirting the sansmer montas, arad when in this state $i c$ is set on firc, that the tender shoots whicb Reain spring up mas serve ad food for the animaly that are to graze upon it. Tho fire will run nomg the ground, urged by a frosh brecze; it will goruetiotes contract, fint at others sprast each way, preserting to the beholders a fiery wall. The sight is grand; it is upots a large scale, which gives to it a tertific appenances ${ }^{\text {the }}$ The inflabitants of the skirts of this plain carefitlly proservis a circle around their hospses and gardens, dear of vegetation : Ajprehensive of rame imeonkiderate fraveller who may chunce to light bis pipe as he goes along, and throw mway unextinguisherd the Gresitich of wirich he bas mate asp

The person with whom I whs stayiag pezsuaded me to ride sith hin to the sugar piantazion of Lnimith, which is distant six leagues. to the soutbward of Barbatho; be described the plave as being very は 179

Heatiful. and I consented. This whi the only opportunity which conveniently offered itself of seoing the country in cins direchion; but $f$ mach ragret mot having made greater exertions to visil the sontherr districts of Pernambucc. We pasied througl the bitmlet ard by the parish churel of the Varzgil A considerathle estent of coundry is known under this nume, cantainings some of the finest cane lands of the provinee, which are owned by mern of wealth, who know the value of whar they possess, and consectently che plantations are in a fonrishing condition. The Varzen is Jamous in Pernambuacan bistury, as the side of a great deai of lighting. Camaragibe, which is in the vichnity. or cather a part of the Varzea, and is spolien of by the historian of thut country, is now a flourishing sugar plantation. ${ }^{\text {a }}$

We reached tha sugar plantation of Cathushit, helonging to the Carmolite friars; it is in high order, that is, the slaves and cattic are in good comblition, and every thing upon it appeared chearful; but it does not yield so much produce as it night, if the strenglh of the labourers was proshed to the utmost. I loused intor the mill, which is turned by water, and sow some handsone mulato girls feeding the mill with cane; they werc dressed in petticoats of printed cotton, and styocks of cambric muilip, and they wore upon their necks and in their ears gold ornaments; they were singing in parts very tolerably. The differences becwern the plantations which belong to convents, and those which axe possessed by individuals who reaide apon them, and have a ditect intereut in every verifling increfge or decreasie of the gains, is very atrikiog. The eatiates of frians are worked almost exclusively by negroew who have heen born upon them; every thing

[^64]frocs on easily and jecevinsy If much is made, che butter satibhed is the chief for the time being ; bat if, on the contraty litite is obLained, still the aflitirs of the cormmunjt go no. tre proceeded, and al some distience beyond, distexnded from a high hill inter no niertow valley, whích was completely embosmmed tuy the eminticcs atcitad. anch so enctosed that we rppenced to incrute upren itr inhabitents in crossing this spot of their retircment. The gerass upon the lills was dyr; but all below was yet in fall heralth.

At langth we arrived at the plant:tion of Liaialta, which is situ-
 by several springs. The mill is turrad by osen, which is a late innprovernent; hurwes being u¥lfally cmployetl where water cannol be obtained. We dined with the owser, and he returned witfo tas to Barballo in the aflemoon. I wan mach dolighted witl, the diay's amusement. 'Lifis was the most keantifinl part of tle country which I visited, taken as a whole. The tills and che vallies art not high or extensive, but they are ulecidedly marker. Here cultivation farmed a considerable: featme in the country, the cane lands were excensive, uthd the mills for itsmanufacture inso suggav numerous.

On thy return trom Livinhas, 1 wisled still ta emain at Burbatho for a fisw days, and tlearetore the owner of the cotiage at which $I$ was staying went on tos Jaguaribs to remain there until I could join bim. I staid wirth Mariocland Simams. Oue mornint Manoel had gone to cut $\neq$ bundle of rerass, and on his return mer with an old acquaininnce, a creole negro; they guarrelled by the ways and as they cume ngar to where I was residing tha matter bocante serious, and blows were given and receited, both of the men being artued with long poleq. Simam saw this, took upadrawn sword which was lying upon a choir, and ran out to assist lis comrade. I weat out to put a stop to the busimess, and discovered that Simam had cut an enormous gash in the fellow's hest; the man was brought inwo the cottacre and bis wound was dresscd. An acquaintance of bine happened now to come in, and he took charge of the nefro, and carried him home to lis master. The negro was taking a land of grabs for the governor's




 belonged to un Englishiman, upo: wizics no mone ens?nity was made;


 heve puls me to moncly exjence and trovole. for he might have ate
 :any thing. Even in cases a.t mumer the proswutor, or aecuser its ive is called, Fias it at hiz option to laring the trie: iorwards ore no: fif he com be bribed or uticerwise purinaded to give ajs the accusutiori; the mater chonjs to the pround. Thas the spiris of law is changent, from the principle oi uriagiog ar: afencley co justite tor the general geod eze suciety, iu that al prosecuring in revenge for the crime whith he has comnsirred agsinse an inniiv ichual.

Foon after m: returu to Jargizribe, I wes one pevening surp:ised as the armivel of a white man, who was labeteti in atitora of blae sod red, and atcompanitul by a great number wi losted Sorses. and of mer, who werc elresed in jenthat ater cle mataner wit the Sartant; he cieliverad to mo a lettor, which 1 discovereli not to be d'or rue, bat for an Eaglibhman who was occasiohallg wits ule; lowever I of contre requested him so siay, and gave cirecrjons ïs, the accoujmodation of his fotlowers. He was at commandant from che interior, distant 130 lequrues, in the back sertements of the province oí Prraibe, at the fooz of the Serat do 'leixiest. He hed pus ost board of jentrutas at Paraiba a comsidemble chuntity of cotron, whicie he had brought down troul his craste, and he was now tavelling to Recite fur the purpoie of neceiving it, snd of purchasing reccessaries or rather luxuries for luss tannily; to which te appeared to be cxtremely attached. FTe soon becunne incimate, arad when be proceeded to Phecite at the close of a few clitys, he lext some of his men and

Jeorses ut fagharibes. It is atyoug the inhabitanta of places so remote as the districe lion which he came, that clanship mote pratiscularly exista; be fad with him ten persolts, most of whom were his cormpodres, that is, the consmandhal was sponsor to one of the children of each. 'This relationslip is accounted very sacred in Brisil, atid $\&$ bedieve in all Rumau (anifoljecuoutrien; it is a bond of brotherhood, which perunita the poor man to speak to his superior with a kisel of endearing
 servance would be sacrilegious. The commandant made me several visits froun lRecife, acrid after at clelay of two moncha, he wat off er lais return hothewawhs. He was $u$ man ot nust aletermined spitit, whose mame is respected all over the part of the country which he inhabits; and this respect was produced by his werleh aud individual sharacer's which brooks no inault; antl yet there was a natural goodness it his nature, whicla broke forth very st rongly whew he allewed me the letrers which he had reosived liom his chicheren, oseth of thom, even to the jonngest, having written hio him. HIe had lately loat Jis wife; his manner of speakitu ol her was mokt affectionale. He told me, that he hexk spme incention of taking orders as a secular priest.

Soon after the commandant left me the following occurrence took plake $l_{1 \text { sixil }}$ by, which is characteristic of the stane of the wountry: and similar to what frequently happens; althongh this of which I am about to speak, might have been moided, it the tetors in it hul beer a little oldex, and a litile less fot-l/eaded. A young man who resided in this neighbourlood had been lately aprointed to hold a military situation in the discrict, of which be was proude and owing to which he. had asswmed an additionul alugree of personal importance. He possessed a hirh apirited horse, and would sometimes turn him loose, althought he had no fenced fieldi into which he could put hira. The animat soon found out the canc land oí an adjoixing eatate, and deatroyed, considerably, the young plants; from hence be would open the gate of the field, (which from the manner that the gatea
 woudd come aud ailer batto to sema of the hatel worked homses.
 caundit earch tince', andi sent hoine wish a request thene cisis minht nof
 lanued by the forse, and remalered unfis tor secrices, at least fios some tinse The oworer was math rezuch, now as one at' his shaves was about to carty a mixsage to somes distarice, hat told hinn to ride thu officer": horge. He went, ~ and the owuer whs intorne of theis;
 betral the reser das., that the officer had evpressed we manty persoens


 spoke 10 him, say ing that he winheri to pass, which he cowald rom do unless he moved, and mentioning at the same zime that foe was informod of his wish to see him. The eaptain oplurried bis hoyse
 swonē; brit thiv lie clid art sho with ease, from some entranglemene of the bet:- Thic of her man drew hin, which was incluaed in an waskingstich, and vodic up tis him, fueting the point elsuse to his laroayt, Ihus shewiog hion linw easily due might by this lorforeseen acorartage have taken liz bife. The anulaten mare had how recovet ind from his astonishment, fend fan in between the harmeng strikitg thetrt atrd uriving them asimuler. They still remained for some minutes in bigh words; but the captain liad not, as was atter'xiardy well lenown, supposeti that the other was armed, athel therefore bis acdour for the coondal: had now cooled considerably:

The Indiahs who were in muy service, oocisionally requested leave to dance in front of my hwelling: I usually complied, and was ofter much arrused. A. larye fire was matle, thas we might the betcer iee what was going ons and that the cuenitg might the teradered soore entertaining. I frequently invited some of thy neightorous. The darace
fommenced by two men stepjrigy forwards, and wafking rimmed and

 gitayitg apme a thrill pipe; und we they went oxn ett intervals ehey







 increatyed, some new song wat intioducert, che tones became lotudes. and s.teeir articulavion more supid.

The sirer pepope of colonv too would sornetityes datace; but they only asked permisxion of me, twad hakh theit merry-makitig at the tincir of une of their dwat huts. Thtely dancen were like thoue of the Africian negroes. A ring wis foxnter, the guitur player wat down int a conter, and begam al simple tuxue, which was accompanied by some fivuluite son 5 , of which the burthets unas often yepeated, and Afequently tomo of the verses were extempore, atar contained indie cent aldetiones. One math stepped ous ince the ventre of the ting aut danced for some mitutex, making we of lascivioua nttiturdos.
 turn in roverneaty nut less indocenf, and clues the amusement con-
 Oo permitaei to dance; thisir musical untrumente nxe extrevilly sude: ore of them is to sort of drum, which is formed of a slowep skita, otreteleel ovier a piece of the fonlowed trunk of p tree ; azd onother is shatge bow with one atring, having half of a coco-rat shell or of a stavil gonid stoting upon it. Thit is placed against che nodunen, ubif the atring is struek witl the fingee, or wivl a womatl bit of wuvd. When two holjdaya followed each other unintermptedly, the Nlaves would sootinue their noise untilday-break.

I heve now to enter rpou an affatr which gave me muils tronder The laody belonging so the negro byotherhood of Olinula were very rorsunien: ly situated tor FFaniaribu, and tor unotiver planearion ant
 tomred around hime it minerous clan of relexions and depubdants. It was anonged that wie shiphil rexte these lends cqually; but to preFert compecirion, ome oi us unly sids to apoly for theno- and then thef were to bo dirjded. The owner of the planterion in question wits to make the application, and I restex atishied ; but I was sutprised to discover, that $I$ run mach rist of remainiutg siltivut noy part of them: thectione $I$ bege:2 to muke arrsugements for obtaining ckem for mpself. Whilst the motter vas yet in dontt, a person who was under the protection of the rival piantithion, senfe a quinber of negroes to work wion some land whicin luy very nosy to Jandiazibe I sent a mixatage to the orvier of titse men: purportiog thad the jand was teanated by a person of noy dos quaintance, who ycarly somed it froln the moobletbood, and tharefore I reqwested him to direct thaz his slaves sboolil retire. This he refured io do; cobsequently 1 collecued a number of mif tree work mace, sud rode towards the spot in question; the matuer tad become gerious, and as he was awirct that if a selufle festred, he aigitu lose the service of a slare, whitst I who was twconparied by fiee rimert, would not aumain any loss, he gave the degired directions and $\lambda$ retprined home.
i guined may objecr of renting the lands through the interest of soncue persons who wire intimasten; asquainted with the principal oftoets of the brocherbood. I atteucled at the coumpil table of these thack dutcetor3, and lieserd the wegutaents for and ajzinsist tbe policy of placing the whole of tine property in the hands of one person; however the matter was Alecided ws soon as ane of them mose up, and rewituled the reat that the community wat in debt, and that the netr tenamt wat prepiared with ode yemr's reut in adratice All objestion was silencen by this apecch sud the papers were signed withourt any firther rernark. The hlack gevtilemen came down to Jzcunabe
 friendt or this occasion，and mack：and whires sili sat down inc atie
 that of the chief of zive trovinerhooul aud of the nex renirnt Those followis amused us mucle；for their poliwences to eschl olher：arat to －thee white persons who were present sat atwkugrdly upan dreths but war diaplayed to alrew the innportance which they iwagined tbom－
 maker it Olimdat and the test wexc of the same rant in life，more or less．

Possession wat giver to noc，and every thing mapleasant exemed to have mabsided；when one oright lato．a thulstto man who resided at
 4 wisit to a reighbouring coatage，and thanonthe way，rhmecnen han coma out upats frim，aral bay womstanded bira to stop：but on seetine him shone，they had cetronted，I laul had some intination of what I was to cxperet，anc imusediately supposed by whom these persone ruast bawe been sent，and fer whom the blow wis joterded．I called two
 and the muluto man whe had given me the information，I sct off tonards the spot．They were gofle，but we pursuged；lionerer， before we reeched the nearest plantstion，we heard the beeny gate of tho Geid ¥hut to；therefore it uas useless uy proceen further，for the persobis，whosnever they were，harl reacked a place of safety． Cpors this path resided the families of the neighbrowhood with rwhom I wes the most intintare，and it was well knowu that I surnetimes retaroed bome at a laze hertr．This woss twrouleat district in which I had tixed my residence－Bone of the owners of the phantations syount were perpentaily squibsling，and $\bar{X}$ lad been lod into the same way of procerdiog：रrideed，if $I$ had ron done so，$T$ should bave teen trampled upon．The sheres of freulistess and of Timbs
 and Jonipapeing trere likewise with law－suits alwrys penting；ind their dependanits mever exsy．Some districts are in a quietur state
than orbers, but very fer are totelly without dirurbance; and there ave fex placiations in any parc of the province nbout dic boundaries of rite inand of which more than one law-suit has not been emteroc inco.














 of fifty ton, whe were prenared to perfotm auy sievice ot whotever danciptioce he might



 alchough she government anight wat be wble to destroy inis feudai indejpendeoces kill it
 since: he obsyod, and broutebt with him $n$ cansidereble nomiver of his deterfnined followers;

 somploined to bim of his arowed prative of harbouripg sesgesters; to which the priet
 that subject; and haniog spid this he innedintaly left the toom, wonneeg bis horia, and prockeded horaewaride withaut mokersation.

Another amecriote of this atrange mas way comimurieaned $1 a \mathrm{~m}=\mathrm{b}$ a a person who had
 turved a writ for debe upon him; the priest received them with great alviness, but shandy aflienwerde be ondered yome of his people co trike these two men nod barivess them int the imill (which was then at work) in the places of two of che borses, (eight of thew are-ntjubyed at the aime time). He thes ondered thas the worter shoald go on, and ruyt a



T wina often remincted by many of nus new accquaintamces, haf avery phantation ouglit to tave o chatplain; and $Y$ was told, thac wishout ap
 towards liee paynuett. of tho plipst, as is enstomary, $\mathbf{y}$ spolie co at joung man oti his brotission lor the purpost, and hu attended every
 preparing to leave tho place, I wats left to pay hin entirely myself; every one tras poot artd unablo to assist when the ding of pityment came- Thiss was only what $Y$ expectect; but I thought it was rigita to follow the usual custom of laving Mass suit recerplayly, on account wf thes slates.

In April $[$ anmaged witl the cennnt of the Jands which lie to the eastwix of Jaguaribe, and are Eabled Ixixanguape, to allow me to torn loose upon thew anf my cattle dering the rainy season ; for the field of the plantation wis not sufficievily large to suppurt so rieat it number of animala, during she whole yeart, ot the work w] uch was performed upon it required. The lands upon which 1 intended the culle to remain are about onc leasfue in lergth, wnd of about linlf the breadtl. Pant of them are ander watelv in the rainy season, and in ocher places thoy were covered wilf woods; but these werc, for the most part to be entereck oren on horseback, owind to the catcle feeding in then, and beating down the brusliwood. It. was estonishirge to see in how shot a period the cattle which had been necustomed to labour, became wild and comparatively ferce. I was in the habit of troing occasionally with anozher person, both of us being on horseback, to collect the animals for the pulpose of seeing that none were missing; we had maty hard diaces after thert, snd got

[^65]mave blows fron the biamuen oit the trees, Rec. Que of the oxen



 anothe:, which occtured with one of ms. peak-laciszs. The aniual
 last, I enquired o $\hat{i}$ an old black jum, who satid lenat te saw Jjith ewery
 but the only wate: in tixe stejghbourlsood wise 10 tye dhtained fiom a well or hoile, of which the cutrasece was nerrim: sud ale water considerably below atie stwface, The ruegro said, that oise day lue found the horsic rear to the well, but autable to reach the woter; ife gate him some, out of a half irourd, which rlae ofd man rarriced with him. for the pirpose of throwing water over his own hated. jo cleftrill of a better bath. The following gaty the brume wias therc. and this colttincted for weeks; but although he had at\$empted to por his land upon his ueck, the lowse never : blowed him te suize bis rame He wats dulught ac list by two nien, monsated on very vwift-going horaen, whom I sent for the purpose.

A shork time after the catcle luad been at Marioogrape, I nogreed with an Indian to gor and stay diere, for Une purpose of taking care of thern. This mar woss in my debt for cloathing, amcl ror a gold chain which he hul given to bis wife. FIe catme to mee a few knys after lis removal, asling leave to go to his former place of residence, which was at some distance, and to rake his fanstly with hipt. I anderstond what this meani; he would never hate retorned, and therefore I answered that he might go if he thotight proper, but must leave sonve pledge for the payment of the debt. Thia be promised to do. Julio, who hat been with men on my journcy to Seara, was agaiv in my service. Ite now displeased ne exceedingty, for he too, led astray by this fellon, wished to leare me; Julio ind been accused of some petty thefls, with which I now caved hirr ; he alenied latring commitied them, and that he was innocent I verily be-

Lieve. Whowerer I did not think so then consergentig this cirimatstance, ated his wish to feave mo with a man whum I benes to be very unpuincighed, zor I had lately had information copperiag hin

 that, being alone. I thould be induced to teciete to their danisumes,
 rampaspe, and Yhad some liopes thra all would have continued equiel
 day, the manayer cance to tell me that Frarcisco Joze- tle findion
 lis wite, Jatio, and a manber of other forlians. Thus ho bat de termined to go in detiance of ayy right whicia $Y$ might thave to his sericcs, or wo demand payonens of wher lie owed me, and in breath of promise giver lu : me ouly it dew hours before. Suveral ouher labourExs were also indcherel to me and if this than was, willjout rema-l], pernitted wo make his own terms, I Finew not sha might chase to do likewise.

My lowse was brought our; T beckoned to XFanoen! my wonstant compronion, saxd talling to some tiremen, who bad returetert fromb thatit work, and werc now ralking togetler in a grotipe; I saj:l, "w who
 currier, and a labourer of the same cast, and tibewise another alave, stepted faras-ands. Thets sexompanied by six able men, iochnditg Manoel, who were all on foot. I get off on horseitach as a round $P^{\text {sices }}$ knowing that in ancending she hill, they would psas me. The hill being surmounted, 1 again pushed ant, and wheo I arriverl at the sbort, but steep declivity which overlaoks the plantation of hohaman. I sasp tinee men belows, and beard the shrill fudian pipe. I lowied back and saw thas the carpenter and brickonaker bad ulone kept pace with me, and I hoow not bow they victe able so to do. I cricd out, "Yonder are some of the party." At the same moment, Moute, the bricknalker, fairly leapit down the steep declivity, and passed ray horse; we descended rpon the men, duix vere disappointed in dits-
waverineg that alihocgh ther were It diatrie ther were no: Jtose which We solught. Niow we waíced for the remainder ot our pirtiv, who soon came up, and wi returned quictiv by anorler path towaids Joune On out ateivel at the gate of fugharibe. I uns inhorred that the party had cuarzered itsejer in a corner of rlee ficld. in encis about the
 Fursciand foze fimsoif come out tr speak to nes and soon sumerul o:hers placed themselves rear to him. I sat on horaeback, holding a purney, mex men being on the other side utime un=il Amonio, the mulato carrter, the who liad laen woz-]aid a lond tione betore) came rownd and leaned agairsst the horse's neck, flaxing hinsseit'berween ne and the Iutian. I aftervards sound out. that he liad obecreck ilat Franciseo Joze held a drawnk mite, and Antonio judged chat this was intended agrainse mes or my horse, tor the lindian weil know that it the wounded me it would probably enable hirm 20 uscspe. Severai fiersons belonging to the plamation ind now joinel ut, ant the maiter ended by the Inclian allowing himself to le taken withour xosistance: and to be pur into the stocks; a party of mulatitos, or of aremle negroen, woudd not have submitted thus quietly. Saste at nighe he paid the debr, was released, and $X$ jaw no moxe oé lim for a considerable time.

I was now dismissing all those worknen who werc aot int debt to me, snd at lat only a fex persons remained, whose services I required, and upon whose character 1 could depend. It whs wery selfom that I visited Reciice, but whem there was a nccessity for so doing, I took advantage of monn-light minghts iv preference to travellingt in the claytime, and was on these occayions accompanier by Mancel. The wood of Merrueires through which we astally passed, is famous for the dumerous stories of ghosts that wander, and of murkers that have been committed in it. One nigit when the moon was not at a sufficient height to afford a tolerably clear view of the objects around, we wicre passing through this wood. I saw a finure before me in the middle of the path, which hore the appear-. ance of a man standiry sbill, I slackened my pace and called out,

 however $I$ chesivel hing $f \circ$ lve quich te no hamm mig̣he ls intended
 cousel ihis alarm. On snobluer occasion 1 sem, this same slave from Recite to Jiscuaribes, on fond, exrly in the morming, tellinge bias that

 cousage was somewhut doubtful. Nannel aveivesi at Jurruaribe and jantmesliacely frepared one of the pack-horicsi sayinef to the manarger that he was proilug to meer his master who was on the road alone,
 suade jint to gise up tis intention, aral therofore as be knew that the slave was muche tixed with his wilk, he eanuetionself. I mention thuse inecciotes for the puncose of shewing ine tiud of man, who usually followex me p-lvererer I went,

Sewern munths uow natceecleal each other without any disquiectude. I had another atmel of ague during the rainy season, which was however moneh less violent than then of the preecding year. I fikewisc met with an accident which had aewly proved fetal, occitsioned by a blow frown the fore fect of it hich ied borse; be reared and wituck me. but this was Lute more in playfuluess tiran with the intent to do mischice:

Xhad had sorme juinution Dè lcaving Jegraribe, owing to the urbulence of the meighbouthood, $\mathbf{t o}$ Iny ill heslill, anch to sonte disigreeable occurtenines which had taken place betwecu ny lancllord fand mysejf. Howevpr, as this would have bect vexy inconvenient, Iresolved to stivy, nutwichstandint all these and oither disaùvantiges.

Preparations vere made in the monsh of August for setting the mill to wooks the canc bud wor attained tlis gear its accustomend growth, in most parts of the couwtry, and that which I possessed vas particarlarly scinted in size, for 3 bad not commenced planting until

[^66]it was almost foo Jake- Ever: thing leing ready +owstrdx the end of



 rhe wetth of herver, for this breitela ai" refigioma obsarvance. The
 seedied to the mill. Tlie itutager ansi seversl othor froemen and the regooes stond srownd the vorks; a quancizy of cane wrs placed ready wo be thunst in between the rolkers, aqu the four negroes whose part it was ty feed the rall stood at theix posta. Two lighted carates wara



 which the dipped in a jug of boly warer, he sprintinci the minh sod the persons present. Sone of the negroes spranig formerds to recelve 3 govd quantrim of this savetifici water; and then the rasseer of the stigat boiting-hons: led tì way to the parciun of the wark, of which The bad the directions; and hare there was another sprinkitige Wrisern we retutnerd to tlie part of tlke mill in which the nollers sworl, the friast foula a large carre, and S . Jid the same; theo the sigatal buidy fiven the food - fate wis oretyert and the wruks were sont in motion, trod acowring to ryle xbe two mene; whicl tho priest and I focld in our hancle were that fist to bee sround. it hat Iteard much of this ecremony ftom persons of the country, turl I camnol avoid saying, that thahough sovoething of the ridiculous may by mapy persoris be atrached to it, still I could nor help feoling mucter respert for it, The
 ingo which ste produced by the Romon Gatbolic religitrs, canot fail to be serviccable, and if meat are to exist as alaves thix is doobtdeas the Taligion which is the best antipted to peraons int a state of anbjection, Slavexy ead superstíion are however tifo evils which
 conturtry.

The onrss, the oxen, wud their drivens had most recetved the priest's bonealimiou; thay urrived snume timas aftemyerdits bringing loadi of enact, and tie celts were ormamented with the fougene that poudd

 thoux oi the dwatitag-drouse, suad the pricet: complised widh the wibhey of lite chayiors.



 He sajd, that sow the couvery wits becooning quiater, -rthat tizturbarese were lens tiequent than formarly. That tlute wore bow

 beikh which west intencied to be klescritued ty the loteter. Thene

 fairs, and their doaite wrax to blecome wh funtous for colizize at to xender the batowledge of theix prosenteg on those occhaians nuficiont wo

[^67]kecp in awe any other individuals who nijolt wish to create distenbancen, considering abmsela en trivianest to iovenge their own and



 either io figat: the:n o: to dizmount, theo off their hats, und leant their lozses whitst they were ith sheje sifiti. These naen wore round their nocks stitug; of green beats, wheth liki cither come fiom the coast of Afrien, bearing the womderti poopersy ot convevity in satety their
 Mandingreares, Afticam ma:cerert, who lasd been brought over to Brazi! is siaves, andi in secret continued the prohilutited practice of

 that of clacir mastert These animaly hacl bcen tainght to drink runs, which thes mould do at their ownec's connmemin, fiving to all behoiders an opinion off sone supe:natural çalizits inatiog beent be stowed upon theng. Vicente hat been scelusithed with some of chese men, und was firmly pursuieded of the virties of the greer beads, and that the dogs imbibud from their roasters ceitain qualities, which made them supurion to all the rest of their specties. The expression of the math's coluntenance chathond entirely when he cornmenced the relation of these sturics; it wian al all times harsh; but now there was imparted to it a corsiderable degrec of unpleasart wilduese. When I expressed my doubts of the efficacy of the beade against a musket ball well-direnerel, his anger rose, but there was pity mingled with it, for one who had not sect those tianes of wonder. Fie secined to be glad that they were over, and that all was now quiet; bat yet he cherished a sort of regard for men whose lives had been passed in deeds of danger ; Ior notwithstanding the charms, salch be cousidered them to be, as the death of these men was renerally violent, owing, as Vicente said, to some unfortunate removal of the beads from the
person of him whose destined hour was arrivect. It wass nos, hourever, fron thi: penaor :lome that I hearilaccounts of the Vatentaras.

Theret was an ofd ercole nererg residing ins the twigltbauthood of Taguatiber whose dispusirion let hinn to explote all the wrods for zuiles azound in search of game; he preturred thix manner ol obtaining sulxistedee to that of daily labour with the hoe or bili hook. He a:Os aceluainiecl wirh the sizuilions in which the inest simber was to be fourd; und could, in many instances, bame the exacr spot upon which soutu particular tree stood, which whs rexquiret for any given pargosc. This masu ofien cane to Juguaribe, abd on these oceasions 1 arsially talled him into the housc to hear his storieq, whilst I sat in my hammock smoking. Hes was lond of tates of ghosis and Ifindingtciros. The latter are fimous, mong other fears, for hancting poisonous sarales, and cins, itcurding to his account and that of rusuy other persons, by peculiar noises or tunes, call these repatites from their holes and make thern assumble around thenu. These sorbecert profess to econder innosíous the bites of suates, to persons who subuit to their chaross and cercmonics. One of the modes which is adopted for this purpose, is that of allowing a tame surge to crawl over the hearl, face, and shoulders of



 haod. Tiue Valemten wis weil-armed with mosket, swozd, end saife; he requested tie







 Firy erant exerikne of the brothos of the nerson whoun he hud monedered. He could nat


che person wilu is to be cioredo do nobrese, cumed of smakes, se they
 the opemation, of which tie memnine, il the contain any, is ory


 the authorily of ore wr two persons. l'save heard then =cpeared bw
 the ropuled elicacy of the tame sharies al the flamfingucixos, os it they were somewlat sagerered in elreir disbeliet' of it: the reparit
 persons of the lower ranks who have itctul of them. 'These mona octsindy do play surenge tricks very cexterously-

I had noe beta so mtiche itconvenienced by snalies at I !ad
 thinough the woods, and poricularly int tha which leads from .hatuan ribe to Pualistas. The peth thribegh it is not match fiterinetited, and

 I could have well disperned I hinpperined to Jook alp whilst sirtisg in
 top of the wall wit the roon, in the opening which is formsed by the supporters of the coof rbac rest upuis it. I seized a pike and zans it into the srake, thus riveting it to one of the bentus of the noof, whilst I called to sowne person to assist we in dilling ir; bal: ita writhing nras so violeme, that it soon liberater iveit, and fell from the wall on the outsite, where soveral persons waited for it. The people who were prescut did not kwow whecher it was of the caninane of grapa ovo (ergy vater) specics, as these a:e much like so cacl other. The former is accounted venomous, and the Iatter is by many persons supposed to lse hampless. Both are of a sroy colour nbove. and yeilon underneath. The suake which we killed was aloout four feet in iergth.

The canatiand is likewise sometimes afled the flyiny-snake, is it












 pecount would be nowc dangesous to traveliefs than aty other







 prodice，cousequently，the recovory of che person whor has fecen

 minisheal actoorling to the qualisy of the oil．Ikutn is likesise ad－ ministerct so as to producte intuxicstion．I lave also seent a saball
 1 bave neen it，the flan Tas beran carchidly preserserl in a por． This wonld denote that it is not indigenous to the patt of the conntry in which I way；and indeed I was cold chat it bad been browght from steficat I rever gave its flower；the leaves of it ate smadl and heart－slioped；the stem is of four or five inches in lengrh， aud of a decp red colour，which becomes greenish towards the points
 T! the wonach :n:d the jeict ? ?

 by its deppoltationi-









 good ticai upow :




















 lítho the lice
 ixerculte-








 est a1.c\%.




## GEAETER XIJ.





A

 whece I remained tour zorte rlasas.

I hed been inironifeta xeveral months before to the fienar of


 platatice of Ampers had no entratre nomenpied at that xime, or
 ne = hojuse in the cown, is it is called, of ow Lady of the Conception, in which stiunds the parochial chutch stif thix externite rivasage
 te wies willingla give up to nue a porion, and the pritom, now dwellidys could be rict with. Hrovever, ge dexired that 5 whulel send a jerson to speabe to hixn; this F did, and on the mens telum, the offer of tire prison was accepted.

As I had writeen mo mention the dis upon which it wai rex intention to arrive there, $J$ was received by one of my people upon the shofe of the main land; and the caone which plies for tire yurpose of carring pas ongers acrosa, was ready to taicu the. The saddres were removerd from the horses' bacis, we eotered the samoz, ami shoved off from she sifore, the horses swimming by the side oin it. 'The pas-




 ercet，which is noc lordable at ligerg water and th licis sute we now








 In che formperous fays nf thit sorthewent，when ins rank in the pro－
 and arison andectaguth；loat untr that the decay of rice place fad
 longer kent in refair，and was now alinote io reins．

 leagucs th the mothoward of Fiecist，and is entirety seputticed trutn the maiz harit fyy a chamsel of unegual width．varying from one icague． to half a mile．The island daed not conrait any streath of water，bux in the neiglabourhood of the town water gushes from the hidn wherester it is duef for．That winich is obtained fouth the spritsgy
 perka ${ }^{1 s}$ ，tive most popatous part of the provituce of Pernambico， takent at at whole．the iminedime vicinity of teecife excepted．It cumaits chree selget aisils，which ate well stocked with nemroes；and many fiee persons likewisc reside uport the lands belonging to II 9





 way of lifis is frugat, ant yal wix. 'Fhe salleworks upon the jeland




 S上, side of the island, clatiths seniovily', wat its lecter tiuncs are pone
 ferred; and if the parish churds did now stantl thene, und reuder necessary the prosencil of the viear, the place would sho:cly be deserteld lt latas now a dewolute negletered spperarice, sun umpleassat stilluess, producing sensations of a vory difficent description frotr those which are exciled by the quientude of a place that hats murer witocosed busier sevencs. Ita site is the summia. of tiles S.E. puint of a high hill, which rises elnoust immediately from the water's edge-
 dence, - the vicarage, a low, long, white-wstslacd builiding, - and about fifteen oottages, is veryspawious; bul large pieces of ground now remain unoceupied; the tronges whiseh suok upon them have been ramoved: or have been allowed to decay and fall, giving room to banana and tobaceo gardens. The wentre of the square was covered with brushwood, axd a natrow part weat alfong the four sides of it immediately in finnt of the hounes, which sfforded to the inluabitathts the means of communicating with each other. There is one street branching from it and leading down towarda the erect, over which I passed on my

[^68]
 Bustry- the je:tronemo referme.



 woulal not, as it ajeght briag him interoouble; and indeed we were it
 with and an intsocate fix the old sestem ot exilusion, The empronce
 which ritas along abe whoice of this part of the soast. This opening
 but I corulal nos obtaik exact iaforination upon cho subject- From
 satad bouks jut oul out cack side of dife clamel, whicin separates

 they nearly reatli to there reef. Thar hat is easily aliscovered iturn the suta, $\mathrm{a}=\mathrm{it}$ is immediately opposite to the ehartaci ot river ituto whicha it leads, wit as there ase breahersi tos the norchivard aut southward, but note are to be seen at tbe $j^{3}$ tace wlich $i=1$ to be entered. Fiavity thetered che liat, some small brenkers will be seed a-head, or rather towards the south side of the chanmel, unless the tide ts out, and inern the water ix quice still. 'These breakers are larther in than the outermost point of the sourli sand-bank. They are tormed by some rocks which lie at a ebrasiderable dejuth ielow the water's edpra. I tried to rach them with a pole of two fathoms in tength, at low water during spring tides, but diul not succeed; ancl nuy catnoc-man said that he doubted whether another fathom anil a balf would eonch thew. The passitege for large vessels. is between these rocks and the morth sandbank, for the passage between them and che south bunk onl: admits of small eruft. I could not learn thut there were any other rocks or banks than these which I have mentioned. The anchorage ground is


 oibers aftor sati ritubs．





 or act









 To the Jeft in a marrow ata clewip thel，Dmuntiod on the upponite side


 in whers spocads wirkefy．

The lown of Concejrion was Inrmerly fondified；cle theree sides upon which it is ent losed by the sreck deelivity to be ascertded in rendsing j1，bave been rendered ath more grecipitate，weut that diey would naturally have becn，as they are cur perpendicalarly to the height of twelve feet，presematige a wall of eurela to those whto ascend the hill，and as the soil is a stiff clay，and the passing and re－ passing not comsidernble，the patla which lave been formed through whe wall are still exceedingly sterg．On che fourch side，entrenchments







'The distin'tions antwaling the ratele of it town were remberel xome
 tions still poteneses of iln former inuportamese is rlece oblitgation lay
 1.ival to the $V$ ingen ett the parixin chatack.

Jhanderace is onfe of the olderit settlements of the P'ortugesee mpons





 duwn of Conseption waz yielded to them, and with it the whole
 goveronabent should be removed to the islend "." 'This did not take plate; the opinista of those who proposed the plan leeing orex-tuled,





 ofpersite 1.0 the inkute or ujon rhe insirle of the ishand, it conld not
 ember the chaturd betore stic could bring her guns to hear. Benides

[^69]
























 Matjuc part of thei puiests werty st-ming in clat forse.

The parish at lammact bas row for sinne years enjoyed the bleasings whitb proceceled from tic ijpointmond ar the prevent vienr, Pedret sle Sotzat Testorio. His therio wias diseovered by chas governot, whony dac served at chaplain, and by whose application to the Frince Fiegent wias oltainad for him iris present situation. The zeal

[^70]of the vicar, fire the inprovement of the dialricts over which he hax edancoul is unremitele: he tolus pains to explain ty the planters ihe otility of athe introduction of bev moslen of zurivelture, new madtumery for dicir satar-milltand many alterations oi che satme descrip. rimp whith are kuowd to lee patentised with suceess in the colonites of wher aktiona; 3, in in is no: every novelty which wetes with his spprobetion. It is no eriv, tuskin to dooxen the decp-rootex prejuslicer of
 athet I have in mat many opportimjtias of hearing perxumion and entreaty made use of to many of liss parishioneri. that they woukd reform their latibits. if any improprieny of lehavione in the person to whem low was speaking hud cous to bis knowledge. His oceasional extemgute disennemis on subjecta of manality when sertied wianin the railiags of the principal cimpelat delivered in a distincte and deop" toned voice, by $i+$ man of romuramiling peasion, habiteal in the black gown which is restally wars ly men of his protession, were very improssive. TFe has enerted hipself greatly to incretaio whe civilization of the higher orthers of people in his fatixir; to prevent feads among them;-to pressuade then to give on those notions of the erancetion between the patrosh acth ahe deperdant, which ate yet too gensural; bie urges them to edncare ibuir etuldern, to bave their divellings in a statht of neatness, to dress well rhemsetwes, their wives, and sheir thildren, Ife is a good man; one who reflects upon his Auties, and whe studics to perform them in the best mannev possibleHe has had the necessity of dispiayirg likewise the interpidity of his character; hits fromess is a griest, his conrage is a man, and he has not been found wantinge. He is a native of Pexnambuco, and lias not degencrated from the high character of his provincial countrysnens, he was educated at the universicy of Coimbin in Portugral.

Fros the sitate of society and government in Brazil, the individual character of the person who laolds any office of importance. makes at mosist wonderdind difference, and indeed in some diseriecs a $m_{\text {man }}$ of an active mind with some w'ealth, butt without any appointmeot, bas more weight than a person of a rentraty disposition,
althot:gh rhe situaticert of the lacter meght give kint preat power, if fite thatgint !roper to exert inituself.
 the conversption wext flageth, and I ofter thourfot low very sape-

 I wos : fixit Jagy

Amorag the viaitors at itae vicatige was foam thbeira Peashat de

 priest, dilusing his stay it fumataca, ceonsed ovet to the mainland to tay miss it thu villate of Candorn every Sulday and twolidxy. I accomparitud bim on one of theme oscosions, and we were pudded over in a canoe. We entered the coinzge of a nata of colour, the rebief proson of the plice; pamotock war langinig in the room,
 of the horuse ratickly come in him, onc oc two of whom he took intu the hammocis to play wish. The ticmibles made their appearauce to
 ties, great and mıull. Indeed I vevor met with pny one who posn sessed mote pleating miancri. $H_{e}$ is genersily belaved wherever he is loown, but by th: loweri orders of preoplc more esperialy, he is quite adored. Inve loyite atquainecel with birn, botio belore and after the tione of which I alpeaic, and I naver hoatd him usiae use of a harsh word io any one; his manver and his tones of voice alyays indiated that froontons in bim greitly predorninated $A$ firee minlation mand of the narae of Bertokmen, onse seid to me in speakiug of Lhis piest, "If he secs a chitd fall, lie rens and picks it up ard eleans its face, mind lbis be doea not doy beckige any one is in sight to see fim yet in this manncri but because his beart 60 incilines $\mathbf{b}_{\text {bim }}{ }^{*}$, It it much ia be Ismented chat his exertions have not been

[^71]diearted to obtrining a situation ist which insa excellent qualitiea might lave a wider field for display; but he is attisted wich what zas loeen given to hitwo

I was manch surperiserl at the mannar in whirb zeen the people of
 ic in a respoctabla way of ijifis, tbe youniner femates weisy on these oceasisos gawnss of princtai cotions, Engficin atraw bounets, stockings also of forejign manulactuse, and neat sboen which are made by woikmen of the country. The young men afpoca in onelkeer pitntziocons, and jopkets of printed couzons, shitts of canderic mopalin, hase of English make, stockings sud scops. Juderd, of hate zears, since zrticles of
 subject of emulation thas atisen, and the means of slaswing it bas been afforded, every tacolest sende fouth its rival belles ard bearx.

I was disappoinied with a near view of Curaboa; but the councy belind it is picturesqur, being formed of atierear mound, which is for the most part coverest wirh wood; and tournges and mandiue kands
 5 will durelings. The inhalizennts *re mostily relsted to racli ather, nud the feee persons axe of unixed biood. Theciomris lamge bux there does not regida bere any wealthy white noak; they are a quiet, inoffensive people. The old man at wbowe bouse we staid winilut the keighbours assembled to hoar mast, was respecterd by alt the rast; he had the managemeth of all thoit wejgitity collearnx, sa being the rifhent person of the place, thonugh even his property was imail; and ta he wins connectent in naturul or religiout relationanip with the major part of the imstabitents. When the priest and I weat into the hoase, we found in largo party aitring round a rable and playitig an catds, whith these perrous somtizund to do until the church-bell Tang, apid the priest went oust to preprape for sayuty orrsk The ruajority of the people of all classes, excepring Inckizns, have $\boldsymbol{f}$ getear propensity to garaing.

There lifed at this vilige formerly a paor man wbo died of com

opition is general in Pernambueo and otbce patis which 1 visizecí, thath eonsamppion is contergivus; and from thais notion, any fursum so

 patient is rombed to it, and is slmmed dy every one erou receiving his fosk without thee heares approuching law hovel. I car conceive no sittuaijion thore wretched thon this, - to be ir at weitk smed helpleas states, and to be formaker, - to be foomeit to solitude, aurd to have, porltapa for years, no thourfles but these ol death; noching to relieve the mind, and to divest the attentiom- I know not, jowover, wheliner the opinion of contagion respectiry this dizorder is wotielly founded on prejudice, or whether there is some truth in it; for I bave heard from persots who are not liable to haty blecisions, many atorics which seem 10 indicate that there is some season ior the precuntions which tore taken. Xhey are, doubtless, curried too far; they are insisted ${ }^{n}$ bon to a sarage exceas, which fails not to bring to the recollecrion the eurtom of some tribes of indians, who forzake their aged, their inform, and their thying kinarnen.
$Y$ frequently visited the plantation of Amparo, which is comeducted in the rammer whites $I$ had attempted at Jaguaribe; bry here it was performed with more system. The owner of this place employed constantly great numbers of free workmen, of all easca; but the Indians Cornsed the principal part of them, nnd as their master, I suppose, finds it imposaible to keep them under due controul, (for the wish to do so he must of course haves) the disturbences which tre raised upon the estate and which are entered into at other places by his mon are very numeronst. But this person would have done muct service to che country in general, if he lasd manatged to keep them in due order, for in that case he would have proved the pas-

[^72]silibity of the intruducrion of free men as datily dabourers, withont che oprition of theix utwhiless tieing anawoidable, having keen uxiopted by great numbers of the planters. The state of Armpare is
 refertinger chat in the instince in ghestion, the eril proceeth not from the plan itself, but from its execution. it is tov true that the lower orcjers of peaple are utserty, and upon slight provosations, murders havo been commitad ; but does not this proceed from the propensity which cle higher riakis shew to protect those who weside upun their lands? Thus they display theit juHnence with men in office, twhen lisey plead for the pardon of at criminal, and teel a comsiderable degree of gratification, - ot self-importance in the idea that. an individalal should have been preserved from punishiment by their mearss, even though he had only been trewted according to his deserts if he had not been screcned. Where fovermment exists in a stace similar to chat of Brazil, weallu will neet with few obstzeles in the accomplishenent of its purposes, whatever these may be. *

In the month of January, 1814, the vicar samamoned the to noconzpany him to jillir, to which I ugroced with match pletsure. The matater of che grammar school, Igracio de Almeida. Forkuta, who is Thewise $n$ priest, wis of the party; he is a man of considerablo talent and informition. I-Iis advanrayes have been very fow, for he has resided almost entirely tupon this ialand; and yet his knowledge is far from being limited, and his love of it is unbounded We crossed the nurrow ereek which las been already mentioned, and proceeded alonis a path under the shacle of the caco-trecs, until we made for the

[^73]sunds The sea las: nade great elseroachniments tor ulout two miles





 the coto-leaver. It is it place of somstrable, and is likewise fre-
 The inhasiants suppert themsedves by their fisherises, by tie liase al their ganefedus and earoes, alsh litely, by the prepasabion of the cont-
 been reserady' establinded in the vicinily of hecite 'tise tishers of

 means of pens, that ares erenerally rond ructed setar to don water mark.


 thick zwigs. An aphetiones, constrasited in as similar manucer to that of a trap for catching wice, is left: int athe inctasure fartiost frowe the shore, openinf into the secund or sulalles inclosure; whiel has likewise at entrance ont the lirnd side, froun which raths at fence of basketwork to bigh water mark. Thua vhe fisk that comes in contact wish this fonce naturally continue along it, in expecration of finding an opening by which to excape, until they unintentinnally enter the pen. The jangates also go out to sea, suld fistz with che hook and itze, and many kinds of nets are used. Yer there is at times a great scaycity of fisla, stich is renderen by the oxdimances of ade Ronsish church an absolute necessary of life I was incroduced at Piltest to a Portagueze gentleman of sreat respoctability, from whom $f$
seccired in: rlate sequel much ciblity; tha viene also made mo as
 well-educated man. The formes of these fersonts had been the

 had been folz or tortiter ycars and now he wis determinkel to ace in
 greut ejries, whe first porblic edifice which was or sught to be raisex, was the privin; :und theretione ; P Pillae was beconing daily of tnore ioghortance, it was tit that it sliould have this requisito edifice. He ordered a nonbler oí trees to be cmi down, and in a few diass at roof was benilt of smadl laft adecpuate dimensiutns: and supported thy some of of these trees; the remainder of the timber wats to form the wralla of the buidling ader the manaer of a stockarke. it rude door was dikewise made, ad a pait oit stock was put into the phicee. "Nivw;' he said, " E'illar will thrive" Ple apprelaentled some unruly fellows with his own hands; he is : large and powerful man, and clue rexpuisite though langerous task of arremigig thae men who ercated disturlances was
 pled in any vommen ocenrobsee of this file. Nitwithstunding the uth son-ledged lumefir. whith was producted by the adtrinistration of this $\mathrm{m}_{\mathrm{in}} \mathrm{m}_{\mathrm{s}}$ stuch is the state of fovernencent, that itceerest was inade to prevert his re-appointunent to thr office on clae following year; and this influence was anceossfini. The was coo upright a man to he liked by those who wished whave upon theit estives a number of tutbulent tependaris.

The inhabitames of the island had entered inco a stapeription for buildigtg a briclge ower the creek near to the town: this wock was undertaliun tiriongt tlee $\mathbf{z}_{\text {cal }}$ of the priests who resided in Itumarect, and was ahout to be executed ander the direction of the master of the grammar-schoosl.

I wax much surprised in the begining of the ntonch of Februaty, at the arrival of a mulato slave, who had absconded in Nowember; hee came tlone, and without the cuitomary note from some person of my seguaintance, recpuesting him to be forgiven. He uscended the























Flbere if :nother raad to killar, busides that by whichathe vilar



 any parsons resitle uport tiem. Wany inelividusls of the luwer e'mssen, tirst oblativing leave from the properctor, lanve attempted to wax crop-
 enublater any one to prearnt the pharntions from treing deatroyed by the ants. IFits are to lie goth, wur al which the intuabitanter have
 is converient to the ands, and under thean they like to form the chiet
entranfes to theit cities. I never saw any ofier situation in which



 thent onichlt Gu: harece:

Soman witive of the milh are sith to be xeen at Engenho V'clteg, and there is a pont nemet to thent of colvideratbie depth, of which tradj-
 of on old A.fician negro. who las been hantumited. and now prac-
 lowsez orders हí pooyle I hava heard fis powest discusged. In is uxid, that he can eause the death of asy one who is pointed ont to him; ther unfortunate persoms win! lirmer for a long tirae, but his destruction is inevitule. This olrd man is likerise n fortunc-aller, aцd is apphited tos in castis oi untequeicesi lowe.

In M12:ch took place 1 Sue rearly friscival of our Lady of the Rosary, which was diracenti by nu-grees; and at thib period is chosen the King af the Coxgo ration, it ithe persort who luelds this situation has died is the cuurse of alie year, hats inom any chase resigned, we has been Nisplaced by bise subjects. The Curngo nechroes art permitrel to elect
 peramanges who are fixed upork may chinex actually be shaves, or they
 unock jurifaticlion over tise ir subjects which is truch inughot at by the Qhises; bur their chief power and superiority over thair contritympen ís shown on the ung of the festival. The netgrous of their nation, however,

[^74]










 Ayingenti drums teat:ing: and at they uppracined we eliseovercd emong them the bing und queen, and the veratery of state. Eurh of the toriuar wore upon sherr beadia crown, which wins partly corevod with gilt paper, and painted ot variviua collours. The ling was tresset

 wood, und findy gilt- Tlus queen pras in a blue silk gones, 2750 ar


 werte tos tighi and arhers ios wille for lime

 at whiche ant the trensuter of this black fraternity. (irmanifade) and some unfer officers, nind spon it stood a box to receive the manes:This was yroduced but shawdy, mach wo slowly for the apperite of the ticar, who had nut breakfasteci, though it was now nesrly midHay, for he and his assjosant prieats wete to clatant high Mess. Therefore he apmoached tid table. and zuegrin to exposinlate with these dirextors, duclaring thet he mould mot go to the altar until every exparace whe paid. I man much annuxcd to qee him surroumded by the biackis, and mbusing shem. for their want of punctuatity











 down; tho insignia were givest to lim, ainl the witar thon waill,


As the Jitry belonged to Ampalw, the enting. driabing, and dancing






 anidala of $x$ long ciral, of cuch aad of which one mati had hold, and these peretus veare standiag in oppostite ditections fir the phapuse of


 eovared who it was, he critel out, " It is wh master, and now I carc
 whalad knatinested hira. Vrancione suon arsivod, und $I$ seat Munnel, duone with him. The sivergear of ctie plansalion \{foz the ovoner was

[^75] arrifed, hecenste dey were anned. I told him ilar they were pot.

 any other ubite man; sund luevere 1 sent my peophe awny; bec xaid dost I judzent oorachiy of his fielings, ard somo owers stepped forvards to comben the words of hive overater. The negre wisu had
 some of the fice paesuns tuwards him; lut che affire would thet have oectured, if the orumeer had donc hix duly, or il any man uf weight and importance bat bean present.

About this time a acricud to ake a cortage with a simall piece of Iand attasched to it, in the neighburthoud of Conexplion. It was simated apon a sholf of the hilh, immediately bolow the sowr, and opposite to the villigge of Cimboa. Ille break in che hill hasi vuly spate sufficient to sedrait. of the cotcige is breadtfe wo shat ous either sike it must be reached by an ascent or dessens.. The wey from it differed litrie from that whielh was to be oblained fiom the town-hall; save that now to the leff:, the finuria abd the church verc to be spers folf: conceated firiong the baslaus planta and troes. All the lands in this aeighbourizood vere subchitited annone persons of several casts That whish immediacely joined mine on two sides belonged to the vicar, aud on the ibind sinfe it was inclosed by the charmel, whilst on the fouth, a nmmerous family of free regroes possessed a small spot covered with coco-trecs. Thesc latter people bad beeri mach impoverisbed by the obstinacy of the chict of the fannily, now decensed, in maintaining a law-auit for many gears, sbour the boundaries of his plot of lamd. As anon as I took possession, one of his sons wished to commence law proceedings with me, in apite oit several awards which had been given againat his father. I bugan to make o fence around the piece of land which I had taken, aud he innorediately did all in his power to prevent me from accomplishing my object; bowever, as he gaw that whatever he aaid whs of no nvail, he fet off to Goiana to zeek redress by Iaw. This I discovered uccidentally in












 from treasing rout of the piolls. The chansel is here much troader thenn near to Conception; inat there js almank now to che vemore of it, cipuen vhich, when the tide is out, the haises regain theit footing ; but mild the passate is distrensitg to the licasta; howerer we ve:k:hesl the opposite bank in sotety". Heme stantls the rillage of
 adge, and rimning paralled witle the chamenel; it is conoposed of small low houses a mariow path, took wis to the villuge of lasmado, a distance of twa leaghes, where we entered the great cuatle rond; we crossed the river of araripe, pansent through the vithage of liun, and about mididay stoppeal at the hamlci of Fontaínhas. IIeve: I put up at a cestatige, and on monuiry foumad that there was some dried meat to be sold ar a weighbouring hus somut of thtis was purchased, and whe cooked for me by the good woman of the cotenge.

The peoplo of Pamado are inmous for theie profictenty in the working of iron. The knives which are made at chate place are in greal request all over the country, and alchough these ate a pro-

[^76]hishited artiele, as $\mathbf{I}$ have belore numboned, wtill chey are xande fub-










 astele-steating is common. I was in tise constant thatsin of hear-


[^77]













 beciup palunsered, and ul *alvage being elatited, as oceats fiequenty

 of rum tor insturec) would have natarian shose who wint to afier to assist.

Atter ny removal in April to the 'Toctur, for san ny tew dwelling was called, 1 bel a liie of quidude; and to one who thix not kincent
 specirs of banishmeme, it would be a life of great hippiness. I went out joutg, and aherolere bad few unpleatant feelings of this kind to conctner, but when I reflect upon the line of lite in which I had taken iny station Y am lrappy that Y wat removed. The

[^78]








 For the lights seemet to flom $n$ [rou, the water-

The hoisse jn whith I now died: was a lange low iuilctign situatexl.
 construsted of timber antil buts. and the caves filt the cottage were
 were oaly three text. That dorm and wintow wert in tho gratale-med,

 chest, un whiche were deposiced the farinhers and the beans tor the
 stond ia large jar of water and upon a perg imsonfiestly above the jar was hung the usual ladio od the rountcy; - this is tormed of the halt
 it; some rich persons make use of silver cucose th these ladles are called. The soom which i have altempted to deseribe, twe cabips of very strall bod-chambers, and a kische:t included the whole buildùge At one side newe erceted a stable aind 2wo apartuents, which remained unfivished when fame awny, Hehind the cottage was the shed which covered the rppayatus for makiog thef farinhat; and zet farther back, in the same direetiots, the negrocs had formand their huts of mud and coro leates. I was now still nearer to the ehanmei, and so inarnediately zbrave it as thy sce cvery canoe or ratt witich passed to and fro. The land abmut the house was covered with brighwool and tall coco-trees, and therc were likewise 2 few Arajc trecs. How.
 zisul semmined ungolastructext.



















 of the treas tiecanice capitily darker suct drevker as the atm same behencl the bills. There is searcily any twilightit in those regionss the light is in a fow oninuleen changer into darkness, unless the nuwn
 ferceived very khotely utere s.\}e sotting of the aun. In the evern



 this liate apectes of impert is tlere culled morimen. The motevim is asually to de secn hoar to manigraver If rhese tormentors were too



 ticthe:

 during that trevioul.

 restalent at Conception, were sent to Recife tion thu puripose ot bitng ixumelateck widh ibe ecrw-pox ; hs soun us Idey roturnerf, the wirgern of Fgatange, a youmg nima of unsidusable madil whot had been edu-






 มน ther porsoni were likewisa nflikecel with the katme clisarcies, Tho infection durtakt, nod $t \in x_{1}$ or lwelvid peanotss died af it in the izkand. The evit indond sax only moppod by the incoulution of


 atian. A few however were sog match nlamod at the late ot'sotno of their acepuintunces, that they lived for many duya it the woods, scarcely visitiog any itabilation (if man in the drewh of iufection, It That froved that the small-pus dict not exint nt that timo upour the iskurct, tor avery encjuiry wiss made: - nuch paíns were taken by miany persons of zeal autd activity to sertify that this was the gese; ara indeet when that drewdial matarly mppears in any neighbour-

 citber the buys who had been sert to Kecite ware inosutucex with 1.ke swall-pox ibstead of the cow-pox, or that the cow-pox ilegenestant and bocunue an infemiont digease. The boys receivai the mather


 newly arived $\lambda$ fricess, thent the amaldnox is ofter spread shorvach, aftert the country bus lead a tong resphix from thes such dreaded dise oriler. One man who resided near to Conception cenegut the difenate and died; the had only sat for a shori i ime in etre outward noom of a house in the interior of which some chilfisen were confined who had bers incoculated.

The untaitunats resule of aris trial orf the new aismoter riveted maty persona in their prejudices sgainst ity ered sthers who had atrer

 lated had been to cianyel, tive poople dinj post appent to hrae tadkun a thorough distike to it. "co me thls wish a ranat pickionst fime; my extablishonent af slaves and firec poople mubsiated of trenty-five per sons, of whon stercely any had tond the ymall-pist. They weze too mary to inocaibute at once, mad therefore $I$ cut off all cermounication

 the nlace, and thia i could do without injissitice, fore the path led only Wo the bouse. I hed several fierve dogs, whick wene all let loose on this oceasion, notice being given to the neighboprhootl of such a measure hating been atlopted.

Considecable: zeal has boen sliswr by the supreve grovernment of Elazil in the introduction of the caw-pos into stue country- An extablishonent has been tormed at Eecife, consisting of a phytician nati two surgeobs for the fnoçalation, free of exgences of all per-
 ( 0 )


 time.

## CHAPTER XTV.





I





 the wound whikle thoy fave nade. Theie food is ertirely vegetable. I found them extremely troublasiome during the contiasance of the ralus. They wolld often make their way between the brielis of the floor artmy house, and piek up any provicles of flour on any grains of mizo whieh might chance to be stackert tron ja. On one occasion, two large bags of maze of equal size were plated in the soom at might; bue in the moming one of them whs combiclerably lower than the other; for thís I could not accoumt until, on a menver examiondion, I saw one of the rell ancs comang out of a smald hole which thexe was at onceside of the bag, with its load upon its becce, such soon mother followed, and so forth. I now aceidentally put ray hand upon the bade, ancl it fell still lower; so that an arch mast bive been formed within, either by a very siogular chasnee, or by the monifgement of the most axtraordinary insects.

LJow another evening they made their appearance in such great









 ween ocmujed lx！！ow i：conveying away the s：oul．I sublu nor

 upon these enerites，and imnediately conmenceti operations．There
 ance of harbouribg these imecre，ior the rad eath which liet ax some distance bolow the surfice of the goondis was thrown tep ail doound it I placed tour urgrocz jelow the bank，to ent it awsy lierpen－ dicutarly．They had now norked dung beluye the wer crommencen， fore war it was when some of the nesta were laid open．The ants came our in groat nurrbers，but torches of drjed coch leaves were ruady and a large fire，and with these weapoons we liad much che adr rantage of them－The back coustained wast wurbor wit circular holes of aloout six inches diamerer，which were plited at meequal dis－ tances from eath other，and many oif them were without subserna－ nouss commanications from one to the ohber Every one hada passage to the surfire of the ground，and some of chem had more than one leading upwands．These dests or holes contained a sakb－ stance of a grey colour，which bore the aperatonce of thick colbrebs pressed closely togethor；and on being squegzed in the hand ir had a Iiquid feel，that is，the skin was moistened by it．When put into water is swam upoin the top．We had placed a hurge brass basin mpon the fire，and filled it．wihb wilur for the purpose of putting this substance into in．In some of the circular holes there were no



 sestuescl-







 to blow the soloke fown the mactura; now it is uecessury to olm









 moist that water remsitied in the furrows round the bottom of enach hillock, after the mantar of dykes. On this accound. Y chought it

[^79]







 huido t:, ar 1 sumed wareh:







 burthere on aIt aides of if, atad su closcly pacised is to atphent to be ore shapeless mass of moring achntagece inii spusies of ants hare 3

 it melkes ise nist in crezs, a:rl not near to and anong the timbers of bouses. Thowe the size of this ant is very dimimutive, being sma aler
 ing to the nambers and deternined tousage di the blutio ant. Thuar
 and other froit trear, which are liable to festruction form the larige
 Areaderl invaders, if intie has trecn given for their rumbets wo be equal to the task:- 1 have sumetinoss saen the ernerasce ke the neot of the red ants siorronaded bo the dead of both jxurties; but anowith-




Tite houst in which I resitied at diguatibus had been in formor





 from：the blaci nat of the orathige iteex lyy this zume of doudg．One everinig I bed becn ablepp in my liananock，seta was not a litele sur－ prised on waling，to see that part of alet；wotl apponite to me，which Wess wlite－ivakied，wipeared to be coreved wilte a piicec of black cloth ；Í spw what it was，and could not welp shuddering，fuyt tite sight，i ray Sisj；was horrible；meyriads of thoge sots vere mavehing alorte
 resovered feom the Grxi surfrige，when ou leokiner round，Y saw thas the orber side if the rorm wiss it the sarne statu；I leit tbe place guick！y，and calling to some of the negatrex，dexifell them is briag

 we soon got sid of the reajor part of clse zntis；howevec tangy of them


 bed in the middle of the oingty by a scabstion in my feet as if they tata been pricked gently by nuany tiav，I jumped upizand as there wns a light jathe room，I scon porcecived．what bad cansed the ureasy sensucions ； sercali of the biscis drtts were raniving abotit my lega，and upon the

[^80]bed and ficur they ware efery moment becoming thare and mort numerons. I eseipred, and as soun as the bed cloaths rove remonelf the sceme of buraing the hoat of evernicy was reaclod.
 are black, and on the whols ane even batrou than the cestructive ted ant; bul I never sixw the tiona in graal numbere; and when l beve

 sperations. lbeir bite is stild atore pniniul than that of the red ant.

The ants were net my only persceutors at Ttanianca, for these were assisted by the copion, [terance artorvm), wlo build their eizormous nests, callad ia Frazil fucredkrs (pots) among the rafters of hoisers which they destroy in the conrse of time; and likewise they form tileín settlements zpon trees. They ofterimes made theit cosered ways along the white-washed walls of mị house, or up the door posci; ture I took every precantion against them, which was mose partictlarly fecerany in this instance, as mydwedtigy was not buile of the best kindts
 in athertipring to build with irencle, and I foand that $t$ his was successful in maing them alter theit procerdinga It is well knowt in that couthry by; all those per*ons who hive paid any attention to che sobject, that there ane certain hinds of timber which ase monte liable to be attacked by these iasects than otkers flowever, a persoa who was about to build a house, chose vo think, that the divinction which the carpenters made in the several hinds of tiracier which they recomponevded hina to ottrid, eitker procected from sunce sinister views in the men, or ferm prejndicen which they hat inabibed. Therefore, contriary to the advice of his workmed asd of his friends, he pust claged any kinde of timber whient were presentect to him for side, rrot attending to the quatiry bur to the price. The house was buitt, and be harb elrearly either reraoved to it or was upou the point of so doing, when it whs discovered thax tive copion had artacked some of the prixcipal timbers; and at last it was iudged experdient to pull down x
corniderable pati: of the building, withenst which the valole would dave fallen on sacerifite to the insecta A sulution of diae sobstonter
 the perswante io arruish disorders.*

I have oor yet mentioned all the peraecuthre; for besides thosie
 bave clsewhore spoken, there ave the maribondes, at bluck ínsect, ersembling somewhat the large rexd and the diocre ant in shape; the movibando is supplicd with winge, and has ;i mosil pairftid stingo in the tail. It forms its nest upon the hankes and krianchen of trecs; and in elearing lands, the nespoes shwiys proceced with mutel gures, that thoy may not he tilen mpawates by there iusecte; for on at nost being distorbed, they fy und in great ammixers; nutwithytanding every precantion, thia will ocsaxionally hapgen ; and K linve keowit a ragro to be unable to work for sereval days atier her bas been stung by theru. The parts which, are affected sweif and beconse iuthamed, and the sufferer experiences firs a day or two the alternate sedsations of viblear cold and busming lueat, simiker to the synuptomes of aguixh disorders. Whace the negroes discofer the nest withoui dieturbing its inhabitants, dried palmil leqves ate ligbted, and the niestia destroyed by fins The tosects ity ant ofterl wll Killed, but those which escape appeat io tes stupifed by the fire and smoke, and do not leave the nost. 1 have handlod thems when threy have been in this state, forr they beoome harmless; however, sfter \& sbort tirbe, their as

[^81]tivity returns. 'libere ayo three species ol monivomeder the black, of whiclı I have treatcul; the w-
 distingrimind trom the black mariburnela, idr bea:ing a xhill grealur te-


X'he haza also failed not here to silmoy me, for tley poripauted my

 I have it traveling sometimes breen made partitwlaty maenis at i.heir attacks npon the horses; for uricss wo had some aninals above the requisite crnmplememe, it wes necessaty to lanel them wiul thu: mownd open. The skin of un ow- is ofici homs up in a scable for tic purzuase oit kcaridig the brata

In lusiog open the ant-hill whicf I have wbote-mencionerd, wo alistowered it couple of the cobras de ducer cabecas, or ino-hended snates or wornis; eaciu of thern was rolfed up in one ot the suenk. These anakes are about eighteen inches in length, and about the
 Both extremities of the snake appear so be exactly similar to eacor other: and when the reprile is touched, both ot theme arce raised, zupd form a circle or hoop to srike that which bas molested it. They appear co be perfectly blinat, for they nevex alter their coutse do aroid stry objoct mptil they come in contsict with it, and then without curning aboun they crawl awny in an opposice direction Tbe colour is
 species of snake is often found in ant-hills; and $x$ have likewise killed tham in $\mathrm{m}_{1}$ h house; they frequent dung-hills and places in which vegetable matter has been allowed to remain for a lengtit of time unsemoned.

The island of Itsmaraca is said to be less infested with suakes then the main layd, and perbaps this opinion is founded on expexience; but some of those which are gelserally accounted venowous certainIy exist upon it A. rottlensuble was killed at Ampard two years previous to the period of which $I$ am syenting $A$ horsc died one
night in my neighbonrlomat, and bis deatio vias uttributed to the bite alta ymake; there was a wound tupent him, and lise bedy way much


 The namo whide it texary of antolope stinke proceds fromt the clestrtalion whicd it cumbes atmoty these smimals. The full-grown

 peets ihate jts jorey will pass wiclits ite reach; when this oceuns, it
 curiagy jt. 1 never emilf alideover, aller much encuitry, that it bad everthecm found in a ronpid state, diggosting its tood. indon have sottelinger been caughal by thens; but if ahe person so situatiol can


 farther to leat Jiom that of tay niher smake of whatever dencription.

 necasiousel, as lia tolił me, by the bite of a rattlo-snake; he mide thal. The lad been curod front the biten of snakes by a C'uruelor de courros or Whatingrairo, und had therefore mot died; that that. "dat the moon was sitrong*," lou tian out escuper receiving sorme injury frow the
 ehange of the moon particulaty, nut somotimes the wourd opened. aucl remained it i.hid ante for wack: together; but il ho was caretiol in not exposivg it to the eatly dews of the motning it woalkl agoin heal withott any medicistal applications boing mado vae of.

Che mosy berulifu] teplile which I silw wox the crara de corcth, or coral smatie or worm. In is about two feet in lemgth, wnd of the thic̣k-

[^82]Dess af a man's tlazhb; it is marked with blanek, whiten and red strijecs


Bat the snales do not eatuse so mach antoynace iss tau sumstler
 seldom enter the howses, nor are they vity frestuontly to be seen ion the paths or reands. But the wruphas carongtejeicer. or emab-spicler,



 slinctive secallection of the chance of mectiag with these or othor vermin of less inpportances becume, ac latsiana? wish ime (atcl intecd is so will most pertons) that whon \& was albunt to bugin in reaki, 1 closed the book in the first pIace siolemuly so as tu crust sung thing. that: might have creper ist hetween the lewes; when my late, or borns, or closths were put on, some precaution was rakente as at thiug of
 firding any chiog mopleasumt in that immerdiate instanee; but the precantion was entereal into fronn habil. unconseciously- I was one day bit by a kacraia; I had mounted my liorsc, and Lisd tasken my unbrella in my tand for the parpose of sheading me form the sun whon l had advanced Curther ugon my virle; when $Y$ was in che acl: of opening its If fell, suddeniy a viofent psin upon ine fleaty part of the inside

[^83]







 as that which I kuve relatud Wher 1 :bentionted 1.0 mome ol' my
 stite of s.l心e mools.
la the: memtif of Septemiser, I went up the river in a cumad ro Igen-


 river thene ate several jainath which are tovorgal wish mangrowes, innl are toe low ro be culdianaerl; the lanks of the siver are likewise tined with eho stume theseriphion of plant, excepting at one point to the [elt in zosing ups where Lhe: bunk is lijgha athal pearpendientat, ind projects eonsiderably. At iltis place ilde lorest trees corae thata to the eadie of the bansi. Neer to the tow of diguatect the mmogroves
 did uot origimally grow, Whlon thes tide is dun, tho quantity of water whide romains in the river is tritling, ambl in some paris ic is nearly dry; indeed, wore it not fior two fliteen of ineonsiderthale breuthl, where the witer is nlways sletp, a matn on foot trighte walk ulong its bed from about one mile above Cimbon to the town. I
 ctnoe: which held oneman bosidea mysell; it was with difficulty that he could find at chanacl in whith there was sufficient water to flowt our vessel. It way to Conception that the ]ortngraze earae dowri from Igoraratice for provisions, duriag the siture of thei latier place by the sivages in 2548 , at is related by Hans Stade. I also oloserved
whe of the kjors at which the satagas acectilyed to sink the boat


 Cal;thir.




 altaration is mose pleaviner; upon the beatis of the Ifiria liainha, the mangroves atre beginning tis pint way to cultivation at t!e set-
 any breake, and the Goiana is, I understatal in the same saste. There are plancaijons alonfy manes rivers, bux the owners content themselves with merely curting a path through the mumgroves down to the vater'a edge. so that to a wrange: who goes up the tivers the councry appears to be unimhibited, until the passes some of these small openjngs, at which a canoo or a jangada is moved; but the opersinces are very namove, suld are only to be swen on coming immediately opposite to them. The mikngroves grow as far down as low water-mark, and when the lide is out their entanghed roots and sprouts, and their stems covered with oysters and besmeared wish mad, are left uncovered; but at the height of the tide thesc are concealed. and the water reachucs up to the branches of the trees, so that those which bend downwards are partly wetteal, presenting to the behokder the view of a forcst groving in the water. This species of mangrove sometimes attains the diameter of fiftecn or cighteen inches, and the hoight of twenty-tive or thirty feet. There are two species with which I am noquminted, the mangue vertetho or red mingrove, of which I have been apeaking, and the mangue browa or wild mangrove

[^84]The bark of the former is nised for tauning, and the tiomber is much estemend ior beans and raffers in buildingr- but it cannot ba used as posts, for under ground it dexuys wery guickly; hor as railings, for it does nor bear exposure to the weather. A considexithle rarke is car-
 wexed of these plents, which in used as fuel. The cree grows agaiu as often $2 x$ it is cut down if the ronc is not injured, and with such rapirclity that the supply of the wood will, for a lengt th of time - I nucur) unless the destruction of the plant becomes more extemsite $1 . \mathrm{had}$ it is su present - be tilly adequate 1.0 the demand for it. The fish forsake those parrs to which the trees are brought to be cut up for firemood. This xnay be judged to proceed from the propertien of the bark. In a fish-pent, (cural de peire), near to my place no fish was caught after the fucl-cuaters had establisherl thenselves at the bridge hard by; of this I heard much, as there was some squabblinge upon the subject. The ashes of the mangrove plants are used the fencour in the sugar boiling houses. ${ }^{\text {r }}$

[^85]As I did not, in 1814, suppose wat, on the following year I should be secalled, I began to make bome additiot to iny cottigge, fry in wan ton sinall for me ; and besides it was old, and war comstroucted of bad timber, which catesed it to be much infested by the enss and the copinf. I had a considerable quantity of timber of excellent quality at Yaguaribe, wish hatl boen prepared by tres fire buildiag there, anct therefore I determineul to send for it. Pennission wiat also obtained from the omner of the Engenho Novo, to cut down some trees in his woods, fot whic:la he ultimarely refuriod to be paid, The woods of his plantation came down nearly to the water's edge near to Camboa, and were consequently very conteniently situated for ony purpose The building was to be cornstructed of wood ind mud, - that is, of thick posts supporting the rodi and smuller posity at fixed distances between the principal ontes, and the openings between each of them were to be filled up with mud. I onuld not help ragroting that such beautilul woods as those which were used should be eruployed in pur. poses so mucli bencalis their worth. The fago ferraor iron wood, which is also called the curafatt de negro or the tidgro's heart *, was the morgt valuable of those which I employed. The outward coat of the wood of this tree is not particularly hard, but the heart destrays many batchets. I bate seen some of this timber taken out of the ground after standiog for many years as a suplorter to the roaf of a bouse: and though the outward coat was crumbling ixto dust, the black heart. seemed to be literally of iron, or to have increased rathex than decrensud in lardnesst. This wood admits of considetuble polish; but tbe black wood, which is most esteenacd for furniture, is the jocaranda; this is also laard, but is much mone penetrable than the

[^86]froe faro, ndet the potish to whici it may he braught tis wore comFleCler*
 imagine, from the use which the Indinns made of it for Weir bows; it ia mouch uxed in bnilrling, aurd is acoounted alronst as ditral) as the
 withont breaking. Thes you ofures has the property of retaining fire for a lotg rime withond being stived, and of yielding is bright light if the log le ocursionally touclicd. The peatancry take advaritage of this, and clave ahte Jogs intor several usurnw splinters, of which they form a bunch; this heitg lighted, serves thers as a Hambeau. Formerly, Jikewise, when every thing was in a ruder state evern than it is now in Brazil, the sugat-works were lighed with logg of pato $d^{+}$arco insteud of oil; iudued I have hentd that some of the mills in the back settlements still continue this practice. The asker of tbis trec are used as temper in the boining housta of the millis The rutaber of tine spevies of timber in Brasil is very great, but I min myselt acrquatted only with a few of them. $\uparrow$

[^87]$4 a 4$

The touro is a large tres, anil af it there atre theoe aperics, all of




 for the fom six montus athe it hias beea cur down; fut the yellow cobous is after this beriuct losis and the wood becones oif a atity brown. The canues are aintosit extlisively matde of the pao monerella.
 ecranir purposes, as it is not liable to =rplit, bund, or break; it is perteeteferfy required for the teelit oi' the suggar-mollers. The wout is beatilichly reimed winh yellow and brown, but hewones afier some time of a dusky bionn colour. There is lincwise at tree which is Eded certro, but whuther it is the cedin on now I cantuet deurmine; the wood is hard, and is much eoteemed firs bitilding. *

I cut dismin sil the mangroves which grew alonig the bordens of my piece of land, and likewise some ochur kinsts of crees which yrew just beyond tie reach of the sillw-weter; ansong there was the nrocirat a small imegulbur tree, of wbich the wool is sofi, and not even fit tor timber; the oully use to which the plent is put, is, thet as (lie leaves have an aromatic smell, they are used in curing fish, wo whish they implari a sikght portion of their odour; they are placed apon the givast or boucort, and the tisli is laid uporn them; fish is likenise pracked in the

[^88]leaves of the arocira when about to be sent to a distanke*. The twe ofly grows in situations metar (1) the sea. Gond fances night be mate of it for the stalens take toot; 1 ased some of the treax for thats
 perty; ank :the thermer is sumplied with streng sharp thorns, this advantare rnmuers it permathle to the uwira. The motures erows
 soil is dry, moles no raid dinle for shme tinte after it hus been planted.
 spring of wither whicle aowed from the side of the hill. The cav-iseh was alsu found here in ubundanee; it is called by the peasants muctronar.
 but it is without thornx. and the plank is not wearly so large. The seced of the piothom is nsed as ath enteric: by the peasalute, and is



 an old tistlato wonan, than when 1 nover satr any one mote tike a witch; armi indetd foor olit Antgaja hast the rephitatiean of being somewhat ot it masedngherirt. Huwever she gave me a duse of pinhatita, which, I think, consisted off lisur seeda, but they were picked out freen a heap of others for their siaperime size. The these aceed most violent)y and effectually produced wanitioge, acd alrhough excesxive weaknesis followed the disorder was remtsved. 1 begeged her to give me ; quani.ity equal to whut she liad admitistered, chat I might takein to Recitie; this I blaewed to a prictitioner, who suswered thas he should have imingised tluat such a dose would have killed any one; but the old felumed sorceress knew full well, chat a diangerous disease

[^89]requires to be severely statacked ". After the ague lefo me, roy turse would nat lee silisfied untit she applied the thath of the metrontion trece to my stomach; ot racher the application was mates just below the ribs, whith she said was io prevent durcea; this she described as a havkness immedjately under tine lower ríb of tacla sidle, which somen times wat produeed by the arbe, and whith, if piecalutions were not
 mutumba lior many days, for I found that I was well, atud wancerl romore nostrums. The mufambe is a smatl tree, inwing a straight siem; it grows to the height of eighteen or t.renty feet, und to the dianeter

[^90]of taind ovemghteen iuches．The Em＇k is casily torn off，and is exrremeIy glalimotas．

The Geanedeire preta（black，）so callud trona the dark colour of its barli，is a large tree which grows in low marsfy gronmalis；the slem cortatins zo white juiter，which is mueh songlat．for its a medicine in ：all eruptire compisints ant in dropsy；it ia hikewiso given inwardly．The jutas is obtained by making an incisiontin lite xient，and learing avessel into whicth the leiguid may trop，There is artocher apocies of che same tree，which is distidectishced by the sumse of while goms／ring，and ahis is uscless．

I was obliged in Seplember to forsake my houze fir thue days from at mose cuac $\times$ peeted cause．A whale was strinted tupou one of the send－ banks at the mourly at the hartiour；this being the third time that the
 tion．fongaclus were semt ont to it，and when the tide came in，it flu＊ted， and wist towted into the hillour，where the persons who were employed in the businuss landed it，sts near us they would at light water merk，itt tront of and distanat from my house abour three laudied yarila． Wany of ny neightrours were oxupiod in makintr ail；for stely onc whe pleased was at Jiberty 10 tale as much of the blubbor as he could make ase of：and one man fairiy got into the whald，and laded out the fall which was meltell by the heat ot the sum．When the prople left the carcutse，either at mid－dily or at right，it was athached by numserous flights of arobus，and was literally cowered by them．The 1．res round ubout the spot were occaptied by those enormous birelis，which Whe wailing lion an opporturity of satisfying their boundless apperites． The urub̆u is nearly twice the size of the common crow of Eaghand； it is quite black，excepting ut the poinl．of the beak，which is while， as I have been told，but this I did wot observe．Wherever there brappens to be the cutctuse of an paimal，theac birds asocmble strortly after the death of the beast，and they seem to arrive in greater or less numbers according to the size of the runcuse The perasants ucll many stories about the king of the wrubu，who hat a tult of red feathers mpon his head，but I never heard any coherent account of this sovereight

 20 an ohl creole black, a ciappoler, to allow me to reside in las t:oh-
 to live with sume of bis triends.

## CHAPTER XV.






IN the months of August and Soptember, I was tilly employed in plantiag cance- llized a amber of free labourers, and was under the necessity in a great measure of atellding to the wark kyyelt. Of this 1 shall wake anotber opporturity of speahing.

Abober this time were iswtied ardars from the ensenernor for recruitintr the reginuents ot de line. The uten who are required are pressed into the service. The arders wete forwarded to the Capitaens-morcs, who again distributed them to the captains. The ditcetions were on this occasion, and indeed always are, that men of had character between the ages on sixteen and sixty shall be apprefended, and sent to Itecife for crolistment; and that every family containing two or more ummarried sons shall give one for the service of cle country: But it is on these ocensions that tyranny has its full sway, that carpriee and pique have their fill vent; that the most shameful partiality prevails; that the most intolcrable oppression is experienced; in fact now it is, that the whole conntry is sem in arms against itself, and that every means of entrapping each other are used by the nearest neighbours. It is one of those impolitic arrangements which are sometimes practised by govemments without perceiving their perniciors effects, and by which, as in the present case, the bad qualities of man-
kind :we drawn fornl, instead of every thing lexing dore for theit cotrection. Kevenge, vjofence, duceld, andi breacth al trust are oxbited,



 held the situation of chief of ther prowinte, now for the first time were issuted the orders for recrusting but thot until aficy dinch brocutar absofutely uectsitury from the state of the wergitents. And esen now, the directipse of the governur to the ofticers who wem to execute his commands were dictuted in the spirit of genfleness; - if this word may be used when despotism sends fuech such mandates ats these. The official letter recommencled impartiatity, ancl threatened puaishment, in case womads were inflicted without the most avident necessity. But many wete the instatceca of injustice whicle were compmitted, nod eould not reach his knowlelge. l'ectitions wesc sonetimes made to the govemor, in praticular insmaces of injostice, but these were otien of no avail, for the custom is, that the recruits should be teturned as being fit for scrivic as wash as possible aticer their arrival at Recire, and their names placed umon the tolls, from whic. $l_{1}$ none can be removed withour an order from the sovereign, although the provincial governor should be sware of the true state of the case.

A youmg man of respactibsility wis cartied before at certain capifant mor, and the altetmative was proposed to him either to marry a young woman, whon bee had never seen, but who happoned to be a burthen to those persons under whose care she was placed, or to become a soldier; - he of course preferred the latter, was sent to Recife and was oblifed to enlisc I heard of rany instancea of young men being pressed into the service, upon whone exerifons depeoded the support of their parents; and of olkers whose lives were spent in ideness, but to whom the protection of the captain was excended: and some of these were unlawfully employed in mpprebeuding otbers. I was in the daily habit of seeing a young man who led an
isite Jifo and who had mo duljes to periorm, lying in wait for some of his former cerizthanions, that he might give mutice to the captain of tove quite of cheir conecalluent.

For sonse veculs the whole coumbry sppeared to be allicted with it ciuil wive parties of ammed men were to be suca in all dircetions, it senvelt of those who had conocaled themselves. An impividual who was nor. vell kmown could nol stit from his gome trithout a gass from the eaptain of the district in which he resided, srating hin to be a marriced mams, or natuing sotuc mather eatise of exompaion. Nor is a man who is liable to be pressed, safe in his own housc, for the froma or troop would surround the cottarie in which any of these
 admittance; and if chis was deuied, no seruple would be enterfained of breaking down tixe door, und entering by force; this ofcurred to my kuowledige in many cases, in several parts of the combry. Alarried men ought to be exclusively employed in the apprchension of thase who are kiable to bu pressed. Ailitiu-men are free from acting as oppressors and from heing bunted down; unkess the goveraor applics to the coloncls of the rogimeul to which they belong. It is among the Ordenansas that the recruiting of which $I$ smin trating is carried on. Negroes and Indians are excluded from the regiments of the line; the formet on the score of colour, and the latter from their casc; white men and mulatios of all shades being alone admitted. The srcat repugnouce which is fronerally felt towards the service is occavioned by the smalliness of the pay, and by the want of proper cloathing, whilst the almost inceseant drity precludes any hope of working it a trade, or of pursuing ally eraploymont that is not connected with the life of a soldier. Several elderly persous told mes, that in former times the service was arranged in a manner totally different; that then no difficulty was found in obtaining the number of men required, but ruther, chat intereat was made for the situation of a soldier of the line. Farh of the forts mpon the coast was garrisoned from the inhsbitants of the meighbourhood to $a$ eartuin nurober; these entisted as soldiers of the line, were em-















 should (indeed matiti be sarried un widt a dirace sifew to the geesuline





 and for their country, hant tue result will bo propitions the the contrary, Bus has firnited popititiont will not ;ilaw of consictermble numbers of men (comparatively zjuatilin) beting empert up nachessly in forlis, without bejng ot any servies to the Stater, whilst the latede are covered wijh woods, and incleol whilst overy bramele of jestustry is requiring additional latads. Besiden if you tain al lagg force ar milicary service, who by being so kituret becoure superior to their countrymen, and yet form it of the worst of noen; if you bring them up withont any feffection tee the governoxemb, und widhout any hold upon the teati of the inbabitants, excepting that of being able to injure thern ; the likelikood is, that when you require theit aid, they will to



















 withome clae thougrate ot vislenec or butburity which they now

 fidly ; int bad babits arc not ensily contquered, and the chatuee is, or rathere clecre is a certanty, fat most of those who lad been ant eorployed were rometered worme subjewts than they liad beat before
 and the Rios Loge is willin ore dithetet, atud it was apon chis part ot the ruad that the ehieft disturbance sectneal ro be goilugg on. The capitaw-anar had taken it for granted that no ous sould give his childien for the service, and thevetore lind, without asking, intmocliately commenced operations of violersee, iaking the pesople untwarcs, that. ats ranay yecruits as possible might ba obtained, and bis zeal in the service nade manidest. From the Doce (o) Olinda, the








 ther ralls.

The river Maria Fevinlan is that which rans vp du Jaceiaribe; ics mouth is wide, tutd tite lour will sdmit ot erati ot some aize; but the cont cannot be considered as being wortluy of atention. 'lte:
 runs rapidly: In my was ap Recife along the beatls, I passest the turn al Ptas Amavello, disiant from atate place four longucs. It is small and buift of stane The eratrizut is litele :upere then nontinal. but it aforcis a comfortable resicictice for a captain or alde Olinda resciment. The port oppoxits to which the firt is aitusted, is nothinge more than
 anchor can scarcely be selid to receive any sheiter ; but the landing place is grond. Wardenhorif, the commander of else Dutch torees


I wos in the habial of conversing with several al the freople of colour who rexided in my neighbourhmat. One men particularly aroused me much; he was a short amel stout create blar:k zand a shovemaker by traile. I wats greatly entertained with his pompous mamuer; exalting in terms of extrivurant praise che advantades which Itambruca enjoyed, and the excellencites of Conception which was his native spor. in particuldr. He lamented much the reasoval of the mayyor and ehataber to Groiana, giving me to understand titat unchue induence had been employed; forgetural of the inaignificance

[^91]D' one place and alse importame of the oclie:. Fife also whe with




 wonld our town be uthrly thestroyes ${ }^{\prime \prime}$ The vicar of whon the man
 sad lis prejuclices is davont ol the image, and did mot like to say
 requrdul is the refresentations of than oo whom prayer st to be addrexsed; a value is placed tapon the weond juelf, and relişion alegenerates into maveideal idolatre:

Another instincer of the sime description of focling ucenmed at
 juage, which from age dand isternher vers dirty, A prietsh who usend to orliciate at the riapel of the village ir question, preforget jurchasing

 houste in ine neighoolarlioud, placed the thew tarly upon the aitar in ins teata ; huti lo: mung ol hime intahicunts would not hear mass when thary ferceivod the change that hat been inale; however the priest went ilurough the serise, and that1 returued whis own residence, which was at some distatse. The people diseovered that the image stall remained in their acighbourhood, and presetutly the house

[^92]in which it was shyental becomp ktown. The ownor sert for he





 the incomatenuse of the , distinter -

The sexton of the parisl? elsurely, who wase manato man, Fiad nouch
 extremely cousious it what he suid; and when questions were asked
 cated; be uscatily answered-" where white neat arc cancerned, the groc: must be silent $忄$." This fellow wats once forirling a curntle in the
 toraswry the pritient berpur to move resulensly. Dut Gonsalo quietly went on with bis distusi work, and added wich perkect anconcen - Come die, and have dune with yout memsense." $t$

The arcole nucgro of whom I hive above spotion, was fond of shooting the larger kind of gane, suel as antelopes, with ate called in she courity zeader, and pacax (casia jata). This was done in the following manner. A platforna of thict twieg was made annong the branches of a tree, at. the hicight of several ibet lrom she around, near to some one of those flante upon whose leaves or fruit these animals feed. At aight two men pliciod thensclves upon this platform, and when the fowsteps of the animal were beard, one of the men

[^93]would light a smiall taper prepted for the oceasion, and the other, with his "un ready, looked round for 1 we game. The animal was allowed to come ats neer wis semed inclined to do unmolented, and was then firculut- The men immediately descended, anid oftentimes
 spor for the purpows dibis is the usual manner of cthaining these amimuls. The tatu axdaciro or kesilimate armudiflo, was also sornetimes tentegh $\mathrm{l}_{\mathrm{y}}$ him. I regrested him to othain for me a
 which : the borde-was about six inches in length, and the tail alont twelve; and the hair of its sken was extrentuly wott; he enimal wes elinging closely to the loough of a tree, and its tail aloo was emrtrining 1.ise branch. My black Ëricust, the shocmakier, told me that the thad boen ordered tw eat the flesh of the tamanduà after luaving had an crugtive complaint, and that it was very beneficial for persons whe were recovering firm the hatirn or yaws He said that it Lad " a taste which was lite unto die swell of the anis." The Eloth way to be swen here occasionally; slso the cotio (cezeia cuudafa). The porco do fridia. the guinea-pig, 1 have only seen in a tame state. At Josyusribe, the capienta (thrivt capybara) was often seen among the manfroves; the Indians sometimes ent it, but few of the negroes will. There is also anocher onangrove animal, which is called in that cometry fruachinim; it teads on crabs, and from what I vould hear, bas much resemblsince to a cite, but the tail is much longer; however I never saw it. Neither did I see the luntra or sea-oter; but the skins of this animal are much valued for saddle clothis, bearing a higher price even than the shio of the jaguar.

I heard accidentally, in conversing with persons of the lower rank. in life, of an instance in which the Indisns continued their heatbenish custonns. A family resided at a plantation in this neightbourhood, wich had much intimucy with many Indians, but mone of the members of it were of that cast. When the heads of the families were from home, the young females were in the habit of meening to amuse themselver. On one of these occasions, an Indian

 curiosity, aboul several gourds whirll wore latuging $\mathrm{li}_{\mathrm{p}}$ in ahe roven,
 these are mumacher, which my fither tand mother aronerally jotz into their chesel. butt they have to-day forgotten chetr." "Notwithetatiding hey entreaties to the cemerary, her companion tuok hold of one vet the gourds, and moving it quickly discovered thazt there ware perbles within; they had band es to them, and tutis of lair urow the top, and they were cont and carved in divers musual tiornos. I-Iere this mottcr ended, bet suon afferatuls several of the mulazer, women agreed to worch the Indians, for they knex that theyouen dasee:l in their butis wit! closed doors; this vas an wieommorn proctice and inconvenient too, for tite open inir is much flationtes. They hat seon an opportunity of witmessing one $\sigma^{n}$ these meatings. The huts are
 2 view of what was going forwards. There wan a large earthen pot in the centre; and round this, both men and women were dancinsA pipe was handed accasionally from one $\mathbf{r}$ o the ather. Som atrerward.4 one of the Indian girls told one of her companions of a different cast from her own, as a great secret, that she hat been sent to sleep at a neighbour's hut a few nights before, because ber father and mother were going to drink juremer This beverage is obtained fiom a common lerb; but I never could persuade any of the Indians 10 point it out to me; thougth when they positively sadenced that they were wacquainted with it, cheir countenances belied their words.
$X$ had a visit in October from a strenge old man, whose age was generally supposed to border upon vincty years, Hic wus a creole black, and had been a slave upon the plantation of Santos Cosmo e Dimbiam in the Verzeat to the southward of Recife; he hadi setiled at Iguaraçu, after he obtained his manumiksion, havigg married when be was about seventy years of age, a young vroman of his oun colour; and he was now shrrounded by a yonne family. This
wan did not reckon his ange by yearn, Lut be the governors; aud ax etel of these, with ticy exceptions, momaine:l at the head of the prowince only three g cats. somethiag terer the truth coutt be collecton. This maxke of compmation is very common. I have ofen, on asining the age of aly person, receivel for answer, that the indiridual wincesning whom the enquiry was mude, Ind been born in the first,
 ]793 is also thl etar from which the peasants dute mady circumstitacess.

Old Apollinario was stating at Concoption witt a friend, and 1 we-
 pose of teaching some of the romp persans their prayers, at fank of which 1 knew hin to be font, as be considerct this to be a apritorionas uthion; one by whisth bee wouta lateve still furtber services to pteat in his favour with ahu Virgin and Sit. Peter: as le himsell'told me. Whon he came to grive hiv repat tas me ot the progress of ewth Jegras, I jikerh mach to kecp litu, that I might extrorse with him. Ife often spolse of the Jesuiss, minder the name of the Patives der Cirmofzuntiou; hae was tienil of therri, but the adked, "I intust not speak well of them, fur our prince does not like then ; and yel they did a great deal of good too." Hie ssid that they were true ard saintlike parlaces, vary different to chorast of the prosent day. Fie was much surprised at myy linuwidg any thing about them; he said. "Enu were not alive at the time chey wers leve, and even if you had been alive, you coold rowt batwe been in Pemambuco; therefore how is it that you know of their existence at the tine of which I speat." I never could make hins pericerly comprehend how I mbained ny knowledge of them. But be was not the only person whose comprehension, thus taken by surprise, coutd not contain the new ideas which were imparted, by the lnowledge of the existence of boobs spread all over the world, and of men who wroce for tiee insuruction of others. Some of these pecple with whom I conversed were mucl puszled, when I spoke of the variety of languages sund courtitifes in the world; "clsen," they would say, "f how is if that people under-





















 to come in whilst las rending, and woubd lie ctirious co bowathew

 do you real; is that a bresiary in which you are seadingty On another occasion, I was tohi hiati I had got, thee charatecer atoong the people of culour in the reightourloosd of being very holyt, tor that I was alwiays renctiage f persorn whe can reacl, write: and kesp accounts has attained the height of perticeion, und is much rowpected;

[^94]





















 thonglat this circumatimee wolld be recorded atgainse lian as ono of his hear idei ails

 couple of bearikis njoun which bee alegt in ate out-honse; for tue had
 The ball of lenves was athout the xizie of an upple. I conld not

 biltedy bevailed him fate, thes at his age any one shoulded wixh to hastern lits death, aud to card's him from this world before aut Liuly




























 grood innge without being molested lyy the foxess I hari dacks, turkeys, and pigovots; they young of these lani were tretacialify do-
 bas alorig tail, which is sealy and whitislin the colour of tho body is ciark brown, with two white wirfer fora the nose to the tind down
the boek; the head is lmag, ame the smont is pointed; it taixs an abdominal pooncls, which is large. Whens promed. it suon surfenders, by erailing itself' up, in its lail. I give tho description as I recerived it, for altho: igh we warefich of embinnes for the purpose of entehiry one of these animals, ve wore not auccesifinl. I hul soma geese at Jagavibe int at Jtamaraca, bul: liom what canse i know sot, the gombg ones were stamely ever rearch. Thy other persons had found equal diffictely in this resineat with myselt Guizes-fowls are
 sition renderi; it neceasary la keop thens: suparate from all other hinds cif dowi. 'There is ondy one pair ot' peacoukn in Pemambuteti; they ate in the gavdert of the widow of a merchant: in the neighbourhood of Recife. Snipes and wild tacks ate to be fourd in low marifyy gromads; and tpors the ialand at nermin timas of the year there were ervert numbers of wild deves. 'The bees whech I hivee seon at sume of the larm-honscy are presemed in a part of che trumk of the tree in which thoy had er:ginally been found; the tree it cut klown, and the portion containing the nest is bronglt kome. The bees are hatact, atod mush amaller than thosic of Europe, nor is their bite nenrly so paintily fine log of woon in which they are preserved is sswed or cut in some particular manner, which I aumod exinctly Kescribe, by which means the houcy can be taken ouk. The honey is always liquid. It. is used as a medicine rather than as food, for the amall quantities of it which are to be obsained, render the demand of it for the nedical neen fully equal to the sapply.*

In the month of Novemblaer chere arrived at priest upon a sisit to the vicar, whose exertions are invessint on every subject whieh relates to the improvement: of his country. I-Ie had now been

[^95]shating wilis a friend is the forinco of Paraibe, satat land made ; draw: fanswn chararters and several figures, ome of which bad that appare face of being incenclad to zeprown a wo:nan. The stone or rouk is
 in the summor. WV: at work in taking this tirawime, they saich, that. atrere were soveral

 rear, mad seek them out. I slonld have brought witl me a cojpy of theis cutious drawibd, if my depaiture finm l'ansambuco juad not been


I was invited about, rhis period to atend the fungral of a young married woman of respectialals famiky. I went about five o'clock to the howese of the vical', that I nifght go wilh hiny ind thace other priests. From hence we adjonmend at dusk to the chureh, whex che priekis, all of whom were altendy in their black gowns, put on over these the short daw rochen, and the vicar took in bisk hands a large silver cross. Whe walsed to the house in which the borly wits ditid; this was habited in the cosrae brown whoth of tise Franciscan order, for the decessed had belnmeen to the lay siscerhood of the Third Order of St. Francis; the face was uncovered, and the body uras laid upon a bier, the room being lighted winh many torches. Tive habits in which the bodies of the decensed lay brothers and sisters of the Thinkl Order sie dressed, are obtsined from the convents of St . Francis, and are saitd to he the lakits of dectised friars; but probably the worn-out dresses of those who still juy ars likewise sold, and thus arises a considerable source of revenue to the wonvent. There weee assembled in the room several of her male relations and othors who hat been invited. After a grood kleal of chusuring, is wax taper with given to each person present, and these being lighted, we proceeded to the church which was hard by, walking in pairs; ithe bier followed, carried by four persons, and there was chauntines as we went along, In the middle of the body of the chirech, a scatfold-
ing wis everted of about four feel from ihe ground, and upon this the bier was plated, the atiendats standing ronnd whilat the priests
 church, and there was lime in it. The finunds of persuns deceased
 affiord $u\rangle$ pely; thoush on the wecasion of which $I$ speat, the pricat; served without inly remucention, lor the soang woman was the near relutive of $a$ pries with whom the ochers were intimath- Likewisa nll ate neighbours who are of an equit renuk with the decensexl, are invited wo attead, that the cercmony may be as splevidid as possible. Notwilhsianding the manifest inconevenience, and the mischief which the unwholexomences if the cuatom might, and perbaps dacs cinuse, all borlies are buried within the churches. Indeed the prejudice astanst being burierl io the open air is so great, that evon the prients would but dare to alter this mode of proceedintry supposing thate they wished so to do.

Towards the end of the sume month (Nowember) it is customary for the vicar to determine upon those persons who are to sustsin the (exjuences of the nine evenings previous to the festival of Our Tady of Conception, - that is to supply the bon-fres, gunporder, oil, \&c. Fach evening is provided for on all chese orcusions, by one or more persons of the immediate neichbuourbood, and 2 greater or less expence is incurred, according to the means and the inclication of the individuals who have been mamol. It was my general practice to arcompray the vicar to church on Sundsys antl holidnys, returaing with him to dis Jrouse to brenditust I was in the church when he read over the list of the narncs of those who wore to provide for the nine evenings, and was somowbat swrprisul to hear my own in conanction with that of a neighbour for the minth night 1 had however, some suspicion that this would be the case, for I hasd beard some whisperings upon the subject among the secondary people; the custom is, thus to keep the individuals who are to be concerned ignorant of what is intended. We began on the following morning to palce preparations for the occasion, and sent to Recife for the coloure of
















 crosses, lighted (up in the sirne manuer in scueral parts of the spalare. The ehurch was crow'cled, inn hue wise at the people was great; we guns were firel at intervats; the musieiatos of the lisstival, with violines and riolonctellas played within the ehtureh, and the Olipta men on the outside; and rockets ware let af oceasionally; indmest the confusion wai axtreme. Some ot the athetcrols horses which stoad in all guartats, fied to railings ot to door posts or leald by little children, whilst their mester.s were amusing themsclves, took fright and broke loose adding not a littse 10 the noise and bustle. All tie affisis in and about the chnurelz ended at so lare an hour, thet the fandangros were deferred until the following cvening. The band fand been playing close to the door of the ricse's residence, which whts much crowded with several of the first familics of the island; and in the front of the housc a great concourse of poonde was assembled. At the moment that the music ceased, an impratisatori or stlozador, as these persons are there called, zet up his voice, and delivered a tew verises in praise of the vicar; be then praised Our Lady in a strange
atsle. giving late every iime efrithet whether appropriate or not. whitel, fince to his recollection. Then the runt changer wpon every body lic could think of and I laeard Lite nome of I-Ientirque dis Costa, 10 whicls mine was meamophosed, thrown in crery now and thene among the rest, 1 was jaraised ier ony supertor piety, in griving so
 avery arrangeament wats made for the fumfungon. A spacious piatform wit wected, if the middale of the arca of the town, abd inf front of the vicnt's dwollinge, ralised abrout these feec from the fround. In the evening forn bratires wure lighted, wo being on exch sirle of the sitatice, and soon aderwady the pertormers made thoie nppearanceThe stely which torms the basis of chis atnusement is invariably the siate: the parts however, ave noh writedim and are to be supplied by the abuors; but these, froms practice, know more or less what they zre tor saty: The sceme is a shipat sict, which, duritug part of the time is sailing regularly ind agendy along; but in the lacter pint of the voyarge she is in distress. The cause of the traulness of the weatlier remains for a long time uthnow"; but at last tlie persons who ares on boaral dixeover that it has arisen froth ilte devil, wher is in the ship, under the disguise of she uniten-topmast-man. The persons yepresented, ate

| The Captain, | The Pilot ar Mate, |
| :--- | :--- |
| The Muster, | The Boatswain, |

The Chaplain,
$\left.\begin{array}{l}\text { The Rafunt, or distributor of the rations, } \\ \text { The Vasourtr, or swecpet of the decks, }\end{array}\right\}$ Two clowns;
The Gageiro du Gota, ol mizentopmast-nıan, alias the Devil
Twelve men and boys, who are dancers and singers, stand on the stage, six of them being on each side of it; ancl the leader of the chorus sits at the back of the stage with a guitir, with which he keeps the time, and this gerson is sometimes assisted by a second guitsr player. A ship is made for the occasion; and wheu the performers stepped on to the platform, the vessel appcared at a distance under full sail, coming towards us upon wikeels, which were concealed. As

- ©











 stirend and the Hame bectane brighter, more persums wert motel loc-



 state of the wip ant the wealber. These acters were efreased in old
 cecetead by the boanswith and the two clowns; the furturer gate his
 ofleer was provoked to strike one oft thent- int tatucla echatice wit passed buwaen the three. Soon aficrwands catrot ine eltapluin in hix
 the clowns, as they where al' the mat of the perdiancors, The mosit

 at last so ve:y indecent, is to reble the viene oreler bis dibers to be slat. The dincers exme on at ench ehange of secme, it maty so sny I wett lwome suen atter the vients doors ware closed, anil dich mot see the conclusion ; bat the matier ended by throwing dae devil overboard, and reacbing the port. in nafory. The pertormers do niat oxpect parmont, but ruther consider thernaelves connplinentoch in beinar
sent fion. They were tradesmen of scveral duserjptions residing at
 regue-ted so to du; Jut if wot, many of than whated mose [wablably go
 afteir expencos. and gate ibem elwir food during their stay; pley were accompaniud lay deaj tamilies, which were alt treated in the rimac mamaer, to the acinsber of alsout torty deersina.




 theatre at liecifi.


 sarnilgask, atod wai fienmerly quite surrounded by water; but the



 me to tiake of my spurs, ambl we thent passed throtigh cle gater, ient ahong the covered way umtil we eneerod the ateit in the esutre, with the claumel atat urloct buildings aloug tho sidex of it. The conn-
 formal mats, felloleteigutite; and ath the other officery are of the stane standing. I was introdiced so the chief, and we then proceded to the cthapel. Forgetfin of necessaty tortns, I had plated ouscolf wext
 mandant woult mot give up his right, athel therctore reminded me to nove, that be mighat take that place fis soon as the Mrass was

[^96]ended we zook our leave．Bonc juta of the suate of the warks may





 in tive wails．upen whicht，insceati al going found to the githe，he

 Lík nime I wus there，the gantison consix．od of militis－men；and an
 cemostinces which toak place only a silogt cime before my visit is the fort Tlso adjatant，who was butween sevency and eishety ycels of nge，threacentud Le sirike or gganly touchcul with his cune unc of
 afficer one excning．and gave him keveral mlaws of which he died． The soldium absconded，and was nat purain lseard of．The guna were in a very Ewd state，and the usual supviy of powder was merely suif－ Ficient for the salutes un days of folla；there worv inalced some heaps of ballen 4 pon which the rust supassed the quancity of aourich inum．

If the course of this ycur some of ray friemals fiond Fiveife came to secmes $\frac{1}{}$ hed been ofien ni Amparo．and at the houses of weverul other planters；but $Y$ a not garlicularly mention any of these visita， for they did not discover any thing nev．I wend to Recife throc or four times．After the wommerocurati of the raids in 1815 ，I left Icamaraca with Blanoel about four orclock oute atternown，buvirgor bcen dbeeitucu thas late by unforcseen oucurrencos The weather was finc，and as the moon would rise parly，I thought f．hat the everi－ infor would be pleasany；but when we were about thee leagnes from the isiand，the rain began $t 0$ poar，and when we reached the pladits tion ot Inlianata，which is half a longue firther，wo were completely wec charocirh．Immedistely boyond this place，the roud is on one side bordered by a stee，bill，from which the water rars down in such
great quantilics, that the hoskey were nearly un to their deners in it;


 Mancos tidd lice xime ; enth of me likewise drank ar good tose of it.



 enution, but to beciag semponed t.e the climate.
 ins. I met with Antonio, (the man whor was way-latil when $x$ rowided at Thentribe) and hee wished nse to staty tit his coltages, but I Profered gring on, now that: we were comgiletely wet throbly. Ats we were ascouting the kill beyond Pamabibi, 1 was in hopes of at fine night,

 lightringe a ant in going through illo woot heyond the valley, the dhak-

 :llimal upert which he roile wets of a grey colour, approdehing to while, abst mince was sometinew touelding fis, for he rorle in front. When we orrived near to the hill whith deseonits on the side nearwat to Recife, I reminded him to keep to the left, for the precipice is datigerous on the right lund side; but he difl not underatand we or his horse was restives, wet was foing too much to tlee right, when he slippusd ond fell or ore site willin a few yurds of the place which he wits to aroict. It dismonnted to assísi Manoel, but only snw tias stituation by the flashes of lightining. I asked him aller bithselt; his korse, and his piatol, tend to enall gnestion received for answer that all was well. I then satid to him "Whare is the rond;" for I lued wrned xound in diflerent wuys so f'requently in assisting him, that I ltarl no notion of the direction which we ought to dake to filud the road; and indeed at one moment I had formed the idea of romnining where we wite
wnit the break of day. But ona again asking Manoel if he was ecertain respecting the rigyth direction, hiss answor wis in ath angry voice, for lie was wet end lonvixerl, "I see the road, don't tye aftaid Sis."
 side-ways, for the gromend wias 100 wligurery owider to the rain to allow

 falling. The width of the road is about six fest; there is on one
 rents in the rainy erwon; these heve namen the fround to till ins, and have now wom it quite awny; on the othar side, the declivity is less perpendicular, thi it in auvered with the short stumps of trees, amourat which there is no possibility of tresulitg suticly without a sutificient light. We remehcd the botwon without accidenc, and when we entered the villuge of Beberibi, the rain nearly ceased, and the night likewise was clearer, but tur mewe jasd wot We crossed the litl beyonrl Reburibi very Nowly, and urived at Agela Fria, the wesdence
 and two o'clock in the morning. If the weather tud heen fine, we sloould lave artived between eight and rine o'clock in the evening preceding. The inscinct (if I may so call in.) which is posscosied by the Indians, by a great number of the negroes, and incleced liy many individuals of mixcrl casts in finding sut the right roads, often surprised me, but nover mote than on thia occation. I could not see any thing, but Manoel cenainly did feel that he wn quice aute of being in the right yalb, else he would nat have spoken so positively; be had a considerable stock of courtuge; but was always cool and collected.

At Agua Fria I passed some of the pleasantest hours of my residence in Brazil. 2 Ba owner of rhe place ia an English gentleman, to whom 1 owe many ohligrations; we pere on rnost intimate terms, indced I felt as much at home at Agua Fria as at Kurnarsca. The spot wras in the rudeal state when he took possession of it ; but although the soil was not propitious, the ritio (setulement) was
idrancing; he hat built a grood house, and was erecting cmithouses, making fences and planting useful and ornameminl wees. Thes place had been indieted by red ants. Dut with much lathour they had been descroyest, by dignging into the ground för the nests, Bebirul the house there was a lalie of considerable exieble whisth had been forisied by ihe coutze ol'taripulet having been stopped chrough die accurnulwion of loose white sand in the part which is now the road; so that the road is higher than the lake on one side, and the land zelong which the river formerly ron on rle orber side. When the waters rise in the winter the lake ofetflows and russ acruss the road, but during the grevtest parl of the your the rood is clry's or nearly soll' the lake was drsined, the settlement of ingus Fria would be worth ten cimes its present value, for the boundaries of it aro the channel of the rivilet. This lake is covered wriv with reods, rushes and voarse gronss, and the roots ot these plants have formed a thick coaning over the water, witich mould not support the weight of aman, but mutch labour is required to cut through it.

There were numbers of jofraveis or atligators * in tbis lake, which rexidercd it dingeroux to work in cutting away the wrisea, which it wis needessary to do. for the purpose of forming an open space in which she horses cauld be watered and washed, and indeed the grass was eater by them when ocher kinds failed in the dry season. I may herc mention some others of the lizard uribe. The carateant (fuccerta IEv(ara) is often to be met with; afso the dijtaçu, whith is, I believe, the Iateria tegrizin ; this is very common. There is likewise the orlango, which is smaller than the wher two; these three specios are alll of them eaten by the lower orders of poople. The eilma and the

[^97]tagartizux nere for itmall species of lizard, whicit arc continually to bs-

 Sc. and tlact are 1.0 my eyas rect pretty erciturcs ; their acrivily and


In my rides to Recifo thomuth the Merueira wood I slways fanad
 the anpof twi or ox-coadl, both of which mude a most iljazgreeubie and disnsal noine; they were particulaty active or the taire njeht which I hove above doscrifucd. The conshant noise whikly the erickecs mithe هs sour as abe surs sers. fails not to annoy alose perzous who hate receptly arrived in the country; and I recollect that on the first eseminge which $I$ spent in dic country on mex arrival ar. Pextambucu: $I$ stoppod sevciol tinues when conversing, as it waiting to let the novisc cease before I jrousender ; but chis wort off (as ir kloes with erery ure), and latierly I did not leear , be noise ecen when it was gooken of in my prcsenes. Howcrer if one of them gets into it house, chere is no restiag unirl it be dislodged, owivir to dle shriljoess of its whistle. The body of the jasect is about one inch or one inch and a half in

 or the rhite cricker ; it has likewise a sharp whiscla; may not rlais be the swime insect as the former, in a clifferent stitc? Therc is likenise the gryllo de jeijaniz or hean cricket, which is so ealled from the destruction which it makes in tive plantations of the Fronct beart $;$ it is of a dusiz brown colour, approaching to black.
 plantation of Mivesveira, which is tive larges, gund the most valitable in crery respext of the three in the islond. The vicar, another priest, a captain of the orchenaryses, and my゙sclf, set off carly on the morning of the dity apprintod. We rode throurgh the plantstion of St. Josm, and spoke to the owner, who was preparing to follow us with all his fampily. He is a Porturacze who has accumulared a large fortune in Brazil, and his matriod one of the danginters of the
owner of the pluce to whiah wo were eoing. This permon armed his immediate rejaitives will in the conerse of a short cime probsbly poussens one Inelf of the island of ftamatian We were ruceined at Ma-
 grantmorher, who isia widn Indy und the owner ot' he tritele made her
 netightumating families. As soog as the christenibg was over, the day was devated to cening and dutnking and playing at eards. Winen xhe men had lut mhe table after dimer, wae clorlt wis again huid, and the liadies sat down to dine; bert one of the priests deciured that this
 several ollue meri, aid thas they tined as secoutl ritne. 27e evening ended tather boistemonsly, but good humouredly; the wine was poured out into tumblers, and these being as diecquently conphied as if they
 night; but those who rempinevi crept off eqrly and quietly on the following vorains.
 We sex off on the Sarurday aftermoon, snd on our artival found that. the whole dian from Macaveirat and St. Joum lated ruken יp theic gunrters close to the house which we were to inhabit in the evening a tight roped dancer was to exhibit int tle opee sir, sad at the appointed hour be took his stition, und wont through several of wo common feare of acticity with consiflerable neatness. He was praid in a sin-
 goes to the hoalth of atie vicar," then, affer the purformer had danced for a few svioutex, he stoppod, and the elown cume to our pary, and witt muny jokes and much pretended ignorance of the sicar's person, he found hitn out and asked for a donation, as is the constom; this being accedod to, and the vicar haviag girca what be thouricht proper, the clown returned to the nope-dancer, upon which a shout was set up by those who were round aboul him, which was intended as an acknowledgment liot his geoerosity. Thea the clown mentioned the name of some other person, and so forth. Atiet ithe dancer had



 rimb of:


 * *






 with oflecre dud nol always latypen.


 wittossing the elristening of the king of the MEors. On this day
 them and oulhery of the ialmatiants ot the neighbotwhemed wers divisted impo two parties, Christims and Noots. A strane uats erectel at low

 height at the cummentempint of ine gpors by whictimears the stagewas

 of about three hundied yads from each other, and ware placed immediately above laigh watef mart. The Christian king ant upous one of then, and the Moarish king upan ate wher, both of them being habited in fine flowing robes. The uffair begion lyy the former dispatelinger one of his officers on horseback to the lazter ${ }_{1}$ Fequiring him to undem





















 sonuel ones many; balitwote, aud shocs and buecistes.


 fidence, as it hof was aware fore his peroon tras secere owile to his
 friend of the :atackable prison sot beiner the elaigf mugistrate of the pance for the wetr. On the morrow all parties wase prepariener co return home; we shw the tadies set off git horseback, and aceordiry to a strange custom, is mutriber of nocal patis were collected. and as they weot away from the thoor the persons who remained beat the

 latistiter.














 leading: - 1 was young, and was indepetrdent. und Intul powcir. ATm
 spoicly, I liked ro have dependints I miflut luave beconte so arbimaxy, so mutelin lover of a thalf suvage litis; 1 mighe lave contramed
 been clissatiafienl wifh what is raciond and to be desired in this
 tluat country, with the reekns of crossing ille conlinent of Eivulh Americs; but 1 have now given this up fiom unavoiduble circumstunces, and evom uny wishes have talion nitiother bitas lint God onIy knows whether it nany now yet be my fate to onter juto tho seliome; accidend; and inelinations over which I have na controul, muty so direct. England is my motniry, but my native atsil in Pordugat] ; I belong to both, and whether in alse company of linglishmen, of lootugueae, or of Brtzilimens, I icel equally among any countirymen. My



 gether, ind redeber late boen lizund wanting.

## CIAAPITR NV. <br> 

A


 quite bopeless to expeet:a rapid chunge of systein miriong inen who
 themselves; who were astonished to learu that Bratgil was not the only coundry int which sthgar was made; who lanow nob, or at laast did nom krow until vory tasely, that there wat any other ontion than theix own; whe imnginerl that Hortugal had porsessien ot every rhutg worth latwing io titis world; in fret, whose ignorinee wis castrema. Mans of the plianters of the inland country, und even amont of those nems to the cotst who reside entirely rpon theit extates, were, and mary stild are, in thia state. They continue year afler year the system which was followed by their fathers, withont say wish to improve, and indend willout the knowledget that nuy injurovement could be made. But the freadom of commereial intercounse with other bations leat here, us in cuery thing olse, bonl its effect, and the benetits which are derived from this policy are increasiatg most

[^98]
rapialy. One of these is to be perceived in the wish which many of the planters diaplay to obtain information respectiog the manugcment of the British and French plantidions in the Colanebiatr islands. The persons who dhus in enriching themselves, are dikewise doing the greatest good to their conntry, are the propriators al sugax-mills, wio reside in Recife altogether or wha male freguent visits to it; these nuen enter into company, bear what is poing on in the worId, read tue fow books which are to be obtained, and soon assunt to new ideas. Many of the merobants now powsess this kinct of property, whicht hris fallen into their hands, either ins payment of debta or by purchase; and thuse men have now prejudices to conçuer respecting any particular plaw of operations, Sorne of the improvemerts which are propused are of such self-evident utility, trs to curry with them conviction as sood as they are mentioned.

## 

TIEE lands in Brazil are never arubbed np*, wither for plitnting the sugur-cinc, ar for phy other agricultural purgracs. The inconve-

[^99]* YGE OT THE MAcidres.
"When the machine is charged. with powder, a usinll exenvacion is inale wirh $n$ pick-llxe in the centre of the stump, The anachine 5 a shan placed ill it, wo chat the plus istmedinely zouches the wood. Care mug be takers to ftll all the vinconceien either wid.
 tands; hecounce all of the se that are of anv value are maturally eovered





 wise is great exury time a piece of fand is to be pat umaker culd tivacion, for chee wook must be ent down atrests; and although it catingt have reacherd the sotne size which the orighesi tiguber hiad at-

 siderable !hicknass $x$. The wooti is suffered to rematin lupon the iand until zlue leasce bucome diy; then it is sot on fire, and thene ure destruyur wirh the beh; hwood and the smallet branchies of the urces. Heaps are now made of the remainilig tiraber, which is bikewise burnt. Cfins prowess is uriverselly practised int pecporing land for the cultivation of ews plant. I Jare often beard ile method nourh censared as being ingorious in the nimin th tife sibl, thungh whe crep immediatel- succeeding the operation may be rendercd more luxnridul by it 1 luve obser.od that tle cabes whicla gretv upon the

[^100]









 incuid is raised round ubout ulicha; indeed is this was reghecterl, muntr of thesce roots would nemain too much axprosed to the Enent of tie shn, wat would not continuc to regetate. Some lancls wild contibue to pive rations for five of even sevoce yeats; lum an average


 ret.an for the tronalide which the cleanjuge gives of

I bave ubove spokion whate particulnyy of hight lends; the luw sud

[^101]marsing grounds, called in Drazil -wr=ens, are however alose which are
 not possens some poriout oil theiv descriptiun of soil, the ewops are very aniqui!, and sometimes almusi entirely fitl, aceording to ahe greiter or less quantity of rain which masy chance to lath in the convere of the ycat. The waraide are wanally conceced with showt and closi betuhwond,
 thiny soon become ensy to wrork- The swil ot thecse when it is now, receiver the rame of päal; ic tremblea uncer lue pressmee ol the feet, and ensily anfonits of a pointed stick being theusl into it; ard though, dry to appearince, it requires draining The mafaper marle is ofen to be rapt with in all situalions; it is of a grepenish white colour, and if at all we, $=$ ir scicks very much wo the hoe; it becomas semen dry st the surface, but the canes which have been planted upon it seldom dial to revive after rain, oven though it wat of it should have been much fill_ The white marle, barra branco, is less frequemrly fourd; it is ascounred extremaely productive. This clay is used in makiog bricks and course evrthen waxe, and also for claying the suyar. Red earth is oceasionally met with upon the sides of hills ocar to the const; but this description of soil belougs properly io the coteon distriets Black mould is common; and likewise a loose and brommish soid, in which a less or greater proportion of sand is internixed. It is, I believe, gecerally acknowledged that no land wen he two rich for the growth of the sugar cane. One disadvantage, however, attcuds soil that is low and quire new, which is, that the canes ren up to a great height without sufficicut thickness, and are thus often lodged before the season for curtiong them anrives. I have secu rice planted upon. lands of this kind on the first yenr, to decrease their rankneas and render them better adapted to the cane on the succecoling saason,*

[^102]








 20nt iz. En s3y-
 olir,













 of thais.












 Bensil at the prement day, and hia powern of obdertition, indues bre to think that sepue of




 tharefore it can onfy be used tor the distilierics. "
 it with boos. The negroes stardid in arow and emph man wtrikes bis hoe inte the eround iomodiately before hims, aud forms a restact of five or sis inctaes in depth; lie then falls back, the whole row choing the samas and h.hey contiane clits oporation irun one side oi the cleareal land to the other, or from the top oit a bill to die buthoin. The earth which is thrown oul of the trench remains on die lower side of it. In the British colonies ilnis work is done in a manner nearly similar, but more systemistically + . The lands in Brazil are not measumed, nuil every thing is tone hy the oye. The quantity of cane which a piece of land will recuire for planting is estimaterl by so many cart loads; ant muhing can lace more vague clisum thix mode of compintationn, firr the load which a cert, can carry depends upon the condition of the oxen, upon the naturs of the road, and upon the length of the canc. Such is the awkivard matee of these vebicles that much niccty is necessary in packing them, anil if two canes will

[^103]about fic into a cart lenflangys, wath move will be convered tian

 hies boe been foand necessaty; but such is the clamny soustruction

 passibidity ot thas relieving: 1 the hbourers.
 in the bottom of hiotr, ardat are conved with the erreatest part of the mould which hadk been taken out of the trench. The shoots laegin to rise alme the surface of the ground in the coume of duedve or
 the spronts proceptiag fioted tie stumps of the crecs; and whaten athe Inad is poor, and jrodiaces a greane= ghantity of the former and contains liwer of the lather, the canes rejuire to be cheaned if fouth time. The cuttings ate usuaby from aweivo to eighteen inubes in length, but it is juclined i] at the sharter chey are, the better: If they sore
 not so large as when the cutinum are loreg, aut they by arys accident fail. Cluc darnes whieh are used for planting are gererally vizoons, ii any exist upon the phantation, but if there ate none of these, the inferior plant cances supjly thuir places. It is accounted more economisal to make asc of the tatoons for this purpose, and many persons say that ahry are less diable to rot thoth the glant canes. In the Bxitish sugar isionds the cuttings for planting "are comononty the top's of the cures which have been ground for sugar t." But in Brazil the tops of the canes are all thown to the caule, for chere is usually a want of frass during the senson that che milts are at

[^104]








 each whe; And altbongh wien ilsey are smane the linct may ; flpear


 some pertons weommend teat a portion of che dity leaves shoudel atro
 pratisect.

The propher seasom for plating is from whe midulle of Jatly co the niddle of September, upou hight lands, and tron September to the
 ofthe soil induces the p?atrer th candinke his wock until the to-
 swer ath the necensary parpoics. The first of the siades arex ready to bo cut for the mill in Suprember of tilat following yetar, ant the erop is finished asually in Jinuary or Febratary. In the Britiela serger





 fbu leaver of the arx nmel ot' ot in



islands the canes are phanex firm ingast to November sond are "rifue for the mill in the berimning of' che soccand zear." Thars this planm in Brazil require fyon thirteen to fitieen monthe 10 atcain its droper xata cion the mill; sand in thac Calnmbian jsilands it. remains sadnding sintecn or stwenteen anontl)s. ${ }^{\text {d }}$.

I did nol tisecover, nor liear it montioned, (lazi ithe eme is iiable
 deing much injury to the plintieljons in whe Brinisi colonics. The ©ane is subject antainly (s) several jests. bur whey are of a miture which mave be remediec. The rans dustroy great quandinies $\dagger$, and :he fox is no lass fond of it ; and when he gexs anoug ic lio nakes dreaditul haroct, for he is onty satisfied by cutring down great unanlyars of canes. taking only a small portion of each. There is also it stribye carstom amerig the lower orderi of peophe; they supple not in graising a fietde, wo cun down and make a bundle of ten or a clozent

 in this remner is incalcutades, in the fields that border upor mach

[^105]
 perty.


 tice. Thes eanearusf, than is, the rime ot the catne from which the

 catite is fikewise of nes rese. fabde are not yol ot sulficiom value to

 country is yta 100 scourty romolie every man hasernad what he possesses, ot to whlige finn to dian it ant give mourt for othersi, has, iupereeptilay, these others recpuite that he shatad do se. For the preseut, the plantat futh thatt it is more couvenitett ter thange trom


 tronble of cleaning thacim.

 of that actlement. I believe the two mpecitsi of came are nuchatike, and 1 have not been able to discover which of raent it is. Irs advantheger are so apparente idate after one trifal on cach extanc, it has superseded the semall eane which was in general une. The Cuycone catne, as
 eane; it bxancless so very greaty, that the ktbour in planting a piece of fand is muclt decrenesed, and the velurns from it are ut the tame time much note comaideruble It is not plotited itu wenches, but Inoles are dufg at uqual distances from oash othert, in which the cultinds are lad. This carce bears the dry werther betce than the small come; and when the leafes of the latiee bogir to turn brown, those of the former shill properve deeir natural colotir. A plantor in
the Farzea wold me that: he had oltained fout erops fiom one piece of


 sinn npomit. T'lac busimusi or the lavilimedrousth is irs remeral ao

 ware of opinjoll hat here too sothe adratinge was to be ferreived.

## JTItis MrLs.


 enpicyed npon it, their divers twoentions, gud the comental thange ol vecupationt, frive to the owner ar his manater conmatat motives for
 plantetion ought to poswexs within itoreld all the tritelemmen which are

 name in this placs. It is a monufactory ns well as xt facin, and bouth Llene united musi net in mison with ench oufher, and with the seswons ot the year:
'The mill ought, proparly, to commance frinding lae cane in September, but lew of them bregin antil the micletle at Octobor; for the plantiong searcely allows rhat they should set to work bedore the latere period. 'Xis is the time of' merriment and of willing exertion, aind for some weokst the negroes art all life and ajirit; but the continumnce of constant wotk lor the wente of the duy ant jart of the night at last fatigues them, and titey become havy and fall anlecep wherever they chance to lay their hends-'f

[^106]$$
\mathrm{y} \times 2
$$





 mill with exte: ; : latiolle of it is thrust. in berween tae mitralle robler


 centre Chis operation is continted five or six limes until the
 xaent in dits part of the worlis for in the british colonies a second compression "tiquceexe buen conplotely dry, and sometimas evon roduces them to powder ;" atid the same enceured in Latbat's tinac in the French ithandx. The dunib-reluriser tends very greatly to provent ser-idents, which occaxionally oceur in Brazil invough the carclasenems or drowainess of the slaves. The negroess who thrust the cane in butween the collers have sometimes allowed Laeit hauds to go too firt, and one or both of them linving beun enught, in some instances, betors assiatance combld be given, the whole limb and even the body las been erashed to pieces. fin the mills belonging to onvners who pay attention to the safety of their negroes, and whose with it is to have every biong in proper order, a bar of iron alad a farmmer are placed elose tio the rollers mpont the table (ntewa) which sapponts the canc. The bar is intencled to be violonily inserted between the rollers is cuse of accident, so fus to open them, and thus set at liberty the unforcunate nugro. In some instameen I bave seen jyiog by the side of the bar and hammer, a well-tertpened hatchet, for the purpose

[^107] tunforlunate uscasiuns the sercams of the negro have the efect of Whang the herses which draw the mill, for run wids frereatied velocily, [ ann acsuminted swith two or tharec inclividuals who now work slecir mills with oxen; and they gave ats whe principal rensum for this chatare, the deverate ol 〈langer to tate afgroes who ied the mill ;
 above oluscription ent searecty linppen, athd indeded dhey are stopped rather than uracul to proccerl by noise. Some of the milla are turncel ly water, that many more would admil of this improvament than tuke ardsanture of it. Mort ol the mills are worked hry lionses. Titere tre ne withlaths in Pernembaco or in the other provinces which I visited $\dagger$. The expencat which is incurred in monkirg dama and in other alterations, is doubtloys couaderable, and fetv persoos can afford to lay out the money which these worky requice; but the convoniences of working by means of water are various; the number of animals recpuired upon a plantation is. roduced to less than one half; less pasture lind ja necesmary, and fiwer pertonty reed to be eril-
 are those which ure of the moat cost, the most liable to disease, and the most diffieult to foed Grent arre ant uttention is requisite in prostrving the horses, or mither the matres (for these are modly employod in dhia derserjption of work) in a conclition to go through with

[^108]the crop; and guantities of canc ante cul: ap and given to them, ss well as moliesces. Oxer sro usually employed in drawing the certs. and it is seldom thoutgffe necersary to afford any expensine lowd to theise animuls. They pick tup as much as they pheate of the contretrash which is thrown out of the mill, and the cane tops are likewist given to thour.

```
TJIE DOJLJNG-J!&l゙&E.
```

Lx the boiling-honse the namufactory of sugav in Crazil rexpires ficat, alteration. The work is tiune it st slovenly mamer, very bitule attencion being piaid to the minution of the business The ovens over which the botlers are placed, are radely made, ant they answer the purpose for whicl, thoy are iutcheded in an imperfect. manner; enormous cquantities of finel are consumed, and the negroes who attend to the ovens are soon worn out. The juice runs from the vane fis it is squeczed botween we roller's, into a wooden trough below, ancl is frow thence conveged into a cistem maxle of the same materisl, atandiag in the boiling house. It is received fiom this cistern into the great ouldron, us it is culled, which is a large ixon or copper vessel. The caldron has previonsly becu heated, and when nearly fall, the tempor is thrown into it, and the liquor is sufferel wobil. It is now scummed with considerable Iabour. The work of acminming in ubually performed hy free persons, which is owing to two causes ; it demands considerable skill, to which alaves seldom attain; nath the exertion which it requires induces the planter to pay at free man rather than injure one of hia own people.

From this first caldron or clarifier, if I miny ao call it, the liquor is latled ont into a long trougix or cistern, which is generally made of the trank of one tree; and in this it remaina until it bocomes tepid*. The labour which the operation of ladling requirea is excessive, the

[^109] meatly the violence of the exertion. Fiom rilis enough which thelds the whole ol thee confents of the great caldion, the lifuer when safficiently cool is suffered to rus inlop the fiext onpluet, and from this it is jernmed ints) a sceonnd and a third copper, and some boiling-houses
 wher the mustev of the laciling-house judgea from the touch that the syrup has arrived at a proper comsistenes. The jars art afterwards taken inter the atjoining boidding, in which the sugar is to undergo the proness of claying. The sugetr, atece beimg clayenl, is invariably dried in che aun". The managensent. of the boiling-houses in the Britisln sugat istands is zoremged ite such anmmer ats to render the lubont mucli leas violent, and much grearer nicety bas locen intovcluced in the propiration of the juice.

The boiler's are fixed at a considerable height ovev the larye ovens within which the fire is ande. Ewht boiling-louse thas two ovens, one for heating rhe caldron and the othen for the three or four coppers. The mouths of theae are about hall as broan as the ovens themselvea. Enormons rolls of timber and the branches of itees ave prepard for the purpose of supplying these ovens with fuel. The arnons sometimea find it almost impossible to approach thern= owing to the escessive heat which they brow out $\dagger$. The manner of conducting the manufacture of sugar was, fiom what I can collect, very aimilar on the whole, in the Columbiam islands about the begining of the last century, to that which is practised at present in the purts of Brazil which I visited.

[^110]


 [:



























 Oy


















 the oppinion of the people of the ecountry is of considerable moenetet.
 sugats, but the process is too gentrally kinwin ro requite any ancourn of it in this places.

TEFC S J'ITJ.
 still-lowases than in any ofler departancort of their busiress. The

 proathing the noel. The fimularion oi a citentar oven is formed, and two of thate jars are plized withiat it, ane on cacla side ol it, in
 the outside, amal being thas secuech due walls of the oven are kutidt

 derod perdeculy tighet by a coat of cliay being danbed round the edges, after the wash has beer put into the still atod the fire Jias been lighted underneuth. These eaps bave on one side a pipe of six inches int lenstin attacised to eacls of them, and into this is inserted the end of at lorass tube of four feet in lexgeth. This xube is placed in a brotud and deeps enthen pot or jar combining cald water, and the opposite and of is. raches beyoud the poc. The tube is fived wits a suffi-
cient slant to allow of the lituor ramais: frecly theourflit. 'the


 fiouse.


 No cevach rales afe followed in the trantiaine of atet ingrestiont tios

 5 mall number of the pdanters hat any aqpatatus for clistijling, for it was their praceice to sell all the undiwes which were produced tol the smanll distiderx. ALapy ol' the pervents in the dewer rathes of lide posiens one or two of tix'se rath stilis, ly wheth they alerise a stanth

 often attend to the still whilst the rwert are allective emplatsed,


 was formerly; the price has conserjuently tisete, and teas induecd many of the planters io distil their own melasses. But althoutgh this plan has been adopted, the stills are su tutally itaskequate to the distiltalifon of large bixamitics of rum, that fens bersons ercet a sufficiont number of them to enmsme the whole of tive nelanges with which the sughar furnisbes them. *

[^111]
## 

A sugan plinatation of Permambucu ur laraiba does nor: require ti:e enommons cupind which is necensary in purthang and establishing an curate of the sante description in the Colambiarn islands; but a eertain degree of expital is reçetisice otherwise continual dixtress will be the conseguence of encering inte sucth a concerr. The inscaraces of persons havingr purchased sugal plantaions wilioutany advance of moncy are however iny ho means mare, and even che slaves, or at lenst ine magior part of them, have sometimes been obtained on long ercedit at cxorbitant pries. This plan was of more frequent occuercrive at the time that the exclusive triuding company exiated at Pemambuco; its तifeccors found that it was for the interest of those concerved to advance evety thing which the suriculturist reguired, receiving in faymen in certain porion of lis praduce yearly: Although the company has for many years been abolished, its arxounts have now yet been wound up, and it is astonishing to leam how considerable a nuowber of plantations are yet indebted to it. The reputed owners of many of those which are so civewnstanced have offentimes given to their prudeceasors only half the purchasemoncy; paying interest to the accountunt of the company for the other half. If they car raisc a sufficient sum of money for che purpose, they may strike of whe principat of the debt, but it this is not practicstle, they remain in perfect confidence that chey will never be molested for its procided the inzerest is psid.

Thexe are a few norgoshos or entailed estates in Pernambuco, and I beljeve in Parailya likerrise; and I bave heard that in Pahia there are a great many. There ure also copol/atos or chapel lands; these estates cannot be sold, and from this cause are sometimes suffered to decay, or al any rate thuy yicld much less profit to the State than they would under other circumstances. The capellath is tormed in His manner: the owner bequeaths a certain part of the produce or rent of whe estace $x a$ some particular charch, for the purpose of having masse, said for his own soul, or for pious usea of a less selfasb z 29
nacure. On this accoult , we estate carmot, wecording to latw, be sold, so that if the etext teitr is not rich enough to work the mill hixt-

 owner theter remains with the residue of the reme as his share of the

 wEut lee has expeonded in repainimg chee edińces of the flantarion, but a peor pitance remaib. for thu owner- Tinc ongonto of Catu now to Goizna is placed in these circmaztances; the owner liver in the veigidoourhood of clie Grear Ilouse of principal residence, and the only advantage which he derives from the posiscsion of this mosh excellent and exlensive extate, is that of residing rent free tapon one cormex of it and now and then receiving a trifling sutn oí money: Whereus if it could be sold, he would immediately receive it sufficient smm to place him in easy circunstances; and the extive would undergo improveucnt, for the occupier would then have a direct interest in iss adrancement. 1 might mention seteral orber plantaions which are situated in a like manner.

The property of sugar plarters, which is directly applied to the improvement, or to the usual mork of their plantiptions, is uot subject to be seizut tor debr; this privilege wits granted for lise encourugement of the formation of such extionsishments, but it whay bave a contrary cffect. The planter allowed many means of evading the demands of his creditors, and every thing is pormitted to act in his favour. But hus it is that the government legislitus; the reveruce is thought of, insteat of equity being regarded as the primary consideration. Nor does the plan act in the mamucr which the establishers of it innatione that it will, for the cstates which are labouring under the disadvantage of being held by men who require such a law.as this to caable cbem to keep posseasion of the property would doubless, nine $1 i m e s$ out of ten, yield a greater profit if they passed into other hands; they could not be in worse, ard they might finll into better. The government need not fear that good estutes will, in the
 that kilgalon may be very surce chat that merelualx will be soore careful low duey lend decir moncy; mad did may anmotimes jouvent ath horest man tirom oldaining whit lue requires for the due nelvaucement of hix lialsours. *
 of wealthy perrals, and this is laceoming more and move the case every thy. Tlte dation whick nuly bo thid to eonstitute this class are those which are siltuated near to the sen const, that is, from tiwo to sixteon milex from it; which possess a emssiderable portion of law Innd athapted to the planting of the sugar-enme-another of virgin wood, - grood paxture hand, (tion nature must do covery thing) and the possibility of lyeing worked by water. The rulus we xare regular near to the const tunn ut id distance from it, and the fincilil:y of conveging the produce of tha catate down xome of the samell strentris or creelis to a inaritet, axe the particular advantuglas which are derived

[^112]frent tue vicinity of the sen. The sistres ate tive with mire casc, and
 the meatre of obtaining from the aca and foom the rivatels, thatble; thent to be less cependent cipan the tationan of atus masterer chan zlet shaves of dia Sata or diatricts between the const and the Scriarn. Int a chantre that is without roads. upon whicha a whecled carridize can he deawn wiht ane deme of requatity of pace of of natety, the difficulty at remosing blaE darge chenas in whicil the sengar is packed, is a mose serious considemaion, and this itrontenience alove deereases the velue of lands. however ptoducuive they may be, which are so sifunierd If a pereon wither t.e purchase properyy of this thescripion, twe will discover that the platations which are converniencly eliaced, are only to be olytained at high comparative prices. and by a considerable adrance of morney; bat rusiny of those in the Alitas may be purahased ever without ony adiznece, and undur the ugrement of small yearly payments oi aight to tev face arte. apon the price.

The bands of sugar pianliations mon apjuruprialed to five purposes, These are; the weods, - the lanis for planting canen, - Unese whicb are cleared for pasturage, - the provision grommds for the regroes,and the lands which are oceupied by tree people.

The soods ocelupy a rery considerable portion of wie land belonging to a plantation; in most caves nach more than half the estate is yel covered with wood, but still 1 do not chinb, tron what I faw and heard, that these forests contain so much fine aimber as biss been impagined. A 1 roe of amy species of valuable timber must now be purchased. Very litale consideration is given to the quantity of wood that is clestroyed in the work of a plariation, in many cascs very unnevossarily: The lencessare made of stakes, which are formed of the trunks of treas, driven into the grousd, atid to chese are fastened horizontally the stems of younger plants The best timber, racher than that of inferior quality, is selected for this purpose, that it nasy last the longer under exposire to the heat of the sun and to the rains. The fuel, likewise, is another most enormous sourec of de-










 tions. Virgin wools however artainly (i) yet exist to a frort
 are converad with the woods in whe neighbominood of Goinan, a distunco of fitieen lengues.

Eatla sugnr plantaion hata one latge fiedel in whiels the lomildings are placed. It is tery rurely that: estatios ace sumplied with at second incluarure, consenuently the catcle or nt least that part of it which is
 to be dome deting the whole of the yenr, alwayy remnity upon the miot. These fields are romelimes of couriderable extent; 1 hatyo seen sotie af threo miles in circunsference, or even of mure. Vesw owners of cutatits an manage to prowerve the field tree form brushwood. The lorsos which work the mill are wavally remuved from
 the tiertam to pass the wimer, and they retom again just before croptime on ilte followishr yeir. Inceed sued is the importune of having grow paxiurage for these atoinals between the cropsi, and the ath vancure of allowing some of thom to rest twa years, that evory plan1.ation shoudd latye a catile earato in the interior on the councry, asi a nocesamry nppertagge. The oxen are often driven to the tex shore after the crop in over, if the cstate is conveniently situated for this Purpose, and ate lefl to getaze under the socontrees until the dollow-








 ased in this peys of the countres.

 suscen of chatreing riom one piece of ground to atother. I cati it. extraverent, becatese it requires so maghl syonce for its operationa, and performs these with mure iallout than is meermaty: 'this overplus of laud gives room fir the latiations of fret propite in the Tower rankes dif lite, who live upon the practuce whicla they riise by

 stitures one of the greal. engines of that power which the lamiluoldir enjoys over his ternats. No argements are drawn wat; but the proproteror of the latid verbill, peranits the peosant who applies to him for a place of rexjlence, to indubit a cotrage upun his buscis, under the condition of $\mathfrak{y}$ eving hin a rrifling renc (irom four to cight mif wis, ouse to (wo guincan or rabluer woze;) and he is allowed to cultivite as nuch ground as he possibly nan by bimself. but the renst ix ittcreased if be culls in my one to assist lim. Sonetines the verbal arrangement which is cutered inth, is that the 1 thatat sball Pertorm some atrice in lieu of making lis patmenain money: The servicere quired is, tor inklames, that of going upon ensands, or of seeing that the woods are not destroged by persons whu have nol oblumed perraision irom the owner to cut down (imber, and uhler offices of the seme description.

## 

 wo lhu tiverowing：
［＇tur mill ；wlictr is cither l．ararai ly water or be cattle；some

 which tha crops are so［arc̣is as we velure ther therc shousd be boch．
 sose anostly pant ot the apparculus，tient the cofpers，\＆e，must be oi－ tained from Enrupe－
 sectad wizl the boiling－housc．It is rliso rearalts made use of as


The：rehapol；which is usizily of considerable dimensions．This
 brick，

 4］actrf！y uniale of Linsbera and mad．

Xha row of negro ductings which lave describerd in anoctior
 of the same materials as the locuse wi the uwner．From the appeare
 sition of the swane of a plantation All these buldelings are novered wiz？tilces

The estate．have no regular fobjuifal for the sjek negroes ；but one
 Thee stockis in which disorder］，slowes ate placed，stand in ale clay－ ing－house．
sTいいる．
Or those estates which $I$ hav＇c seekn，I ahink that lue averoge rumber of negroes zeut to danly labour in the field does nut reach
forty for each; for aldacongthere noty be uron a plantation this

 condacive to the advancenent of the rewtat work. Alr entate which
 oxen ", ang the same of horsen, cal be very welt worked; and if the litishs are food, that is, if there is a fuit propertion of low and high

 ecual to that of the able slawes. I sjocals of dowty slares beitrg sutficient, becaube some deseriptions of work iere ottentines fardimed by trecmena; thos, for instance, the sugar hoilerst the pursod who elays the sugar, the distiller, the cirtmen and even souse onliers are vory tiequemly fres. Onily ar réry small proporion of the surat wilt the ralus-
 I have heard it siaid by marn planters thac the meliaseses will gnay almosi eviary erperatile; and that if rman is made, the proceeds of the the liesses are rendered fully equal to the nowal yourly expolsolitente.

The negrocs inay th: valued at 3the each; oracu at. gt, cacle; and horsex at the same; but by managethent the two list may bo obtamed at lower prices. it sugar plansation of chee first class, with switable builtings, may be seckuned as being worth from gonot. to somod. and some few are wathed at hifd ats $10,000 \%$; but an antvance of one-sixtl of the price would probibly be aceepted, the

[^113]remander to be paid by yearly instadmeatis. [lte ibland piancations

 chase of prime plamations, and the inataturathes woulel the more
 at least, und an increased mamber ot anituds, ownest wo their catpalility of entjploying mose hands. ~

The ondy carts which are usod apon elat platations are very damsily made; a flat surtace or table (ureze) made of clack and heavy timber, of albonta two feet ardel a hall broath ant six feet in Jonghl, is fined upon two wheels of solid timber, with a moveable axle-tree; it pole is Jhewise fixed to the cart. These velincles are always dirawn by four oxen or more, and as they ate narrow and the roads upon which fluy thust travel ure bad, they are continamlly overturning. The ticgroes who drive the cans have generally some induigencies, with which their fellow-slaves are not favoured, from the greater labour which this basiness yequires, antel from the continual difficuaty mad rlanger to which they are exposed, owing to the over-turnitug of the carts and the numbiness of the asets. In the whole management of the concerns of a plantation, the want ai mechanical assisrance to decresse the labour of the wortimen must strike evary person whe is in the habit of seeing thern, and of paying any attontion to the stabject. I will memion one instamer ; when bricks or tiles ste to be removed from onc place to another, the whale gung of

[^114]megroes helonging to the estate is ounployed in carrying them; eacle man takes theee or perthap libur brieks or tiles upon his head, and ariachese off gently and quienly; be laya them down where be is desired no to do, and :ggain returns tor thee or tuer more. Thas
 ģunaity of work that two men with wherl-barrows would have performud will erpual cuscin the same space of time.

## CHAPTER SVII.

```
AGNICLIN%E玉. - GOT%ON%
```

THIS most valuable plant has vow become of more importance to Pemambuco even than the surameane, owing to the greas demated for the cotton of that province, and of those adjaioung to it, in the Fritish markets. New cstablishments are forming yearly for the cultivaxion of the entlon filant, norwixhstanding the great inconveniences which must ofien be experiericed in accomplishing this objece The discricts which are chosen for the purpose, and ubiversally allowed to be the best adapted to its givowth, are far removed from the acr coast, arid and oftentimes very santily supplied winh fresh water. Absolute distress is felt fronto a want of water in some of these situations, at the linge hat other parts of the country are enjoving perject case in this respect. The opinion is verg genersl that che coaton plant will not thrive in the neightourhood of the coast*, itud that frerguent changes of weather are ingu-

[^115]










 tonash, are now employed in the retring of oxher filate Ther con-
 juducal necemgary to allow the Jind to rest fios severad years betore it



 figed for the inkabitants of the comatry, The coltert is otien solat by the planter in caroter, lint is, belore ir hias bean separtitasl tion the seed, to othes persouts whose liselitesod is oblaized in preparitur it for the export marhet; but as do labour of convegane ins of course, considerably increased whijst it is in this tiate, thee dealurs estaldish ithemselves mear to the plantations; they reedele as the planters recedte. Some yeurs ayo a number of the mathinces for wejnrating the colloti from the seed were to bo seen within two leagates of Riceifis; af few years after they ware removed to Groinga, and thow Lhe primeipal resorts of the donters nre linaoeito ind Bom Jurtim; places, us will have been been, which are several leaghes dianunt from the coast.

The landa are eleared for planting eotton in the tsa: manner, by cutting down the trees and buruing chema and the boles for the seeds are dug in quadrangular form at tha distance of six tect from cack other. Three seedk are utablly put into each hole; in the

Eritist colonies, it is found neccsinity to make uee of cight or ten
 or fient waters ; or at any rate ascoon in the year ath any raip hats faller.
 sometimes fous are obsaincl from the stuthe plants; but the sceond
 thas a pleasing appearance whilst it is in full loaf, and is covered with its most beatifit yellow blasions: but when the pods bextin wopen zud the I Aavex to wither, its chin and stragigling branches are left uncoverod, and the plane much mesembise a larac liIack currant bustr,
 gathered in nine or ten monllas. The machine tor detachentig it from the seard is eirrple, and might fere rendered still more mo. Two small rollers are planed horizontally in a fianic, and nearly toneling each
 a cord runs, which is connested at the distance of a few yatds with a lane wheel, to which hardlex ate fixeal, athd issis is turned by two porsons. The rellers are so torned ats to turt in opposite ditece-
 carried to tie other side, but the seeds remain, for the openity between the rollers is not sufficiently broad to iflow there so pass*, The ranclige which is used in the British coloniss seems to be of the same conslumerion in the main, but ic is still more simple, fior the roblers are matie to turn by means of the feet of the petwan who holds ade coaton to them + . - deve it has undergone the above process, some particles of seeds which hase been atcidentally brokem stitk remain, ardit or orher stlustances whicb musi be removed For chis purpoae a liequ of corton is made, and is beaten with latge sticks; this is a most ingurious operalion, by which the fibre is broken; bur

[^116]
 4lis jrwactice．

















 tout it muse be rementocred thet it a conmiry ol such vert
 tortunate．－

The quality of the coton which je produced in sumet Abserict， either to the notith or south of Permenbleor，is intirion to thrt of the jurovince of which I am treating．The colon of Seara is not zo

[^117]


 of Buetia.



 f biave commiluert.

## 

Trim: mandioe reguixts grool bond, and the snme spot. will not pro-
 two years or mote. 'The aporavion of planting it is sinuple, and dingers in mo, ruspect from that which wus jriectised formerly by the















planc, of whith sicme are admpted to hirglthuth, thes others to low and moist sictations; bour when che prant is cullimatur upon the ]ateter, hitlueks must be raised, elwe the root would decas, (ian lice ate jed upon the roat and stalk: shese are first preprowe by befing eat

 ever eect soric or inp drationto $v$ ven that hume hecome so habituated to is as to vat the root quice tiesh, witsont receiving ony apparent iojury; - in the maner that the frmant fouly becomen callous to dite mast violent meclicines byy fong exastom.
 animald, who genarally once in the courae of every week ut least concrived to get. out of the inclosure, and puss pari of the night in some neighbouring mandioc fromund. He was to dexterons its tear$\mathrm{ing}_{\mathrm{g}} \mathrm{g}$ up diue stalk with the rout attached to it, that the manks of his footsteps shoae made us quite confident of the nature of the thice. Whilat I was at Itamatacis, I fose it sheep, which hand drank of tobe juice of the mandive. The negwea and other persons were duaking farivht, and a trough stood under the press for the purpose of receiving the juice. 'the sheep were utherngting to come uncler the shed for the purpose of reaching some of the roots, of which they are extromely fond; one of them ipproached the unongh, which was filled with the juice, and altbongh it was almost inmmediately perceived and driven awny, still the effect of the small quanrity which hatd been taken bergan to shew isself in' a very few minutes; - the animal toterol and fell, rising spain, and agoin falling. Oil was poured down its throat in considerable cquantities, but to no purpose

[^118]

'Thes insect which is mentioned by Pian \{quoted by Mr. Southey)

 stith known under the same nanuce, which however is not pecaliar to this wornt, luti it is likewise nepplied to nuagots of ewery himpl. The juice is not kepat lor uny purphes, but it rominat in the taough oceasionatly for some days, owitg t.0 thte callelaysiness of the person under yluse care tifest things are platedt. Of the deatlly matare of thes worm E nerer tuard any neention. JThe species of ramaine wbich is called mamipebt is prohibised, owing to the greater activity of ite poisonous jutice, and it is now slmoat estirpated; it had the advantage of greater darability under fround. Those hiatels which are uxually planted decuy il the stalk is broken off; but the malks of the anamipelis may

[^119]be cut axay, and inse root: will still continue sound untily on the fole lowing yent a mew stalk springs lip. $i$ diaw luesud it. satid, that is the diy soits of the Motal it feew of che other varienies oll this plant will iklow al the same tweatment. Although the mandioc planc roguires a dry situation, scill when the raios faiblir Jonusty the cropas fall short, for it is in this month, immediately atter the firsi: witera, that tho principal plantations of it are mude. The Braziliana have at peenliar name for each parc of this plant; che root is called morrufioca, the stalk mundive, the leaves munisohes, and the juice mamipucira. There is one speciek of the plant, of which the juice is harmless; it bears the mane of macaretira. Its mor never grows to at grear size, and it is therefore rather planted as an auticle of lixury than as regular food. Erom 1 Jis species less juive is extacted than from the roots of egual dimensions of any of the other kinds ol mandioc*. The rind of those apecies of maudioc which sre in general use is of a dark brown colenur, but thene is one linge ot whiels the riod is white.

The mast expensive part of the process of making the flour of the mandioc, consisis in disengarging the rind frem the root; this is done with difficulty, by means of a piece of a brobon blunt knife, a sharp pebble, or a amall akell, with one of which each person is supplied; in this work 2 considerabte number of persons must be occupied, 10 farmish employment to the whocel which grinds the root. This wheel is placed in a frame, and a handle is fixed to ic on each side, by which it may be turned by two mex, one of them working at

[^120]each of the handles. A rough stamds zinder the wheel, and the whene] is onserl in coplper, which is mude rough by means of holes punched in is, the aides or' che loples are nut frled smoork. The mandioe is thatust against the wheet whilst. it is tumed with tracat velocity, and being by this means ground it falla into the trough underneath. From herse the ground pulp is put jette a preas, thith the juice may be exiracted; und after it has undersone sulficient pressure this pulp or paste (mucke) is xamoved on to a hot hearth, upon which a person is employed to leap it in cuntinusel motion, that it may not be burne; when guise crisp it is taken off the hesprth, and won beinge stifered to wool is in a stute to be made nse or: *

There is another mode of proparing the mandioc for food; it is put

[^121]












 The smell i.s howerer endixtly removed alter the firinties luts been For sorme minuter apon the men. \%

## turs coco-This.

Tres sandy soils of the coast in which thix plans aecins to delight would, it bhey were rot cmlifvated with it, temain alonges welens; but from the prorlent whicth the coen-inee jields. they are remelared very



[^122]the ealrivations of any atier requires wonsicherable toil; however the lumg pesiml, of from five to seven years, which the tree requires before is bearv fitnit, ciansul fatil to be considered as a drawberk иןun (!n proita whicls it ulcimately afurds, and upen the great age to which it, :srives Ihontwer perkbps there are few crees of equel size that sield trait in so short a periol. In is a neosc valunble production, of whicle every part is atpropriated to some uscivil purpose. The Brazilizass stye that it aftords to them hook food and shelear; of the trink and of the leares their huts are buit ; of its fibrous rocts baskets are macle, and cordsge of the outwarl linsk. Yis fruic renders to them mear and drink, and su exceilent of is likewise to be obraized by skimuine the juiec which trest be pressud from the pulp. The coco is in general use in cookery amongr all rands of people, and it Forms one oì the cbiet srcides of iuternal crade". W'hen a plentation of this arev is atmut to to establisheel, the ripe cocos from which the plancs are to be reared, are placed in vice sround, about twelve tuches below the serface, in lond and atmosit tuited row's, for the conventence of being watered They are froquently flaced it whis maneer, umder hive estever of hotsics, which saves muck trouble, for iny zise :ce:smulation of water firom the house top, each shower of rain prodinces sufficient moistuse, nati the owner is relieved trom sury furthex rouble in this respect. At the expiration of five momlts the shoors thegin to tatce their appeserance sthove ground, and at the and of twelve montis from che time that the cocos were first put into the carth, the young platsts may be removedt. They tre then placed

[^123]at the dixt ance of eight ar ten yarcl from each ollief，upon filic lamid



 surs；end jntred et all mine．chue Jraitfainess of the tree will be in－ creased，it it is alioweci its due space．＂r


This plant may be，as well as the coco．xeared it sandy soilis but it will hourish with more luxuriarece，upon those that urc of a richer kind．The oil，which is extracted thon the sepel，is in general use lor daups and other pruposes，but neifther is ir vaten，nor known as a medicine：but it is admimismeted is an ontward application．It is given to animals that have drank the guice of the matudioc，and is sometimes successful in furcing the prison back from the stomach． The plast is mucle cultivated，but it is froquents to be seen growirg sponcancously．＋

## リリระว2 एOOン，

Tue wood from which is extracted the beautiful red dye，wlích is so much esteemed in Farope，is，I believe，generally supposed to bo peculiar $T$ to the country to which it lats given a 5 name It is often callod in Permambuco（irom whence，$l$ inagine，that it is

[^124]



 it is mol with loy the ofticers who ate appainted for l.hits par-







 is aflurdeal. 'Lho turrier receives will his Jourd al ship of paper,


 puper counteraigucd, before he cun retirn lionter These mett are

 to the inferiar afficers, that they may be duiclily dispatelaed. Here the ofd aystem of indifterence tio whe in just. still most: glacingly continties. 'l'fís tecount of the troatment. of the men wher couvey the wook. I raceived from weverst who had been employed in the business.

If the trade in the wood was to be laid open, it would only tend to ís acarcity still more speedily than auder i.he existing system; hul as soon as it became scarce it would be reudered nu olject worthy of eultivation : Jowover, as long as it is to be obtained in
 will probably comtinue to supply the market on their own akcomet Every angar plaptation mididt cultivate a great numbur of these 3 c





I tever saw the phan, but I fanve hated it eleserided in the foilow.





 ariminaly. ${ }^{*}$


 followed whorever the plant eato bo met with.


 quenticice to form of ranemand forst for the negrows. When it is

 articlas of the negrues' food.



 yiakdy mort: plontifully tirn in the lands which border- upom the

[^125]
 form he:ygy unpalstable in sircax or treacle is added. The prople call it ankur de mizuto





 virtems ban:ane, becallate the clestete of the truit are we largex l.bat sach
 thijk that at mizelt utility is ferised from the plant as it is capabile of affordings; it is not so geacruliy uxed an an ford by the negrotist, as
 brantlatat among paople of coloux.4

[^126]












 to :arswer die purpose of a smaple article ot fieesl; for it is ancertait in yielding its crops, and reguires the best liatat. 'h'o meithere of

 natmbueo; the first erop is an well tasted ax the: rovis frow which it
 obtained fiom the same family of excis, hat tocea sweetivt, and on
 the country: Yat the plants appear to be coandly different from cach other, for the Brazil batata or potatoe is proctecest from a cereaperer.
 3 majority of persons of che lower classes, for cheir awn use- A considerable ruantity is imported from the southem provincas of Brazil into Pamambaco. The auts do now molest che plite, but in

[^127] رx:anites mix there seed of the wbateco wind woed exbes betore they stres will is ifse neonnd which they are alount to sow. The ants

 Fildmes the secund orjuet of tarale. The use of it in Permanbuco is







 the fodians and otimer persons ol' thee xanne rank auch habits of lite, in the thickest woods. It thrivus mont in the: shatie. Tlac plate is




 hiver:





 Numvel Voyagr. ixe, tam. vi. p. $39^{\circ}$ and $30^{\text {月, }}$




 tobla, vi. jo. 29.

Grisefn is indigengors，lout is reaw ：atroty to lee fonnd in a widal state＂．The white ginger is titat which is in gemmal use
 eques of alantre every cottare．The peots ne of at bright searlet
 is at herdy plant；tor slihough it droops under execssive drounth：it

 scarlet poils，W＇hereve：this vhrula spritegs up cate is token of it； tot the people of all rable are frent latit etment unable tes with theit dood without the matageter．The pods are bruised whem aloont 10 he aserl．and either forn an ingredient in every dish，or they ane
 pepper，is likewise emmmon，but it roquirbs mote cate in rearithr，
 red in general，but xometimes thry atre，naturally，of a paike zeltow colour ；they are round and about the size or＇a erals ajple．

Ter is stated to be indigenous in Nrazift．，A priext of eon－
＊＂Vicy：















 diteralers．
$\pm$ Noticias MTSS．quoted by Mr．Southef，ITistory of Eimizil，vol．j．p． $3 \geq 0$ ．



 markels ot dateitic are tapw well supplical with sogetathers ind roots． The gademmate ahicfy Po：nowece，trum the drowinces of the

 lessides whers which are petuliar to the conntay，xuch as mmatations alad yams．Whe E゙arupean ontigu produces a smald root of an coblongr

 mamy of the gatcless iat the atightrourhoud of Recife and of Olindir； naded timenerly there wese a groat many it（＇onception upon the is and of ltandaraca，biat lew maw remait．No swine is treade．The fruit trees are smane wh Llase wlach are commont for the southerm parts of Eutopus，stich ai the ofanges，the fig．ard otlecx，but no olives；
 shate of which bave been monticured tacidentally in elace eranse of
 of my：：alyget，arid matst twow yrocced to normeching else．


 is thax xita shemb．






 tistut．iiii．］． 254 －

The arange i：etat juto twu gricerm，and iy rublect riolenely upon the agre－

## cIIAProm rvirn．

＇L゙土に ルルI：

T








 countrymen of mixerl casts．＇Ibe erpocal whish the creote whites have made to the people，and the declarations which they hitue publiely set forth，of diresting demp proceedinge lay their roice；tha exposure of those abstract prificizlea or governament．which are so delightful in Uueory，berten cliffenth of execution，will，moil prom

 cumstances have alicected that where shotild be no division oi eanta， and very few of ilsose deyrasling and nost galling distiactions which have been made by all wher nations in the managentat of their coludies．That this was not intetuded by the mocher country，but whi rather subritted io feom neceswity，is to be discovered in some few regulations，which platinly show，that if larumad could have pre－









 Hortugill spacz thom, noz dint they wish to laze their native soil





 and thererore, paturaily, of theove artioni in that comatry, they nas-



 riod clie weanen of mixed cakix, wting to tije impussibility ut oivtaining thone of their own colour; and the freapuency of the chetom, and
 dation, in ltuse swatucering chemselver Still che Etarophan notions of auperiority viexe nosp entizely suid aside, and therse caxased the pusing of sonie mundiaciarts, by whicle while personn were to effoy




[^128](5 b
 bors of the jorilithoud.

Froin the mitchass of the Jows, bowsere file mixet ansts have






 ingured varictios of the buthan rpecies en which they were munt
 mast be the obnseducace: of their enburhatiun in the sampe catase, when the war it sane aft akimistoes, ot abilotseader, ol' consinual alarm, of nssistance constantly afforaled to vich other; u jatriotic war, agabst a foreige invtuler, in which dilitembe of retionon exints, and each party mortally lastes the wther. On lifise ocensions at men are extul, or he ouly is superior whose sizongrts and whose activity suxpasses that of ofters. 'The subalernmation of custs
 hacl a fairer ficld for ita full atecmplixhment, then the war to which
 ciremmetances would not easily be buolven oft: dllocught the purtion who had been so united might hase been, int itacir sibnationt in

 the feetinge which lact been rentect on these wecersions of lund
 the serifor of ocenvencos which liad enfled chemin forth.

The tree population of Brazil at the present inine consists of Europeutan; Braziliass, that is, white persons lauth in Rrazil; mutatros, that is, the mixed eaxt betweert the whices uncl blocks, and all tha wariedies into whed it can branch; manalucoa, that is, the mixed cant between the whites and findjans: and all its varieties;

Indians in it domesticated state, who are called generally Cabockes; and thost who still remain in it siakuge stane, and are eallech generadly. Tapuyat; mocgross loorn in Thazil, nud manumited Africans; Iatily, 3 Iestizos, that is. the naixed east between the Indians and
 arc Africans, creole negroes, mulatios, and mestivos. The maxim
 the colonies of other mations. *
 feremee of character as well ay of colour. First we must trent of the whites. The Europenus who are ant in offee, or who are not mi. litary men, arc, gemerally spretking, arlventurers who have amivod in that country with littlo or no capital. Thase men commence their carber in low siluations of life, but by paramony and continual exertion clitected to ons: und, that of amassing money, they often attaja their object, and pasis the evening of their lives in opulence. These hatbits lifignt, oftemtinus, 10 give a bias to their dispuxitions. whicls is unallied to gencrosily and literality. Thoy look down njpon the Brazilians of rather they wish to consider thetmeelves
 to reinove the jenluusy which existed betwoen the two deseriptinan of
 subjectas its great importanse neme to require. $\dagger$ -

[^129]$$
3 \pm 2
$$















 by the estacation which that d:ase reweined; but ntore mamerous



 which 1 an treating, unat wamen ate untally less lentent to their slaver 1 保

 ficzation will parsons wha afo wheontectert witle their own way of litis; en imbibing ner ideas from gencral conversationt. Thes are

 they do is wrong. Bring these women forwards, educate dion, treat shene ats tetional, ar erqual beings, and they will be in tso respect inferior to their countrymen; the jeule is not rith che sex, lyut in the state of the homato being. Ats wom as a child becine 10 exaurl, a shave of about its own age and of the matice sex is given to it as a










 dimbation ol watir indant geatr.



 Les jusid feeling of that species of pride which is so necessury ta a
 thac: celibar: of that mimeromen griesthood, cuase the number of jilestiti-
 thentim which khew the maturel foodness ot'tie people, prevern. the
 An intiane in ficculatly daying the wight laicl at the door oi' a rick presom, ard an lanisar discoverced in the mortitg is taker in, and is almost invariably allowed to rematin; it is broucrite up with she elaildren of che house (if its coloar is not (oor datsk to aduit ol this, eertaizly as a deriombant, but not as at servant; however at corsiderable tinge of colour will not prevent ir from being reared with the white ehitditen. These ragritrdex or rejected ontes, as inelisiduats who are so circumstatedi are called, are frequently 10 be tuel with, and I. heath of tew execptions to the grencral kinciness with which they are treated. Publec feding is much againse the retioning to avecpt and roar on chscilado; the owner of it bouse, who is in easy circumsances, aud yet sends she infont diom ilis own deor to the pub-
lic iustitution which is provided for in recoption, is genemally ajokon ol' in lemon of iacligunion. Sontimes : fuor man wi! find one of these presents at his dobr, and the will ingorally ploce it. at the landivalefer's theashold on the tollowing ninght; $1 . h$ is is acc:unced excuasble ard cren mutitorious, for at the Great IIonsc the ctild has geandy a ecrtainty of beiry well takers tave ol:

F litwo oldserved itht, gemerally speaking, Furopeans are leas indulgent $2 \circ$ theit alaves than Brazilians; the fonser feed them woll, but they require drom the poor wretehes mate fabour than dhey can perfomn, wilas the lat ter stlow the allairs of their estates to contiutu in the wing in which it has been accustomed to tre clirected. This difference betweer the two deseriptions ol ownats is exsily accounted for; the Etuopeng has probably purchased purt of his slaves on credit, und has duringe the whole comrae of his life made the accumulation of riches his cinicf oljeset. The Brazilian inherita his ostate, and as notling urges him to the neceasity of obtaininis large prolits, he cominucs the sourse that has buen pointed ont to hite by the fornser possessors. His habits of quictude and indolence have tud him to be easy and indifferent, and although he andy not provide for the maintenabce of his slawes with so much care as the Furupuan, still they find moore time to seek for food themselves. That avaricious spirit which deliberately works a man or a butce animal ${ }^{*}$ until it is unfit for farther service, without any regard to the well-being of the creature, which ia thus treaterl tes a merv machine, as if it was formed of wood or iron, is sowerer aeldom to be met wilh in those parts of ibe country which I visited. Instances of cruelty oceur (as has been, and will yet be scen, bat these proceed from individual depravity, and rot from systematic, cold-blooded, calculating indiffcrenee to the menna by which a desired end is to be compassed.

Notwithstanding the relationslip of the mulattos on one side to the black race, they consider themselves superior to the mamalucos; they lean to the whites, and from the light in which the Indians are
 silitl Lle mantattox are erolicions of cheir somection with men who are in a silute of slavery, fust that mangy jersona teven of their own colour are under these degribled eivemmatateon; they hate atherelore
 whitc: men atre woth and powortal. This inferiontity of rank is Hot st macla tive fy white personts in the Jower watks of life, amd these
 colontr who are in wedtry cireunscanced. Still the in leriority whiele the malitto ferde is mare Uiat. which is protuced by poverty than that which his coluar has catusucl, tor he will ba equally respectefl to a person of his own ctatl, who mayy happons to lee rich**. The desratded state of the people of colotry in the British cetonies is most

 orblers or is "plounterl th mugistrate, lis petpers stading him to be a whitc: mat, Lrat tiss uppearance plainly denoting the condraw. In
 service, I askect him if a certuin Cimpikamomot was not a mulato min; he answered, " he was, but is not. now f." Y begged biat to ex-
 1 was intinately aucuainted with a pricet, whore complexion nut hair plainiy denoted from whenes he drew bis origin; I litied limm moch, he wiot a well oducated and intelligent axato. Besictes this individual instastee, I muet wich several others of the same deacrijuima.

The regitnents of militia which ure enllecl mutatio regimenta, are so matmen from all the affeers and men being of trixed eantas hor

[^130]












 the propulation. Xhus an Furopeat adventurew could nol blitain a
 distinguisloch iseelf' is the provines in former times, will prove his cligibility without regared to the bload which rums ju teis weins, ld is noble, fuct ator fow fom whemee it maty: "

The late calonel of the malato reriment of Iiceifis, lyy mate Nogucita, went to Lisbon, and returned to Lerminmbuco with the Order of Chnist, which the Quath but conlerred upos bimit, is chici permon of ome of the provinees is the ton of $n$ white man and a woman of colour; he hny recejved tus excellent education, is of a genetous disposition, and entertains tnost liberal views upon wll subjects. He thas lecen made a colonel, and a degree of'

[^131]$\dagger$ The san att thin man is in pricedt.
mobility has laeens enmerred apon lim; likewje the Regent. is
 mentionerd. Thus Jas Prytugal, of lave yoats from policy, continnel atate system into which she was led by her peculiter eirenmstances in former Limes. Some of the wealthy plancers ot Pernambintio, and of the rich indmaianas of Hecife are men of coluser, 'Tlse major pare of the best mochanics are also of mixex Llood.

If is said that mulactoia make bud masters; and this holds good offertimes with persons of this dencripuion, who thave been in a atate of sliwery, atad becomb possessed of slaves of their owth, or are amployed as managers upon extates. The charge of situation would Jeat the the sathe emnseguences in any race of hansul beinges, and cannot be accoumted peculiar so the mixect casts. I bave seen mubatcon of free bidth aq kind, an denient, and as forbearing to their slaves and uther dependuation any while man.

Murringes lactween white men and women af ewleter are by no means rare, though they are sulficiently so to catise the circumstance to lue mentionterl when speaking of an iudivilual who las connoceted himself in this roghner; bus this is not shid with the intent of lowering him in the estimation of ofthert Indeed the remark is only rade it the perenn is a planter of any ireportance, and the worman is decidedly of dark colour, for evern a considerable tinge will pass for white; if the white man belongs to the lower orders, the thoman is not accounted ats being unequal mo him in rank, unless she is nearly black. The European adventurets often marry in this manner, whick generally occurs when the soman has a dower, The rici mulatto familics are often find to dispose of their daughters to zlosep men, although the person who has been fixed upon may be in indifferent citemmstances; for the colour of the childern of their diangiters is betrered, and from the well-known prudence and regularity of this set of men, a large fortune may be hoped for even from very small beginnings. Whist I was at Jogratibe, I was in the frequent habit of seeing a handsome young man, who was a reative of the island of St . Aichael's. This person happened to be with
nte on ore berasion when the commountant tom the Serlam was


 mission from a friend of wian to suke with one Jote to the Sertam a




Still du dzazilinas or high birth and lave properig do mor jiks to intermarry with persons whose mixteure ot litunct is Fery tuparnat, sund lence erixe pecolitr cixcumsti:nces. A that of this descripion beconses attaclied to a woman of colotr, coursects taithelf with beer, auk takies ber to his honae, where she is in a short time eren wiximed by morriod women; she goverms lis !ouschold affitis, sets and consitwers herself ns hiv wift, and fropurbily after the bixh of several chiliten, when thoy artu neirber of chent voung. he maties $I_{k} \%$
 in marciages betwcen persons whu beloner to two tinnulics uf thes first

 Each other minil a fews days batore the crermony takes place. It otian octurs, thas inclinations, nesessity, or comenicuce incluec or oblige $n$ man to separace fitm the perion with whon he lins thas boen combered; in this case, he gives luer : porliet, and she matries
 one whose combuet has been incorrect. Instanees ot inficlelity in these women are rave; they become stiteled to the xnex with whom they cobabit, and they direct the affairs of the honses nver which they are placed with alse sarse watal that they would display it they had the ringt. of command over chem. It is greaty to the eredit of the people of that country that so inuth fidelity should te thewn on one side, and that this should so frequeraly as it is, be rewarted by the other jrarty, in rlie adramement of those who have behaved chus faithfully, to a respectable and acknotvledaged situation
in acciely: It should be reeallentesl twe that the merit ot moral feelings matist be jadged of by che stambat of the eountry, und not by
 amongite planters; for in lage lowns man is pretty much the sama every where.

The MFamalencos are more freqtently tolse seed it the; Sortam than
 women of this east parictlarly surpasis in beaty all olluers of the comary ; they lave aftelvown tian of matation, but their features are leas byamp, and thevir haid is sec compled. 1 do noc think that chee men
 from the knowledge which they have of being of free birth on boch wides, or irosn sexiding id the interior of the contitry where goverthment is more loose, thay appear to lave moro indepondence of cha-
 When women relpte any rieed of fanger slant hax been xitmentined or undertaken, they generally atate thac the chici actor in it was a
 to be superior to all others. Mamalacres may enter into the mulacto wegimenss, atal urw pressed into the regituents ot the line as being
 blood proceeds.

Of atw domesricazed Indians I have already elkewhere givent what accounts I condd collect, and what I had opportunities of observing. The wild Indians are now orty to be met wich at a great diatance from the cuast of Permambued; and although they are very near to Haroshams, and are dreaded meighbours, I had no means of secing any of them.

I mow proceed to mention that gumeroits and waluable race of men, the ercole nograes; a tree of itrican growth, which has thus been trawsiglanted, cultivated, ant wach improved by its removal to the New World. The creole negroes stard alone and urconnected with overy other race of men, end thin circunstance alone would be sufficient, and indeed contributes much to the effed of uniting them
$3 \pm 2$





 zemsions to a mixture of bitkst, call themselses nestroex, wisla ren-

 nuenderes of aby ofleit cast. They are of handsome persons, brave and liardyy shenlent to chat shites, atad willing to plense; but they are canity aflrontel, amd the Jeast adtusion to their colour beiner made

 are :gain distiact tiom their brethren in slavery, owing to their supe-

 the mulattos, of whel every officer and soldice inest tus pustectly black. There are two of alwe regimerns for the province oll Porתambuco, which consitst of indetitite untrbers of men, who are dispersel all ove zhe cotantry. These regrments are distingmishoy frome each otleet by ale bamber of Glak Horriciues and New Henricpuest. The name of Heariques is derived tram the fanous chieftuin. Hearique Diaz, in the tinte of the Duteh war. I lisve heatd some of the most intelligent of thans; with whoun l batce conversed, spenk in entlousiastic termas of the aid which he frave to the thites in that strugerle. 1 have seen some portion of one of chese reteiments, in Recite, zecimmpanying the procession of our Lady of the Rosary: the patconess of negrocs. They were drasied in white cloth uniforms turted up with scarlet, and they looked very soldier-fike.

[^132]They wore in werable isisciplista, and secmert to wish to go throngla tlec duty of the thy in the besx mamer tiat they were able; they actinl with on appenrunce of ceol antul she desife of excelling. Thase of wisich I sipeak formerl a finfer bedy ot men thath any other sobliens
 days tide superior blatk officers in theit white usitionis. phay their respuct, so the govaran, exacely in the anme manner that the persons of any wiler cast, holding tomamijsions of equal rank ure expected to go through this form- These mun reseive no prav, so that theric neat ilppurances on such ocursions bespoaks a certain clegree of weath among thein; neithor ard the privares nor any ot ther persous belonging to those reyiments paik for tlicit setvices. Some of the whites rather rillicule the blatil officers, but vor in their presence; and the laugh which is raised nifoinat them is catised perhaprs by a lurking wish to prevent chis inssulter sace tion the displuy oi those diucinctions which the government hus wisely conceded to them, but which luar the European idess of superiorily. The old regiment of Henriquce wast, th the tinue that I resided in Fernambuco, without 3. colonel, and I heard moch discussion on several acuasions among the crecile negroes, afrowe tice fittest prerson to be appointed to the vacaut situraion."

The creole negrocs of hecife are, generally speating, mechanios of all dearerjptions; but they have not yet reachod the higher ranky of bife, an gerctemen, as planterss: and as murchants. Some of them have accumulated considerathle sums of money, and possens many slaves, to whom they teach their own trade, or these slares are taught other mechatical employments by whicta they may become useful.

[^133]






 may obation through their exabinh isf the daw, but whicin the decioged
 piting to. In late alt persons who are not whice, and twe born free, clase equally; mammited alaves ate plared upoti the aame firobitug us persents boro tree. IXewever, althonagle the liew exelusionn wither ex-

 serve in the ragimesuty of the 3 ite, or in any regiments exeruting those which are exclusively their wwa; bust by mears of this regulation thoy excupe che promesutions under whirh the other easts sutfer cluring ther tinc oi' reeruiting. 'The olliexis and melt wi' the Ilemriquc regiments aye so unised to tach other, that the private.s and subateeras ere lese linble to be appressed lay any whites man in offien cren Lhat line solaliters of that milatig regimens., Cf diese laterer be ofticers haviag a considenalle titige of whife, sometinas

[^134] while offerer, insteat oft putecting his soldieri.


 sumpo who revildes ir hrecifes wid they reveise their commissions

 may be lund absent frow whir howes without their maske'x consent. Sereral of these wen ate to be fonnd in every discrix, empioying thern-
 rectaired in that catling which fornes their pardicalat Buty. They are metn oí urdannted courege, and are ujually foltowed fy two or tirre dofss, whith ite traineil to seek oatt, nud if necessary to attack tad

 oblige azy xamuthorised person to give up to thent an apprebenied negro, for the gurpose of being by then retmmed to his owner.

If is scarcely reecesssry w name the mestizus, for they disually class with the malanos; for are they to be rasily distingaished from some of the dariser varicties of thig cast. Ah charf soloured man of a


 dividsuals whos compoose it. are jot sufficiently numecous te permit them to kake xheir place wolont the several great difisions of' the hnHzun firnily whind Sorat che population oi Brazila, aud therefore 1 did

 cuneptly heand of thetse people, blit neveributl an opporturnity of sezing any of ctrem Parcies of eiganos were int che hathir of appearing dor-

[^135]merly once every year at due vill:ne of Prsmadm, and ather places

 hend some of tham, their visits wete discominuch. Thas we se-

 They wander from place to phew ia pition of wen, women, and chiddren; exchanging, buying, abal solling jrorters anderatd and silver
 niers of alae loaded horses, and the young ones are placed within
 men, anal although the packharsen mase be overburthencd, these fellowe wild only accommodate mateters by ticliug sluw ty upan their own horses, and never think of clividing the louds more ectially: but they preserve thonselves and the animals uporn which oliey ride giaite unencumbered. Thacy are xaid to the ummiodtul of atl religious observatuen; and nover to hear alass or contess their sins.


There are and xeveral Mritixh thereftant oxtablished at Iecite, and a consul jikewise resides ar that pluce; but at che cince of nisy coming away, there was no protestant chapel, no eleargyrnath. nor even a
 believe, provided for the estrblisthemem of these thinget, but no steps have beon taken towards the accomplishment of the diteccions of the legislature. Without any outward appearavce of religicisn, how are we to expect that the penple of Brasil are co regard as as any thing better tham what we were represented to then as being in former times? -us pagrams, animalk, anul horses - prafonetie, bichoz, and cavallos, this is literally true; and although they are now awate that at eny rate we have the forms of human being, that we have the power of speech, and that we have our share of incellect in all the coremon transatetions of the world, srill how are we to look lor respect from them towards a set of mex, who bave no appearance at leist, of posm sessing aby religious feelinga ? It should be recollected that we are


 tish nation is to besoute respeetable; we mizy brave telatione of trade withe these people. but we stases. he content to be trerely se\%arded aceording 10 out utility; thete can be ne respect ity our deweral
 us liatened 20 in ary areat question, wicit would atake orar opibions:
 of religgons habils. Noe can we de acevounted as tuore than rasi-
 munity, who ate thas without suy common trond of unton. who have
 which all are ditected; wi have elor appearance of belanging to ane
 policical reasons for the establisianseut of a phece of worship are to
 to Christions onght to be indifferens. I well kiow that it is not witio
 although I couda tarry loog apon this sufoject. I wisls huwerer that I


 sonciments ate well known to most of thase persond witel whaten I asxratiated.

## CHAMTER XTS.



THE general oquity of the laws tegarding lice persons ot colour in the: Portagheze South Absern:in possessions, leas beten to a certais degrese avinaded to alath portiont of the population wich is is
 rendered less linad anck less intolorable than lonse al the diaraded beinge tyho drag on their cheerless exiscences unter i.te dominton




 volamadily performed. The conscionsmess that it the directions were hog willitgey atrended to, che xrbitrary will oit the master wotd enforce their performance, removis nurelt of the ilessere to please;
 can possibly ensuen apd thereforo do merit is atinciact to its arcomplishment: by him whose ardere ate obeycel ; wor dous the stave feel that he is doing in ary clogree more ihnt would be enforced if he hat mode pryy donbts. The world hats heard so much. ated froms so many guarters, of the enotmities which have beell wommite by shave-uwners in the colonties wide which bingtad has bad any contmunication; both from her own possessions, and from those of oher
nationz, that no doubts ema be enaertained of their exisennce. That such wil deeds are of firciulatz orcarrence, I wonk not wish to sup-
 lead rathar net be persmaded thatt man in so thepraved a state is often tolne met with; - that many civilized beings should have mate surla rapid retugns to bardoursun. I have to say, that in Trazil teso, such instances of barbirity are spekto of-that they do evbit; they aro,
 alsiuvs mentioned with nbluorrence; but is is enoughthent inscances shouk te recordeil, of the abuse of this absolute frower of one man
 aldowert to continue, to render the sysem thon wfich it is fousided an esil of suth eferal importasee, as an sanction all exertions for its rcmoval, as to make auy govermment overiook many incobvenienteca rattier thato ibtrease the maniacts of those luatan beinas who affer thais dreadtul clagradations.

The Indian slivery las heen for many yoars abolished in brazil, and the intiaiduals who are now ith lonadage in that comary are
 motluse aro of African origin; and no lime is deawn at which the nte:n approuch to the colruse and blood of the whicery entitles the child, whose motletr is a slave, 1 it frepilon. i hatwe seten several persoms who werte tas all appearance of whice orjegilts still doomed to alavery.

Staves, however, Brazit, lave mony adrantores ower their bee-
 Catholit: religion enjoins the observaneer, give to the shave thany day's of rest or time to work for his own protit; thires-five of these, and the Sundays besides, allow hinn to, employ nuch of his cime as he pleases, Few masters are inclined on pestraise che righly of their

[^136]shaves 1.0 dispose or there days as they think tié，or at any rate rew dare，whatever their inclinadiones laty ge，in brave jublic opirtion in depriving them of the incervald liom work witch tere law hata set apatt as theit mans，that their lives may bo renderal less irksome． The tame which is thets afforded cmentes itu slave，who is so inclined， to ticumutite a sum of romese；howeser this is by law his master＂； property，lione the incrupabitity wader whick a slave latoours of pos－
 there is ho itstimee on rexord in which a masten attemprech ro de－ prive his stave，ot these hard－earded gains．The slowe an oblige his master to－mammit hinn，on tendering to laim cle stum for whicf be wes fiest purchased，or the price for which he might be suld，if that
 bought\％．This regulation，like every one that is framed in fivour of slaves，is liahle to be ovaded，and the master sometimes does xeluse to manumit a valualale silave；utal no appeal is made by the mferer，owing to the state of law in that country，whiel renders it almost impossible for the slave to gain al hearing；and likewise ihis aequiascence in the injostice of the master proceeds from the dread，


[^137]

 the will－kxaun opinion of every juics in livour of this resulation，
 alane of the tower ormers of people，and likevise he witl be afrated

 alan inclividas is a creole same + ．In gemeral therefore no douthe are urged，wben applicution is made for mantanission by a slaro ho his maxier：waty is indeed oftentines prepateal for it by the habits

[^138]of induslay and regularity of his slave, and lyy commou report amony the other alaves and riec persons upon the eatate, thet the inulividual
 The master might ircleed deprive the slave of the finuits of his own labour, hat this is never thought or̈, because the stave prexerves his money in in secret place, or has ontrusted it to some persons upon whom he can depend, medwonld suffer anypunishment rather than disclose the spot in which his wealth lies concealed. A suili more forcible reason chan any odyer. For the forbearatuce of the maters is to be found in the dreard of acting agrainse public opinion; in the shame which would follow che commisision of suct an am; and perhays the natursl goodness which cxists in almom every human being, would make him shum such ofross injustice, would make lim uvoid such a deed of baseness.

A slave is often permitted by his owber to scel a master mote to his liking; for this purpose a note is given, declaring that the bearer has leave to enter inco the aervice of any onc, upon the price which the master demands being paid by the purdiuser. WWidb this the shave spplies to any individual of property whom he may wish to serve; owing to having heard a good report of his character towands his slaves, or from any othor csuse. This is st freculut practice, and at least admits the possibility of escupe fown it severe state of bondege to one that : is leas irksome

A considerable number ol slaves exe manumitted at the dearli of their rusters, and indeed aome peraona of large property fail not to aet at liberty a few of them during their own life-cime. A deed of manumission, however sinmply it may be drawn out, cannot be sen aside; a register of thene papers ia preaerved at the office of every notary-public, by which any distress which might be occazioned by the loss of the originals ia provided against, for the copy of counse bolds good in law. A sluze who has brunght into the woulcl, and bas resured ten children, ought to be reec, for so the law ordains; but this remulation is generally evaded; and besides, the mamber of childrep




 firestam who bave hal commeclions widh Jemale shavas to manumit. thetix offopring ; and inamames vectur of the npansors fortorming this

 Thete the pricle: of thexe will be too great to atlow of ilicix god-child remainifar in siavary ${ }^{+}$. Thua by theis own exertione, by the farour of their masters, and by othor memens, the individuta who ramin their frectom ann:ailly are very mumerous.

The conntirts of slaver ise different situations are witlely alisproportionate; wlidst some are donmed to att exisience ot oxdessive toil and misery, from the mature ot heir oceupationa and the chan racters of their natitery, others lead a eompuratively tasy file. It

[^139]





 sulted ： zeal the camventeneg of che parchaser ate otze：cr consmitest hata


 he has to erdure ilo still incomparably greater dieiowace or beas－ idy with a tyrannicel，an inconsiderate，or ：peevish master，whowe commands are not to the called tu quention，w！ave wiflis wholete， and tron whom twe gossibility of appeal is tir removed．and that ot＇ redress placed at a sitl greater distance，Mavters are punishoci by
 such behovionr slould reach the ear of tire Ontidor of the frovince； bue I never beard of［moshment having been carried iarther thank this trifliser marmer of corrcetions．The enonluments whicti procech from this mode of chastising the offenders weigh leavity it its ravalu；the injury which the stave has reccired is nut，$i$ ant afraid，the only catse which uretex the exaction of the stipulaterd pemalty；ol this the slave does sot receive any prol－

All slaves in Brazil follow the religion of sheir mastets ${ }^{-i}$ ；and nat－



 poocf to prodees，chen？the master would nerer tlink of orciering the slave to be whe tixed．


wichstanding the imphece state in wheh the Christian church exisk in :bat coututry, stitl such are doe beneficent cfocts of the Christian rcligiont, ilas rhese. its auloghed ehildren, are improved by it to at1 infintie clegree; aud the s!ave who ntterds to the strict ols.servance of celiftious ceremonins invarially proves to be a goond aervant.
 before they leave their own shoren, and on their artival in Brazil they are to learn the doctrines of the cluech, sutch che duties of the religion iutu whith they have enterad. These bear the mork of the royad ciowis upon their breaste, which delwtex atat they lave wader. gone the coremony of biapoish, and tikewine athat i.he Jing's daty has hent paid opon them*. The slateb which are imported from other purts of the const of sfficn. arrite in Brazil unbagtized, and before the curemeny of making them Clurishians sta be periornued upon them, thoy nanst be taught ecortain prayers, for the acyuiceraenc of which one year is allowed to the master, kntioce lie is ohliges to present the slove at the parislt churct. This law is not aluags strictly adbered to as to time, but it is never evaded altogethor.






- Labut mays that the inhatsiant of Sit. Dominga wert in the klubit of marking alue






 tem, vii. p. 260.

The St. Dunsingo planters have paid sesurely far all their mixalecels, and fherefione of

 like cuttle.

















 Lhe starament.



 money which aho indundrious sitave is colketing for the parpose of purchnsing fitis freedon will oftentinees be broughtit ont of its coneculment for the decoration of a saint, that the donor alay lecoome of importance in the society to which he betomig. The vegresu lave one invoration of the Viririn, (or 1 might almost anty oue virgin) which is peculimily their own. Our Lady of rlac Rosury is even somelinues painted with it blatk fite mod liands. Ii, is in this man ner that the shaver are leal to place their ntidention unom an object is whicle they soon take men intereat, lett from whith no igjury ean proceech townards themselves, nor can may through its meanta bo by them inflicted upon their maters. Their ideas are removed from aty
thonght of the customs of xheir own country，and are grided into a chsamel of a totally different natores and corapletely uncora－ neeted with what is practised there．＇The（deection of at King oE Congos（which I heve nepaliorwed in chapler 13，）by ithe indiridatals who cones from that part of Africa，seems indeed as it it would give them a bibs lowards the castoma of thair sutive soil；but the Pra－ cilian Kings of Congy worship Our Yacly of the hixisery，and are drussed in the deess of whito unen；they and their sulyjects diancs． it is arae，after the mamer or the country；but to these feminais are adnited Afritate negrocs of onther mations，creole blawis，aud mulatos，ant of whon dance adion the same manner；and ldaese chasees ate now as much the mational clances of braxil as they are of
 Wheír own dialer：ts ate altowed to lay dorrasint tontil they are by mand of alyens gutite kargortion．No compaliion is resorted to to make them subrece the habits of cheir maskera，but their idens are inaen－ sibly led to imitate and aclopt them，The mastera at the same time inbibe aome of the custonas of their slaves，and thets the superior and bis dependant are beoughe neerer to caela olher．I donbt not that the systern of baptizing the newsy－jtriported negroct，proceeded rather tron the bigratry of the Poxterguege in tormer times than from any political pan；but it this hiad the most bencifial effects．The slaves are rendered more tractable；loaides being better men arad women，thoy become more obedient servants；they are brought under the contronl of the priesthood，and even if this whes the ordy additional hold which was gatired by their entuance into the church， it is a great engine of power which is thua brought into action．

But in 110 ciremastance has the introduction of the Christian reli－ gion among the slavea been of wore service than in the elange which it has wrought in the mon regaxding the treatment of their women， and in the conduct of the females themselves．A writer of great roputation on West－Inclian sffairs，states that the intronduction of the marringe ceveniony among the slaves of the colonies of which he treais＂would be utherly impracticatle to any sood purpose；＂whed


 sities, and supersritioser" In ir no that jy ine meveuts atiene thingers

 Where the inforest uit clae mister is concerned, the " manners, propensícian, and superstitions" witl soon be overcome. I bope that a: IIe
 staic of barfuirisin tecat their women in the samis manner; the evil lies not with the race of beings, bot in the dreniltul situation to which this one is reduced. Why, theretore, now anrempt to japprove and to benefit whe individatals of whieh it is compozed?

The slaves of Brazil are regularly married necording to the forms of the Catholic church; the bains are published in the same manner as those of free persons; and I beve seen nany huppy couples (as hanpy at least as slaves can lue) with lavge farnilies of childrea cising around them. The masters enconrage marrisges among their slaves, for it is from these laveful connecxions that flicy can expert to increase the number of their creoles. A slatre cannot marry without the consont of his ragter, for the viear will not publish the banns of ratriage without this sanction. Ir is likewise pernitted that siaves should marry frce persons; if the woman is in bondage, the children remain in the same state, kut il tue man is a slave, and she is fiee, their offopring is also free. A slave canot be matried until the requisite poajers have bcen learmt, the nature of confession be understood, aud the Sacrament can bereccived. Upon the extates the master or roanager is soon matle woquainted with the predileotions of the slaves for each otber, and these being discovered, marriege is forthwith determined upon, and the irregular proceedings are made lawful. In towns there is more licentiousness amorg
the riefrocsi ats there is atnong all orther elassess of mpen*. The patssion of love ja surposed only to exist ior a certaja state of civilization, adod this ray be granted withour at the wame time declaring tiok negroes ute incaproble of lesting uttachment, withoun supposi)g that the cesengl of eacin sex is mere animal desire, monenaceterl with predilectiots. That species of arfection rilhich is heightencd unial personiul pussestion is almost torgocten, doubters is roc felt lar humsur beiner who are in a state of barbarism; but still a negro may be attreherf, ho may fix upon onc object in preference to all others. That this is the case, $I$ oan wauch; $I$ lueve known and bave feeard of
 brovert to visit at chosen one; in whith joturics by nitht have been made atier a day of firligue; in which greut constancy bas been shewn, adod a determination that the feclings of the heart shall not the controuled. *

The great proportion of men ufon many of the estates, produces, of neccsity, most mischievous consecquences. A supply is reçuisire is kerep up the number of labourers. The wonuen are more

[^140]



 nayy be less dànligy thin than of ocher descriptions ot purbuls, who





I shall now state che nusmue: in whinilh tiul Alijgans are fransposted fromy thpit own country to Brazil, tmil ijw cispossl of them on cheir aurival in Sout' Americe; the varuecters oi the sevenut Atrican pations witth which the shipe are loarled; cle nondition of atose who
 or coitone estates, -uard in the Sontan or catile distritto.

As the voyage from the coast of Altiva to the opockite shores of Suath America is uasually show, for the winds are subject to jitt]e variation and the weatlocr is fine, the versels, wheot are omployed in the traffic axe generelly speaking smand, and ate not of the best construction. The situation of captsin or master of a shate ship is considered of secondary xank in the Portugueze mocrishat-service, and the pursons who are untrally so oneupied are vastly indersor to the gencrality of the individuals who commancl the large ard regilux

[^141]


 erec. I marc thal suspect, that do arremition is paid to chis
 the arrivel as fifcile of a cargo of slickes, the vules or the pore direct
 which ia art oipy qpots and suficiently distanc frome the town to preworn fhe admitiance of any' infecrions disotcler. is' any strel, should exict among the jewly-inported negroes; anct yex dic plece is at л commenient distance jor the puchanseri Sc. Amaro bejug situated itrmolintel
 Flowever, like thatig oxiners, this exeellent axatagement is thut streuctod to. and awen if the slaveg are remorket for it few dach 20 S. Antaro, they are soon conveysul bark to the wown liore they
 of docencs: of lumanity, and df dies attention wo tive gelecal healthe

 clinate wite not so very excellelit is it ik, this practice mondal be

[^142]discontinued，hut iff it was now ful a son tw，ant we romanty was


In the day－tinee vome ut̃ the streats ot Hecile：nave in trat lized

 dred．The metus wear a smbll piece of blue choth ：ound their uaists，


 covering the upper firets of the body．Towe stencid whicts is creured by these assemblanes is alinost intulemble to one who is abaceus－
 beyond suy thing．These people do not houmber soans to fest their situations any farcher then that it is uncomortalse．Their fook con－ sists of salt meat，the flour of the mandioc，heans，and plantains ucca－ sionalle；the rictusts for eacla day are cooked in the middle o the street in an enormous culdron．Ais night they are driven into one or more warehouses，and a driver stancls to count thetn is they puss； they are locked int，surd the door is ngaith copened at ther－break on duw following motaing．The wish of these wretched erevtures to eacape from this stute of inaction and discomborr．is marifisced upon ahe appearance of a purchaser；they stat up willugly，whe placed in the rowe for the parpose of being viewed and handled like cuttic；and on being chosen they give sigus of nuach pleasure． 1 have lazd many opportunities of seeing sloves bourth，for miver pisticular fitends at
 tions of grief at parting trom each other；but inctribute this to the cheand of pomishment if there had been any flow of feeling，and to a resigged or rather dispairing aemsation which checks any shew of grief，and which lues prepared chem for the worst，by making thern indiffercnt io whatever may occur；besides，it is not ofren that a family is brourlat orer tagether，－the separation of relativer andfriends has taken place in Africa It is among the founger part of the assemblage of persons who are exposed for sale thet pleasure is par－




 conbideruitom ore 1.thes juint lies entirely will the owner oit the catgo*.




 often in traveding mel with mony partios going up is their new
 thing is betler than to sil: at: the rlon ol the slave ancerthame in laecife. The new fratster toos does neory haing in his power to lieep them

[^143]in good hamour a.b ditit, whaterer his condmet: mey aferwards be do wards ilicins.

The staves which are usually brought to Pormanduce are known ander the narnes of Ankrola, Congro, Reaboto, Anjico, Galsam, and Mosambique 'lhese lisr liave only been injoured ot' Jate years, cuing, I rather imagime, to the difficulty with whiel shaves lave lgeen olutained on the westem caust of $A$ frien, catesed by the vigilabee of the British eraisers in tlat gowter, ankl dae vexptims to which some of the slave slips have beere liable from delendions: although thay were ultimately staffered to proceed on their voyagea.

The Angolit negroes make the besi slaves; many of thers have been in bondage in their ans country, and therefore to these the change is for the better. Some of thert have ovell surved the whites in the city of Loundis, which is the principal Formoneze sellument upon the coast of Aftica. But others were free in Angola, and ouvsequently to these ia allotted a lific of diaappointment and vexationt, whenever they remenber their own pountry. The negroes from Angolt are hovevex usually tractable, and may be taitght to partiortin the menial services of a house or stable withour much pains being taken with them; and they ofus shicw great attachnent th, fidelity.

[^144]attal lonesty. The Ancrola naproes are likose wivo most mommonly extert themselrex to purehase their ownt trasedon. The Congo negroes fartake much of the charater of the Angoinas, boing enually
 regatar romine of field Jabont. They whe lets nuict in their move-
 sonrageons; they olatain in a short period a linowiedice of the Portagueze lemgrage. The Rebolos can searcely in person be distinguished frum the two former, being stouly made, and rowt tall; they have a black ikilu, but it is not shiniag, aded the fentures are flut. They seem to be a branch of the Angolans and Congas, but they are more obstinate, and none subject to despond than the others. Theste thres tribes appear to have loelonged originally to the same nation, for many pasts of their charactera ase similak, their persons are of the same noould, and the dialects of euch aufficiently rosmble aach other whe totherstood by all the chree.

The Anjiec uenroes sleew many marks of being of another nation; Wey make gool slaves it they sre well treated, and anc yot proserved under due concroal. They are difficult to train, aud bear $\pi$ heasy yoke inpatiently; there is in them mach independence of character, if they dareal to show it; there is also much cunning, and the desite and carpability of over-reaching. Their persons ure tall and well formed, their skins are of a ghowsy black, their cyes are expressive, and theit countenancos plainly denote that it is not hy their own will that they omtinue in slavery. 'They soo not however numerous. Great neatness is shown by them in their bousehold artangements, and rhay offen exert themselves to obtain money; but they are less carcful and purdent than the nations of which I have alrcady trented. All the Anjico negroes have thrge gasheo on tuch cheek, which arc cut in a citcular form from the ear to the mouth."

[^145]The Gaban or Gaboon begroes have not been very long intro－ daced，an：l from the well know：1 genemal eh：ariteler of the ration they are sold at a reducel price．I base heard mans persons wate thar they are caunibibls＂．Ther appear to be in a srill atore savager stace than any of the fommer－antitioned nations，mal ure moclz given to despondency and consectuent suicide；indeed ten and everi twenty that have been purchased together have，in some insuitices，in the wourse of a short period，all died from derspair，or have put an end to their lises in at more summary manner，it is with difficulty that the Gaboons ean be titaght to perform try lidoont above thet of the simplest description；and sometimes they cemain for yeans untap－ tized，from the great arouble which is required in mstiug them arti－ culare any sounds to whicts they have not becu accustomed．Fet it is rather thas they will not be kanght，than chat they cannot learth， for I bave heaid many planters eay，that if a Gabam neito con be made cheerfuls，and is induced to tathe an interest in those persons who are around him and in his oceupations，he bedomes a most use－ full and intelligent slave．The Gubam negroes are tall and bandsome， and cheir skins are very black and shining；the features of maoy of them are good，being much less fist and blumt than whose of their countrymen in general．

The Nosambique negroes are a poor and ugly race of beings，lan－ gnid and inactive，and subject to despondency：Their colour inclines to brown，but stikl they have completely the negre fearutres．Ay the price of these slaves is ruuch below that of any other descrip－ tion of negroes，some of the planters have taken them on trijd，but they are skid to have many of the bad qualities of the Gaboans with－ put their hardiness．

A negro will sometimes tell bis master that he is determined to

[^146]die, and too oflem the offecin of his resolve hogin shorty afterwards to fie perceived; he beconves thin, luses his appetite, and dies menost a skeletort. One of whe mbans which it is very pencrally said that: these miseruble bainme employ for the purpose of dextroying themsclves, is that of eating ansiderable quatities of lime and earch, whicfi either producos emsination or dropay. Bur it ia atrange that a Habit of eating lime and carth shonld bo contracted in some instances
 chidden ata by bose who nre in slawury. This practice is uot trated as if it wore a clisorder, lout it is accounted a habit, which, by attention from thase who huve the charge of the chiliten - in watehing and punishing them, may be conquerert without the aid of medicine. I know of some instances in whith no medical teratsone was dermed neccasary, but the individuais rccovered toy momes of chastiaement and constant vigilance. It is a subject upon which I was often led to converse, and I discopvered that most of the frec-born familios wero sequainted with the practice foom experience among their own childven ar those of their neighboure, and that they allways considered it us it lubil and not as a diseage. Among adulte, however, slaves are infinitely more naljocel. to it than frete peryons:

Pennatobuco hay never experienced any serious revolt among the slaves; but at Rahia there have been several conmocions $\dagger$. I bew lieve ibat Bahia contains fewter free people chan Pernambuco in proportion to the number of slaves; but I cannot avoid attributing the quietude of the latier in some measure to the circumatance of few of the Gold Coast negrocs being imported to it, whilst at Bahia the princjpal atock of slayes ta from that part of Africn. It is by the

[^147]Mina negroes jas findia lhat the woits htwe been mesde, and by the
 peopple nader different mumes, sul they are ruphtented in possessitig great firmners af migal amall bod, and ís.ucionantens of dixpenition.
 of $\mathrm{Brasil}^{+}$, are cvidmals, from their practices, the satue description of persons. The religion which the Breailitan siaves are cauflat, has jikewise a salurary effeet upore div point, fere it tencls to lessen no

 stitious of their mative land aze rapleced by others of a mona haronIess nature. The dreadtial effects of taith in 1.he Obedt-men which sometianes occur in the Jritisht roslonice, are not experjenced in Brazil from the Mowidinctreisas : beliel in their powers is certaialy not extinguisliod, and indead even wame of the creoles intibe a notion of the efficsey of theis spells, but the effect's ot these are not generully fett.

The slaves who are employed in Recife may be divided inta two classes; houseland slawes, aud thor which pay a weekly stipend to their owners proweseling from the enraings oi' worme employment which dows nos olblige tham to be under clue immedate eye of the master. The first class have linule chance of arxining alteir freedom by their ows exertions, and are subject to the caprice and whiths of their superiorx; but some fow are manumited by the hindness of those whom they have rexyed, and the cloathing and food which is afforded

[^148]on hem is genterelly betier than that: which the other class obtaitas.

 pureloges their own freestom, if they hive the reguisite prodence and sceadineas to allow rheir exmings to ecenrmulate; but tow ofiern the indecoracras to axpernl them rooliahly are axfficiontly powerfill to make lisese puple swerve tron their puxpose. They generally am more each day tham the mastar exacts, and have besidex the Sundays and hoolidays a tbeir own; and if the slave leocds and elkeithis himaelf, to these ind acldel the Saunday of every week t. I think Whut allowing largely for hina io supply overy thing requisite for his supporl surd deeont appeurance, and yet somethana for what lom person in such a rank in life may be accounted luranry, a slave so cireumstanced may in ten years purchase bis ficedom. If his value is great, in is becausie his trade is lateratioe, so that these things leerer pase with ewh other. The women hate likewise some employmenta by which they may be enabled to gein their literery; they make swicelmeuts and cakes, and are sent out as conka, nurses, housekeepers, stc.

Croole negrocs and muluttos are gerserally acconnted quicker in Jesuring may trate than the Africans. This sthperior aptítude to profin: by instruction is doubtless produced by their acquaintance from infancy with the mannors, eustoms, and langaage of their maziens. Frow the little experience, however, which I have had, and from the general remarka which I have gathercd from otlucrs, who might be judged better acquaintod than myeelf wilis siaves, I chink that an

[^149]Africuu who has become chcariml．and memz tw late forgotern his tozner atare，is a nore valuable slave chan a ereobe twerro or mu－ fettic．He will be ge：xer：ils miore fic io be unste：l．Fur from the
 borts they beav the goke ot siavery with innptience ；the daty sientr out so many intividuals ot thetir own cazloz who ate in a staze of

 sidewarion with which the tree persons of mised wixts are trested， rends to inc－ase the discontert of＝laci－lotother；what are in slavery． The Alriczens do nor fext thia，kn rlate are considereci by abeis erte－ ole brethren in solour，as seing so connletely inferior，that the line which by public opivion has been drawn between clum，makes the
 gioally of the satne soock．

Miserable sbjects are at times to be seme iu Tieciie，asking alms in tarious quarters of the town，aged and diserased；some oi these persons have becn sifwes，and wher，foum inciotsity they have betn rendered useless，their masters have manumitred thenti and thus being turned sway to starve in their old age，or in a crippled state， their only resource is to bute in the public streets．Whese instancos of gross injustice and depravity in mataers，ato not masy，but that the should occur，is sufficient to cause the aid of lem to be culleal in，that the exjsferce of them shouk be prevented．

The sugar－plantations which belong to ahe Pervedicrine monks and Carmelite firiars，are those upon which the labour is comshacterd with the freatest atention to swstem，and with the greatest regard to the comfort and ease of the slaves．I cant nosre particularly speak of the estates of che Benedictine mouks，because riy residencu it Jaguarite grave me dialy opponunities of hearing of the manage－ ment of one of their establishments；and ajthougle surar－works were not ereched upan the cetate in question，stifl the number of negroen which were upon it，was fully adocjuate to this purposc．Besides，in some years canes were planted upon ith which were to be ground at
some neighbourirg mill．The lieguent comnunieation，likewise， Whelt there wis between the slavex of this plantation and thoxe of
 maste，enabled me to astertain that at the entabialiments which are awned by the bemediotioes．are condueced in the same mamer．
 jat manber abont one huthdred．The theteleat are careditly taught


 that every jurxum a aid lo at home．The young children ave allowed
 day；and their ouly ocenpation for certaith hours it to pred cocton for
 wh：ch are rotten，abal orher wark of the same dencription．When they atrive it the age of tell amat welve years，the erirls spin thread for anising the coarsu cotion atuta of the country，and the boys attenad to the horses and oxima driving blown to pasture，ife－If a child evineats jas：aliar fituess for ary irale，eare is taken that his talents shutai be applied in the manmer whicht he woukl limself prefer．A few of them are taught motsic，and assist in the chureh Cestivals of the robnvent．Martiages ate encouraged；as eatly as the nge of seven－ keen and cigbleen years for alie meth，and at fourteen and diticen for the girls，many of tinese unions take place．Immediately after cheir entratite into this state，the people begin to labouc regulatly in the feeld lor their oxphers；ottentimes botli boys and erith revuest the manager to allow them to commence their like at daily toil before the age which is puinted out by the regulations ot the conrean；and． this occurn because they are not permilated l．on pasess provision grominds oi their own antil they labour tor their masters．Almost every description of labour is done by fiecen＇ork；ant the task is nsuilly accomplishad by three o＇elock in the aftemoon，which gives to those who are industrions an oppornnity of working daily upan tieir owin grounds．The slavea are allowed the Saturday of every


 cl：e monks and wben a magre diss ve obtaini lits irectens．tie is per－




 tiay to say Viosg．C＇pon ilie otber Benedictine extates cliere are







 coloured rrivatto slaves：but when the approsimation to ihite blood becomes considerable， 3 merriange is projected for the indiv vicical mith a person of a darker tint Nio complidsion is made use of to oblige aly onc to marry，anci therefore nisuly of the xlaves，

 not permited to marry free pomen．Hawiy ressons awe alleged im favour of this regulation．One is thaz they do not wish that a siave thould be meeleas in the way of inctessing the stock of the plazt－

[^150]

 buratae he ix cluriag the whole of che dey awsy from their prople, ar is uthoaps enpde? Ead hy the ooranctucy, ond thus in pars de-



 gorvert. Fier hasband has purchanal swe feredion wid that of her chiltirer: ; be poasesses nwo Aficical sherc5, tbe profits of whose tabcur


 clunge for hamself to the montia; but they tell birn the: the \}ajerit-

 is bite of the strobecest inctures of mad's desire to act for himseif; Nicohal enjoys the entite alizection of tha estato, and every corationt
 fomphome, he is as weid mounted at the geverstity of the rich
 and indeed is allowed anl whe privilemes of free noms and yet the













 cometiothe ytill, upon nowe of the extates, exfeption ct.cres of che

 mude rle grimagy obect; - the cnit to whtich utl othes vonsiderations mbist fave place.
 wome of trose ot the richt Bonzilian ownase, who go on quictly, if not syxtematicalfy. Ihe: the lathour is noc in generad done by picce-vorix, nor do the laboures: fiturjate for their owat subsistence; and the slavex are semt to the fiatal at an enther mege chan they ought, and earlion than is praetised upon tho ewtreens estries, Sonse of the plantations, howerer. whith are owaca by individuals, do give the Saturisy of each week tine the stive to zuppone himselt".
 St. Ferntr and Carato estates; and thongh ogreat aruedtics art puth


[^151] vetions, weald, I rather inageises, be thote etficacious. The pride of thos siave, whe is ubliged bo alppear almonit with hir knek covered with sears, is at ifirs mach havt; burs the shane of being seen in


 boen rentumet by siavcs whol hate beeu o!ten so treated, to puaisin



 this wand scen io domoterinat thje classu: wel posamses thone af bawe





 thus inested, rakes awity the luorror which he wontal utherwise firel at the kind of chastixement. Ihis protex the defosed state. - the

 to be, wotild be a recosamentiation to sumte persorss atpat purkaps the feeling is in the matio right ; fine if the eriene is qुrisith the punishonent shoishd ber refequate, and by this meany of ecrifinement

[^152]
 depression of spirits whiche is prochaced by f．ke lonestincess of the situationt，mey lariag about a robreceion ol＇ecror；lat by alo whip， andry und vindictive deelings are aseited，or denpair is the ents－ sequenes，and in either eate alte owner will txe ingutula in the for－
 the death or itadion of the sulfirtri．The objectish which is prits－

 being，is tos be wet with in chte loss of time which is ineured by eonfinement．a due Jencight bat $X$ thisk，boat this watid be
 Which the negro soffiers in undergoing puaishneat by cloe whip， and even of time daring the period that the shave is recoverints from the stripes Iron collars，chains，and otler punishments of the same deseription are likewiac mate use of，and ure liable to the objection of renderiag eallous the sense of shatre．I have observed， and have offon heard it renumberl，chat searcely muy of the slaves Who receive fiequent correction，ever gain their freetom through their own exatioxas－They band slispostitionss ant incelinations of namy，and the indifference which is purkiluced in others by mevere punishment：，sufliciently account for this fach．＊＊

The ereole sluves are nowally employed as tradesmen mad lonag hold servanta；even upon che sugur pinatations this is the cnae where they are not mote momerouts than what are necessary to fill these aleparcments；to the Aficand the feld labour is chiefly ell－ lotied．The nogroes ince sent to work ak the surn rises，and fir from being more capable of exertion in the eaxly part of the mom－ ing than under the mid－day heai，the Africany are inatctive and

[^153]ianytid，until the increaking power of the stin removes the chill wheth they receivis frous the cowl morningain．They frequently leatve their hats wrapped up in their coverlids of bitice，seemingry much distressed by the cold．The negrows breakfase about eight o＇clocks， atsd for dhis weal luald an hom or less is allowed；and some masters expect that theit slaves shalt breakfact before they commberes their work in the mornimg；－that is，before sumsise．The time which is sllowed for dinager，is formere twelve oclock tili two，when the Lubourers nuxain continute their latuout until labli pasi kwe o＇clock． They are nows afonerally speaking，expected to piels s amale burde of giass for the master＇s sadile－Jorses，in some of the nejighbouring provision groands；but if this is ant renquisites fle work conatianes urcil sunmsel，affout six o＇elock．On the ascival of the people at home in the evening，they sure sometimes rexquired to santpe the rind frotu the mandioe for about onc or two houra；but sa none of the primeipal estatex make a practice of selling the fout of the mandioc，and only prepare the quantity which is necessary for the sathsistenec：of the siaves；this labour only occars about once in each week，or less fiequently．In crop time，the work is ady discon－ rinucd on Sundays and holidays；and，ss is practised on board vessele ath see，the negroes relieve ench other at stented bouss．

The iield negroes are attended by afoifor or driver，who is some－ times a white man；but more fierquently a free mulatto is employed for the purpose．It is the practice likewise of some of the zlapters to appoint a creole，or even un African slate to the situation．Upon a fictur who is a slave，more reliance is to be placerl chan upon a free person of colour for 1 fic slayc，feifor becomes responsibie to lhis master for the work which is to be executed，and is therefore carefit that every one sfroukd do his daty．It is a тemark which is gene－ rally made，that the slave feitores recurite to be walched，filat they may be prevented from being too rigorous towards those whorn they ate sppointed to command；their bebaviour is usually more over－ bearinge than that of free men；and next to the slaves the European fivitores are the most tymanical．It ia lukewise frequently observed
dat even manamisten Africalms whe beeome poisexsed of slaves, which oceasiontilly orcurs, zeeat them in a severe atsil unfeefintr meanbere that is notbinerg sofeenat, but rather mendereal more vishent, lay a remembrance ot their own suftering Expurience in troulble too offen heads blose whe thave xuteeded to efte jeffiction ot equak
 the luman being beromax eallents; it jo tormented, and torments with the same indiflierence-

Medicul attendances is ans :o we:l provicled fins as it ought, whide
 than from the mapligence of the pianters; indeed due attention in this rexpect is so much uble so evichenty their interest. that this aldue, independent of auy feeliners of homanity, would make
 I to not think that the ford which the siavery receive is in sufficisent
 they wre wrpured 10 performe and it would be nodoubtedly mucth tew sa;inty, if the days of interden rest did not supply then with an andition to the stasik of provisinns whith the mastec afforty. I lave in another place satels, that the vetactatile pate of che food of the stray plamtation dergencs is ethicfiy the flotur of the mandioe; the animal foed is , nemerolly the carne do Scens, sals ment which gonnes from Rio Grande do Sul; and soumetimex sald. finh supplies ita place. Thie cloathing whicls is witen ef the shavisi hy the master consists of a shitrtand drawers of the cotton elellh of the country, and a straw hat: a plece of baize and a mat, are filecwise affordent to them ; but these things arcenot renewed ix often at a due consideration to theit comforts would demand. Although the megroes are fed by their masters, still as Innds are to be had in sbundance, the

[^154]alares are permitted to plant whademer ahey thenk fit，an！to sold the produce to whom they please Many of thern rear pigs and poliders， and accarionally a horse is kepl，from the thire of which mothey may be olbained．＊

The newly－imported negroes are 11 sually sent to work too soon ater their itrival upon the estoters if proper core is cizken of chem， chey max indeed be cmployed in alnustat arty description of labour an the end of ejerh．or te：s monlis：but not tanch before insis perioct． Damp situations slould be awoidod，ant they ondit oot to be semt out is the worning earlier then eight oclock，and they should break－ list before they leave home：by these precautions the loss of many slaves might be preventerl；and chey sbould be followell withent any deviation，ar least until the new negrocs have been for a twelve－ month in the coundre wo which chey have been tratisperted．$\dagger$

I have reprusetated shavery in what 1 conceise to be the state in which it isually existe wporn the plaritations ；but any womforts which the human bence who are so circumstanced enjoy，and sny respite from severe labour is so emirefy at the will of the thaster，that the instinnees in which the fate of the slave is hard almost beyond endu－ rance，are dreadfilly tion frequent．Some planters follow the system

[^155]of performing sertain kibsix of work durime the parly part of the
 the thay；－for itastance，the wlate of the labour of whishite flat naw－ dioc fiour，preparing wish the toet the alay morning brieks and cartheaware，also butiding much walis：betides vensoving tuticks， fire whod，astd so forth from ene place to anolaer．This exiva worb is calted quingixgoo．I eve：，knew of one itusance in which the feed

 For this marner of procesulisp there was no vedsern，extrepting that it was the master＇s pleasure so pract，for the season was fieveratable， and not tou far ankaneet wo dinve contimued the work in the usust motneer and yet have aceouoplished the phaning of the fichet in proper
 Trust mat enter into farther deteils ujxon this part of toy subjech The rolntion of wach misuneds do mote herm that gond，they serveas examples for those who have unprincipled minds and uriceling hearts；and who roay consider thent an poths in whiclathog may tread， becatuge others have trodders in tlaem，rather itan ux precipsecs which oughe to be evolded．The potver which is entrusierl to ats individual is too treat，phorses mant crise，the sprstem is raclically bad，and every possible ments ahomld be gut into action tor ite entiopadion．

I amp nexpainted witl the owners of a lew estation who profese to purchase noy wlaves howeter bad their charactert may be，if they can obtain them below the uxual price．The persoms of wecondncy tank who posneas only a few slaves，and bave not the same means of punishing them if they mishehave which exist upos the great eetates， dianose of those of their negroes wino act improperly to the rich mert who will purchese them．There is an estane in the Mata，of whicb the oumore is known to buy any slave，bowever itl lisposed the may be，prowided he can obtain him at a low prioc．T＇tis man thanages to keep his estate in the best ardex possible；every thing goes on regulariy apors it．历e even prefers purchasing erenle staves to Afri－ sang；altłough the former are invariably more difficult to saanager

He is atman of docerminerk character; on the arri\%aj of roe of thene new slaves, fis laises him ta the prison of the testute and ohews him the stocks, the ehnins, the whipe, Ece swing ${ }^{*}$ thes is what vour atc to expect if you cobtinue ; y yrutur evil prevtiats ;" then at hut is givio to thes slave: and also claurits sud osher aricieg of womfort, all of which are bo an sxate od groxtcor neannexs, and sto afforded in leteger



 suffered a certain akotee of tunistmmpl for atriking a superior, but
 held thax of seconul driver. If this platater aid not onle his peoplts with great aevecity when guilty, his estate woald soon become a der: of thisves and raurderers, fort it is well haown of what bsd materiaks
 nearily ralgited to strese of the first Similies of the province- it is well that a man shoulil appeer, who is williug for flee sañe of a cri-
 to take the twoublo ayd wadengo the xish of persman and of property ir controuling a the of uneductiods, ment, who eatonow conserthendy have any ravinuiple of action, and whobe babita are wif the worst descripition atcoorling to presene circumatancea he is pif dervige ta the connery: tor thexe fellows are hept quiers but what a dreadful siate it is, tipat the iustitutions of a countiop should be so fiamed that there shomald possidily exist in its certite, a borty of human being of whicls many of the individuala axe eribuinsts; next, who certainly
 neserie many of may arot be inflicted by the person to whoan they arto aubservitiat.

THue alaves of the ootton estakes underigo, ut rasy be mifycced, the sarne kind of purislurenti, and are shigject to the same upecies of
 unean, as in other paris, is conducted on that whole in in suofe lenient SK 둔
 They are lowevar liable to greatce privalious Iront the hathre of the

 Fiod is mot so cusity olbaibod it jiarts which are so dishant
 experienced in the sole of tha watidioce the beuts and the maize
 begrow of the cortom districts somerime syisin their freerlom by rlieir own exertions, for as conton is a stosol. lucrative plant, and fec inaty
 those of the slates who plant regridarly and gather clueir tritinge quanfinite, fiequeracly in the end meet wish the reward of cheir labuors.
 sistatice $i$ necossaty, snach work being requited to be tone within it given time, owitug to the seasons in plantilsy it, and to the nature at the cane when it ripens; and there is likewise tue diflicalty of havisur it simond, and of roceiving the proceceds, \&c- In themanatiocory the stave has not his properi.y under his own eyc; it passex chrough the haods of many othes individuals, and as theme is no persothal rexpect bor the owner of the properts, nor any ineans os' redress in case afiapustice, the slave fass onIy a paor cilathes of being properly dealx with; the above circumatances buink those to which athe culture of ithe surarcone is aulpject, it is scarcely ever planted by slaves on thatir own account.

The cantle districts employ fow slaves, and thene are ocrupied an home, for scanculs any of thent, wless they are creales, are demed carable of undertiking the more srauous employments of pursuing the eatrle, breaking in horses, Sce. The slaves remain in the liuts to ardend to the less enterprizing ocelpations. The climate of the Sertam is uscounted well sudapted to the constitutions of the Africans; sielly negroes are often purchased al reduced prices by persons who reside in the interion, under the idea that the cliwate will soon remostablish their bealth. Tive circumatance of the non-
existrmef: of the hixieter or bictear, in the platins of the Sertian ix of


 ripuon the fiesh of some polsous than uroon that of others; aud the stibjecti wio are víolenty attscked by this insect, are sometimes ondr preserved fionn being crimplad by their remoral 1.0 a pirz of the eonmber inn which: it does not exist. The cls? ness of the air and woil of the Sortam generally removes agucs of long standing. and likewisc zhe complaint which fiequently jroceeds front the ague, and is calleal anarreifictom, or yellowness. The Africans pre scldapi atsacked by the atue, bue they liave often the amarchlidiom.

In the back secxjements, beyond the pixins ot the Sertam, borderinge upon the mourstains where cotton is plantect, and from which the platis are in parl supplied with food, the number of regrozs is becoming consideratole. I have had gpportunities ol cotrevime wich
 lorred their residence in the catcle districts even to :t remorgl iuto the country bordeving wpon the sea sho dilet of the Sertan nento is preticrable to 2 ahat of the planation slave, so that this cirnuthsinnce, inalependenty of all others. woutd anke the finmer bo well stware of the superinetity of his siluation. Fresh beef and
 ations altase are rarely sersed olix.

The most diradful coriplaind to which negrocs arc subject more than ortere kescriptions of nien, is that which, in the Colnmbian
 tobar. T has opportunicies of seeing it, and most. luathsome is the rigetit of the indivictusls who ard afflicted with ic. The body trecomes covered with large ulcers, the patient is redaced to a mere sbeleton,

[^156]









 deviation from this, even some yenrs altor, will eattse veolent pritiss in the joims. 'Tha: followidg eitectinalumes oceurad turler my mwn eyos. A chilal belonatiog to ane of my meirghatorir, whilst I resided at Jixguaribo, was in the prastice of coming to amme itsulf wiab some of the childen of the polantatiom. He laxt this ctisorcler upon hian;

 to me to hate the bohas; and shordy aherwards an old man, the father of this chikel, likewise fell sick. In the comarse art a whorl. times notwithatarisling every care was taken, other persons were afficted with the disease. A surgeon wits spplieg to, wath he proseribed merency to atl the patianta. Aut infant of a tiew monilis old, which afterwurds anugli the disease, underwent the sume treatment. The children who had arrived at at certuin age nJt recovered, aud until the perind of my depurtire, they had never experienced any return, nor latil felt any bad offeecs fiom it. The: old man still labonrad under it, but wis recovering. The growll of the infant was stoppod by the diseane, and very litale loppes were entertaised of savinto ites life.

This horrible disordor is contracted by inlabiting the ame room with the juatient, and by inoculation; this is effected by means of a smatl $\mathrm{B}_{y}$, from which every precaulion is oftentimes of no avail. Grent numbers of the insects of this epecies appear enrly in the
moming ; bar they are not to mach sem when the sun is powertial If one of aliem thances to seltle upurs the morner of the eye or nabinh, or upon the most trifling seriatult, it is enought to inoenlare the $=$ befores, it lise insect comes from ia person who labours under the discare. "1,7e samo person can only have the botus ance. The sears which if leis ges uport ine bodies of the negroes have a most disgusiing firicaratice; for the wound thave in some casce bern of sudh lorg stunaifing, arne late penctrated so deep as to have chizenged the culous sf Lse skin, which becomes ot a most loathoxome white colour.* However, decp wounds of any dercription hire the some effect upon the nergro skin.
'Tlere are cunsiderable numbers of white persons and of colour who poseess tuto or ahrec slaves, and share with them the daily babour, eren of the fiek. Thesc slaves are- generally speaking, creoles, who have hesen retwed in the faruly, or they are diricans who have boun purthased very yomp for a wifligg sum of moncy they we tionuenaly considered its part of the fawily: aud share with the master the frod for whith both are working. Thests slates appear on galn days well-dressed, atd ahey have a certain air oi independence, which slaews that they think therriselves to be something more in the world than mere dridges. The ditlerence of the fecline of owe of inuse meu rowards his master, and that of the

[^157]





 fauta. UJrom, large estate, the themblizere of in :many bersors tends






From the vasinns: of tive country, it might tre stepposect that if' it
 turn. bat this is not the cask. Then diricatsis praticaluely are gencevally lowaght lanek; they aro seron distinguisthed by theic marmer or speaking the Portngucze fangrage ; and if wny nne of blen caneot give: at good account of hinberf, he will not be allowed to rembin long ummolested, dü the pront arisiug from the appretactacion of a remawty slave is consisier:ble. Besiches, the manumithed African acrerally continues to weside in the neighbourbuod ot the estate ufon which he has servied as a blave; so zlage when a mur of thig theseriptiont, that is, an Africtun, comes without beiner known, to settle in a ibistrits, suspicion inmmedintely arises that he is not ficeThe manumitted creules remove to where thry ate not known, becaste they do not wish that dae stace in whicts they were boon should reach their mew place of resiulence. An African mbst laze been brought is Arasil as a siave, and tberefore his situation of a freeman groves that bis tharacter is good, or hes could not have obsuined hix hiberty; but a credle may hava been botn free, and corssequently his former state at a atave he wishes to concead. Creole slaves, and

[^158]more especially mulattoa, oftert do encape, and are never afterwards heard of by their masteris; but ever these ars surfictinaes brought. butls.

A calse of foceat hardahip oecus red at Hecite a short time batore I jett that phace. A migro and his urific had uscaped, and as theit matester had not received any tidings of them for sixzeon or seventeen yearf, he supposed that both of them had diexl. However, one day there arriveli at his door in fiectic, a number of eapitacmandu-crompo with several persons in custody. Fle shan roconthized his mumpo nod negress, and was sold that the five young persons who were with them uere their chitluen, and consequently lis slaves These poor reatures had been brocaght ap until thas period of their lives with the iden that they were firec; and thus a young man of sixteen, and luis sister of tourtisen ycars of ago, were at the season of jey nnd giadnems to condmence is lije of mixers. The master confined them all, until he could djepose of theme to gasse siave-derater. which the soon reromplasbed, and they wese shipped from hecife for Marablam. I nevar heard how the diacevery hand been made. thast these people wew not frec- Oh system accursed, which thas datmos the tiopes and prokpects of a whole life.

Sumse of the regroder who escape deterthine to shan the haunts of man, they conceat themselvits in the moady, insted of atempting to be rerecived ionin some distant village as free grersony. They fotm huts, which are called moctombor, in the most unfeequented spots, and live upon the game and fruit which their places of rexteate nefterd. These persons somelimes assemble to the number of ten or tuclve, nod then their dislortgensent is difficult; for their acquaintarice with the woods axound gipes ther ilue adrantage over any party which may be semt to atack them *. Somerimes a whole neighbourhood is

[^159]disturhed by one of these commonities, who rub the provision grounds, stent calves", lambs and poultry; and storics are told oil the

 Pernarnbute, on the whole; but the systent which is followed re specting rivem is radically the same. Their toont is usualty rice, which is xild to disngree with most of the riations which contele fiom
























A whare timat lefore: I loff that plantutien, the sume bay foxl with nother of rearky they same Age, hoth of ilem being about fourtien yeurs of suge. They had been abient sowe duy, when Inte ane cveniug un Lidian inboarer liowight them looth horue. Whe didaren

 but it wis diucratimg; it way maton kerovit that chge were found, and many of their com-

 fore the properblly to continno in practices which had commenced uuder tevere nagage conld bo their only indacement to prater the woode now.
 thate peryl. of the conntry', is suid in he more rigorous; but of this I cannot myself speak, for 1 laal to <uportunities of jutdeing.

Niagroes w!es ave decirledly of itucorrigible chatacter, are ihipped firom Pernambuceo io Marambiam, and though the tunse for whitite theae transportations tere madr, is well known, they are often sold to
 ns the ilireat of semeling lime to Maranlaza or to l’hrà,

That the geveral charactar of persons who are in a sate of slavery shonld be aminble, and that goombasis shoulal predomioute, is not to be expected: but we ought dather wo be surprived at the existence of that defree of virtere whicls is wo be found among those who are reduend to a situation of so much misery. Blives are much inclined to piffer, and particularly towards theix mastera this is very fiequent; indeed many of them scarcely thime that they are action improperly in so doing*. Trunkenness is common umong them t. At direct ansurer is not casily obtained from a slave, but the information whelt is required is tement by memn of lour or five guestions put ia Antrious ways. The neeasity for this is fequently calused by stupidity, or frome ignorance of ahe lamyange in which the slave is addressed, rather than from any wish to deceive. It is in their behavionar to their limilies and compmions, that the goox part of the luman leing is displayert, and natoral enough it is that it should be so. The negroes shew much sttachunent io their wives and children, to their other relations if they should chance to hase any, and to thria madhagor or Cellow passongens from Africa. The reapect which is paid to old age, it is extremely pleasing to witness. Superannated Africatis, upon the estates, are never suffered to want any commorts

[^160]with which ir is in the power of Lheir fellow shaves th supply them.

 of their older slaved, whon speaking to thems. Thate whe atoralizy
 to be expected; why shutat they the comectione latween the 1.wo deseriptions of persons, is not one of lewe and lumanolly, al spowd yroducing spratitude, of eaturn and rexpect; it is one of loatrod and discord, aj' distratit, and ol continuad suxpicion; one of which the evil is so enormuits, that if any proper feelinge exim: iu thesie who are supposed to benefit liom it, trad in those who suther under it, Lhey procerd from onx mature, and not fiom the syaliern.

It will be acoll from the ajove statement, that the slnves of those parts of litazil which 1 liave hai oppertanities of sexing ure more fatouratily stamatef than those oi' the Colnmbina islands; bute still tbey are slaves, and in thia word is included, nowat nusery, preat dogridation, great misforthne.

## CHAMER XX.

## IMPOLICY OF CFIE GLAVE Trade.

FEVV peraons in Great Brituin lave now any doubts of the ithhumanity of the slave trakle, and none would prestrne to come forwards as ita definders. It is a great motal evil, perhape the grearest in the wordd, from which England has at last been delivercd. But hew work is net yet done, other mations continue to tennsport the natives of Atrica from lleir oms shores to those of Souch America; and even whern her efforts have succeeded in persuading them to fordid this trade, the plat of abolition mersi be followed up in her awt colonies; she must atone for she crimes which she has commited, and prove to other countrics her sincerity in the cause, by hor sea in routiby out a most execrable system with all prodent and possible expexlition.

In Brazil thece are several excellent men who still entertain the ideas that the Africans are suved froms deati by che slaveodealers, and that il they were not purchased by Etropeans, their coutrarymen woald muider them; this wos the opinion in England a few years ago, and therelore we cannot bu surprised what the Brazilians sbouda still considet it as being founded upon (rath. It is their interest so to think, (or at any rate, they itagige that it is their interest) and they have no books or other macans by which they might be wideceiverl. Tho the planters I fear that searcely any anguments would be of any avail; they imagiue that without alaves their estatex must

 chici body of the priexts condd be consinatel oilts crupley, to tho

 own comatry, and to cheed every thing (dait is gowd;-of its diruce
 in the parts ot that contivent. which :tfe subjectr to the reskri of e'ave-dealors;-if che clerty could be made to believe that iy their woice they woes saxctioning oze of the nost shocking sy stents under which dte worid deer daboutedr I Enow thate theit hid woù be gisten to the abolition. 1 anz aware likewise of the weight whicis their ophnions cacry withe them anforng all ouker descriptions of persons.


 religion apon their varive soil, withent all che miseries to which they are subjected by dejer hrapororation:

Anocher ofinion tire alwo been adoptest, whick induces che liravitians is suspect the awotives of Great Britain io oxeming their govarament tu arolish the treade. They say it ras trom policy alone that she abolished the slave trade, liccause her colocien were
 among sll oher nutions who ate zot io well provided with lanbourers, that they may not riful her trnnsatlantic pussensions, and tuctionaly sorpass shem by the increzsed number of wortinent. it

[^161] the abolitinis was effectad itf Eagiand. janow mothitug of' its himory; -Tor if ther did tibuy sould scon see from what fure mestivis the zeal
 the exertions und perseveritue os Charkoun the grent xpostic in 4$\}$ is
 coukd only emanate from the gnost disiztistested sourcers. Ft mould be perceivert that these twn individirals whose natter wiil Sur ever be comsienced with tice famous linw to zine paxsing of winich they con-
 clorions itruggter whose ail was ffurcled tinfler circurestgricer which
 The proots of the ungtainet principler efoon whiuh this tane was car-
 facts would cossvince al thoee wite vere now previnusly deternnined to belicve the contexty.

The government of Bragil thas in diffeulv part to act; it reles a
 tansive rountre in mhich the authority of the sovereign will waly of mecessity be ioosoly secognized; the possibility of resisting his cromernds dooss cxist, sacl fhomgh his mandales athe issuid in the
 fres not the 刀esase of Enforcín吕 obedietuce to his culats in the ebief provirces, if agy one of tisom chose to withdraw its alleginnce. Tbe goverdineat would be, I raties chint. ifkeljned to ditlaw the exampic of then chinf powerat of Farope; but it must mot be precipitafe, the people mast be preparcod for the changes and have time given




them to think upan as selbject, which, under their prosent impressions, in suppoaed to injore zhern so materíally. It. is st Bahia that the siave-defolers and pilaters lowe sheser themselves mosit violent in trivour oi the slave-trade; it is from that place that filae most externive traffic io carried on rothe const of Aliricat. In the province of Baluia wifere are great eatates, poosessing two, thrite and four handrect ;iltaces; the owners of these me consequemly rich, wod they possess powar eree the tree population as well ne over their own inmediate depenclenti. It is in that quarter thith the wreatest implination to rosiat whatever its peophe dnes not rolish, bas been expariencert. Petitions contawing forcible lagruate have been made to the govermment at Rio de Jmeiro, agairsit the alsolition and agninst the procoedings of the British ernisers stationed rpon the coast of Atrica, by whicfl aeveral slave ships have been captured ${ }^{\text {b }}$. lhe govenment of Brazil may, and ought to be persuaded by ald peaceabic and friendly means which indspendent States poxscos of urging each othor, to do its ulituret in aceomplishing the miteln to be desired and; but still whatever our wishes may be, and however mach the inclinations of the Portagutze mipistry may erimbide with them, thay must consadit the state of the comutry oser which they rule.

A Brazilian writer who has puthished severad parmplilets at. Rio de Janciro with tile permission of the Fegent, has apokel against the trade, as far is it in possible under present circumstarnecs. Slavery he styley " a terrible cancer it the body politic, which

[^162]tentus to impecte the increase of the white sace, nhal as he rather
 is not the Daly place in whith the name writer speakt oi' shavery, and ol the trave in these tecims. A Xortuguese writer of much reputation among his countrynon. says, "if we have nower feared the power of the government, neither outht we to hesitate it combating the orroneons opinions of the people; confident that althungh he who ofposes himiselt to the prejulices of a nation, renders his nome odious, still he may be fuile certsin that poaterity will do him justice $\dagger$." Another Journal of"equal ropntation statea, that "it in a great evil for the chier utremgth of an empire to consist in the rumber of its slaves; and if Brasil data once reffecled, that each, negro which she exponts from Africs, is necessatily an enremy whom she is nurcurimg, she would perilaps not have dared to amploy them at all; or at any ratc she would have made ase of them in sumaller numbers $\ddagger . "$ I hope that atber individuals of the samen nation will see the :ubjection the atan liglitp and will give their masiatance in Jeading their countrymen to a litowledge of the equity, humanity, nod wood poliey of abolishing this detostable tradfe.
'The ruin of Bugil is predicted, the deeay of its :griculture and of its commerce are supposed to 3 c inevitable from the want of fabourers if the tride is prohibited. This is genernfly anserted wherever I hare bead, withoat the least consideration, without a thought buing given to the possibility of employing the freo populatiod of the country in daily labour. It ís anid, that if Atricans we not to lee obtnined, every thing misit be at a atand, nad die country can make no progrent. This argument agsinst the abolition, the Bracilians bring forwards even with much less plausibility than the planters of the CuIumbian islands. In those the number of free

[^163]









 mucetingies ste frea











 advancenseat of the wiork. I hatwe watetied two pari:os doberaring in
 oscasionally, though very suedom, oceury. The former are singiryg,

 tances, their movartienta are seuvely to bos perceivod.
 of ita ngricultare and poppafation, it would still be better for 1.hat consury in the maits, to put a anop to the inuroduction ut Africutas;





 savily recpuided the matitional number of tranuls, to cortione dite cish










[^164]



 to bu on sale, end thas an incresse ot peico wortid be prociuced; but.





 of their poryects. But the siruat:on af B-azil exolucies the ioner ranks firm the diú of those who ate sbove chean and dervive the





 eszity, ot with so muciz perfection, the wotk which might be deve


 would buemployed upou every wert regotated sekizes ecniourtly with cbe slaves. The lower ranks of peoplc wrulk boworte too numprous for each fantily to bo atsle to pobsess a suificient quabitity of inad for its opre support, and this noutd oblige where to liace theascloes is those who colid afforl to ipay them; the plancera
 sny core or attenation ke this most infortapt subject by the govemment of the country, model the haboue of free-men be winnitied. By the separation of hanour into small opots of cultiratod grownd, (if culcivated it can be called) as is practived al present, gront purfions of land are whsted, and only a few families can possobly exist










 of rlue cluss whicti is iraneediatcly below t.herw. The Becondaty
 yet are onse utake to secermijlish theit projects in plantiag with thoso


 alone with Exesel didfuculty, what would he donce easily if several prer.
 unurizy, where the obstaclea whielt ante to the sarnuounted in pirceparing l:Unds fior calturce sue so monaterous and of serch miguitude. I[




 clineth to ge through hin dajly ocouphtions with poneruxlity. Bart if His ruine da sot correrponel wicls the work which lat does daily, the
 from itiftigg cauaces, delay the paxiormancer of a tayk until s future moment- The hire whieh a liblowner in the servier of adothat annt receives. is only rendered to him if be has parformatis his stlotted work, otherwise the time ib lost; no gord fordures, to luteky seaven ean fechact it; but if his grofith art expueted to be tucted to liter
xacher from whe xichuens of the fand which he has cultivated, from an

 We witl more williberty stay wiling at kume, or netept an invitarion to



 lent jucopomaticus. on


 be witith fise tike property obsainat on credit would not be wo nece. -




 lies in diseaves of the loody citily, and in thone alonet to which

 worid; und yout kave hifi womasled sond duspanding miad to hers. The vexations axd priertióons which he untist uialergo are to be wombated ; his anind us welt at his body must bu kept in betalth. or fitcto service will hix master roceive from him. The loss which is wenstoned by untimely deards woufd not, it free man werte employted, thits binl directly upon the planier. Fhae time which is pussed
 at some distant tillenges, would not be so much propexty anexuplowed. The expencea attendant upos Hickneas, and the labs of tirise pro-

[^165]oneding from the siane causc, would be incursed by the fatient. and

 Lis ulaves, and from duber resmons insurnarbthly commected with the syctem by which one mat rutus a body of heis follow-creamers who
 of sun estathe nuighe betye some reast; his arrention need not bo entirely fivon up to the managoment of tis thetirs, which must now be the casts, if he has a wish to udvance his fortane, and a due regard tor the preserration in ath abte atate, of the being: tiradigh whose meaps this tis to be acemmplishecd. Thoo iruct it is that men beconte anilous to the conslatit roumd of intelligemee which in comanuanicated by tho mathager ; of ataves srek, lumed by accitient, making their eacapc, \&u and the accounts of their wecouvery and raturn are received with the simer ninconvern. Pitulishment is orderal for rames ond mistemeanors with the smme insensibility'; all whese are things of courne,


In a connutry whicly it offlictord with the obeadfins disulase of mlevary
 have beeat committed against the mater tro fienerally itnmediate and proportioned to their tweming apon the jriterests of the supperior, it is didrenalt to compase tlye chatikement of grast crimes uguinst the commonity. It is the iaterfal of the nuster to conceal from the suporiox authorities those attions of their shaven which might mathe fect them in tha loss of their servizas. Jinsturnes have occuried in whteh the latp itself' has swerved fiom its divect line of juatice, that the owner might not be injured by the execention or tramsportation of the slave. It ts for the benefit of the waithy aninn, who ought to he the dispenser of justice, 10 act contrary to what it is his duty to ${ }^{\text {drep }}$; to combtitatst the principlat of rectitude, to serect from theit deserts the evil deedg of a gxeni portion of the propalation of the conatry in which the rusides. Ife is siltut concernixg his reighbours' property, that like forberrance may lee practived townate himself, if hus should requithe $i 1$. But the cringes which slavea corm mit without the know-

1odege of their masters, of those which, aldwoush they may be atterwards known to the ownctr, have been committed without theit concharence, are nat the only evil actions into which this class of men may be led. The owner limself who hat not cancage to revenge his own (fuarrels, inay command rinat bis purpose shall be accomplished by one of the wretcted intividuals over whonn the rulas. This has absolutely bappasoed.

The genteral tendency which is produtced by slavery, talen in every point of view, is to rouse all the bath qualities of him who rules und ol him who endures; by this syatem, a government permits the demoralization of its people, and that the property of its subjects be haid out in a most disadvantugeous manner; a freat number of individuals most be supported whose boncit to the state is much decreased by the situation in whicle they reve placed, and another class in society is provented from talsing its due share in the general adpancement of the country.

## CLEAYPER XXI.





IEAGE heated many discussions both in Fargland and in Brazil, upon the merits and demerits of these Trenties; in such dispulations Fhglishmen have sppenred to suppose that their íntercsts hadi not boen sufficiently consulted; and the conrrary opinion was maintained by ilie l'ortuyaeze, for thacy considered their nation to be aggrieved by them: and char greai partiadity had been shown to Bxitish subjeets. I cannot avoid thiuking that the 'froalies are as impartisu as posibibe, and that due tergard has been paid to both partics. If Britialk sulbjecta hate gained some advantagea, one of wonsiderable importance whicll they possessed betore, has been given uj; and the commercisl intercourse between both parties has been placed in very favarable circumstancer. Fven the inuovations which by these Treaties have been made in the laws of Brazil in favom of Finglisha men, tend to the general advancement of that country, - to forwend ita progress towards th higher pitch of civiiization. In the discussions which I have heard, Englishrmen, by the alguments which tbey used, appeared to chink that Braxil sbould have been trentexl overbeaxiumly, as a country which had been bumbled by misfortunes und tbat of this cideumstance advantage should have been lisken by. G)eat Britain. The jdea which is entertained of the weakness of Brazi], must proceed from the trifling dotenaive preparations which
















 is a faveurit., obse witl, many porserns. it is sajn?, ilnt the Regent of





 the gatane of tand to foreighers being arged as a breends of the dechared reciquocity botween atye twit mations, tho government of Brazil enght.
 there; it ought to allow 1 liten tos tollow theid own religion; it sportd d naturalize them and fix them of the soil by the proterlion which the fuws onght to affont them; and by the perantasion which shouda be givaly to licull of havieg some share in the concerrs of the socicty into whick they had boen adopted.
 of the thaited States of Annerican bnd bolding up chat country in tha
example wftich whght so be folinwed in the infoduction of mingo


 theciv protectiox, atul chas laws of this xepublic tolerate ill veligions; these

 goverinucur leve axeled in wison with the views of hute ralera.

 inhabitasts of tho United Scases. Thas first sethers in Nutth Americis left theit mative sherers becungl their idcas wexe too dempcratic for tho trother country, nud becnuse their religions opiations
 mind of dive chescendants if purents, like t!exe wore preparsil for the

 fisil been appointerd by the groverimmend ot Portugel, and who were eotranited witd riespmile power; liby were Routiaj; Cathotics too. Cousenturnty, the halries of' their duscaniants land them to quies acquipsendec in cles mandafes of hose who govern deam; to follow rather rbuz to dirctct, to be prabled rather thata to bo obliged all at: once withunt any previous instruerion, to think for thanaselves. Still, although a poveralmetii which is estebitishat on prianeples of demecritay is not suited to Bracils, that country worald beat many clenmes of adrancemeat romaris a state wi゙ freedon. - in religion, in
 certainly be granves us a cextina degrer: "

Hewtever to rotam; I shall atternpt to prove that the Triaties in
 of both anstious; that each has coucedud in sume proints mach to

[^166]





 ;und thex what Great Jricaits fratats to them, or what their govectm


 to be as obscavatu oid ancitsenems as possiblus.

## 

 incorust of chac subjectia to which they relate laving alruaty subsided.

Antrocy Cth. "Hía Britanmie Ahejesty is allownd the privilege of
 chased and cot down in dre worods ot 13 razil."
"Lhis wis supposed to afford to Grieat Britaity an inoxhanstible ancl inexpensive source of supplying leer mavy widt timbers thet $I$ hieve undorstood aluat the expecnee which moist be incorted in telling the trees, and brirbing the timber to the waters eske, would be too gread to xurder tha projcet fersible; and that. ALe woods of Braxil were discovered to contain as Jas proportion of vatualle timber han bad been imarimed. If the Irrilisht movernment had lhought joraper to wet upon this artiele, - il' the plan loul been judged worthy of beinf execuicd, the alvantages which Jimazil mamat have clerived form it would have been considerable. I'he iutreased truffic which would have becn experienced by the porta is which doelinyards woutel dave

[^167]been eatallistheat, and the purnber of mexhanics who woutd bave gons over, malle of whom would in all probability bare remaincl
 carpenterz and caulkers of Brazil are fitly as good as those of England, and if encontagerncut was given to che most nemestary ard of ship-buidcing, no careraal aid would be requisite- But due encouragememel is what is wauring-
 Conturactity Parlics to alic succonr of the orkor, shaill be supptied with fresk provisions by that poxer for whose assiscance it is fitted out." This plamity alludes no the Beitish squadron stutioned at Rio de Jaweiso for the protection of the coass of Brazil; sund it is outy firis that the purty which is assisted should teed thase who have undertaken is detenee.

Antier, Sth. "Any aumber of shijps of war are permitted to erter the pors of cither of the EIigh contracting Parties." This is conusucted with the foregoing artiche, and was necessary for its exccution.

Articley Deti. "The Inquisition or Triburnul of the Holy Office not having bewn hitherto established or recograized in Brazil, If. Rh. FL
 policy, akes the cipportunity nfforded by the presont treaty, to declare spontaneously in his own narde, and in that of his freits and sucpessors, that the linquisition slanll never hercafter be establisked in the South Americnn dominions of the Crown of Portugal."

A lint is drowin ous towards the conclusion of the zame article of some intencion on abolish the Inquisition in Portugal, nath in all otler parts of the Portugrieze dominions $X$ imagine that Great Brirain would scarcely have stipulated for this chadge of policy in the goverament of Tirazil, if some intimation had not been made that the ministay of that comntry wished in this manner to get rid of the abominable cribumal. Great Mritain indeed cannot be said to have stipulared for it ; the Frince declares his purpose spontaneousidy. Be this as it may, this most horrible Court dous not exercise its power
in Brazil, and thens has benm removed, alonoxi itrevoculbly, one of the most intoleradale luarthens under which any nation ewer laboured The lare Scorctary of State for Foreign Mifibis, D. Rodxige de
 deathis sustained at great loss; but this mistortune is alleviated by the means which it beas afforded of plucitig at the head of affaits the Cheralier Araujo*. This mobseman seems do theve mioputeal Brazil as his country, to direct his atbention entirely to the concerns of that kingdom, aund to wish to incrense the inportance of the State over which he has been most jadiciously placed. He appears also to be nware of the means by which proyressive prosjerity is to be obstained, --. liberality, toleration, mildnesa, reformaion. Tlie selemn manner in which alte fulers of Brazil have dechand thoir iotentions in this respect, is a triumph of liberality over bigotry which was scarcely to be expected; and still less was the public avowril of principlen like these to be looked for from the quarcer in which whey appenred. The misfortunes of l'ortugal have produced inculeulable benefit to the framatlantic territoties which she held under wubjection; and although the morher country bas suffered wheh, still some sdyantages cannot fail to procecal from tho change it her situation; at ang rate her internol affairs inay meet with yomc alterations which may better the condition of the people. Portugal no longer onjoye the exclusive trado with Brasil, but I know not whether in the cad she will not be happier in depending upon ber own resourees; upon a moderate trade with other nations suited to her political importance, insteacl of tbe figantic commercial intercoursc which was carried on through her ports. The governnatit will probably undergo some reform, and Portugal will in all

[^168]fikelihood soon see the Inquisition abolished, and may perfiaps witDess the re-cestablishment of the Cortes.

Ahticle 10th. "A gradual abolicion of che slave trade on the part of the Riggent of Portugal is promised, and the limits of the same traftit along the coast of Afrim are determined." Or this suhject I have alreakly in another place treated.

## 

Anticle 2rl. "There shall be reciprocal liberty of commerce and navigation bewreen the subjects of the two High Contructing Parties, and they are allowed to irade, travel, sojourn, and establish themselves in the ports se of the dominions of each, excepting in those from whick all forcigners are exclucied."

The ease with which leave to sravel in Brazil may he obtained, I have mysclf experienced, and even without a passport an Englishman might travel in sone of the provinces. Great complaint has been made by the Fortugueze of the strictness with which the British Alien Laws bave been enforced; and hereabreach of reciprocity is stated to exist, - not by the Trenty, but in the nor-acomplishment of this atticle. The extreme difficulty with twhich one forciguer is distinguished from another, by persous who do not understand the language of any, and the vicinity of Great Britain to the Continent of Europe, - to ber greatest eneroy, and the immense number of foreign prisoners which she beld in confinement during the war, placed her in a far different sitaztion from Ifrazil, in which the only foreigners excepting Spaniards, who could possibly have foand their way ibto the cotuntry, mast have arrived there in British or Portugueze vessels, consequently littie doubt could be entertained of the propriety of allowint any foreigner to receive a paxsport to travel in the interior or along the coast of that country*. Diffenlifes were doubtless experienced, and vexations

[^169]











 protesses the Tioman ('mboils: גieliginn.




 English merchant mast resozt ©o smomegling or bn ablingat
 duty on eotton, the shaje siritle whish it exporterl fionn Thrazil to Englasd, is equal in roamels of either nation. This dity is mot however of such inaportance to the commodicy as to remater the imb-

[^170]porter of it in a ship which pays a higber impost anable to vie with time who pays a lower ond Bux in the case of ramufactured goods slipped from hente to Brazil, the duty is of primary consequencebecause iluere is very Iroquent]y, I may say generaliy; a loss upou such stipwents, and an increaze of I0 per cast, upon a concern which hass indiependently of these 10 part tent. uudergome a loss, would often bee ruinous. 1 have not a doubt. in sis ing thar the government. of Brazil is a gainer by lowering the duties upon goods which are imported in Brixish vessels to the srandard of those which are impound in vessels that arc ownerf by its smbiccts. Under existing regulations all perties come into the market upon an equal footing, and athoagh some persons will attempt to evade the payrnent of auy duty; still it is not necessary that a whole body of men should resort co smukering for the purpose of bringing their commodities into the market. with any prospect of a successfid sale. Town that $Y$ think a higher duty thais 15 per cont. might he raised by government, but if itoy adrance was mafe it should be done generilly upon all classes of traders, uthether subjects of Braxil or foreigners, to he done to any adventage. The reciprocity which is cstiulished lyy those articilss has heen followed ly most idvantageons consequences to borh parties- Great Britairs is materially benefited in a commercial point of siew by the importation of the cotton of Brazil, direct from that country; and the improvcraent which has been caused, and continues to act in Prazil by the introduction of British manufactured goods is incalculable, is point of wealth and civilization, and in prodacing incentives for exertion.

The latter part of the orth Article determines which are the veascls chat shall be acconnted British, and which shall be accounted Portugueze, for the purpose of ascertaining those of both nations which may cojoy the favourable atipulations. The Portugueze liere again complain that the English have the advantarae over them from the grest numbers of vesisels which they build, and from the numcrous prizes which chey take from their cnemies, whilst the Portugueze


 subujects, the untional coloriss of the new owatest thay loe hoisterd, anat
 mraed eltat the bribish government shoutel bare sutfered theae vessels to enter the ports of Grent Britain emojing the same advantaness us
 spoject in consideret it will be jerceived that this woald be equally nndinine the interebt of both rationk. Groat Britait woukd by sitis meazs atiord a consideralme matket fer the shipping of one of lee maritime rivais. By the low prices at which such vesselv may be oltained, and the xtadl mumber ot hands which thoy requite, the

 subjecse of that connery wonld minnt tw Nowth Amoxica for vessits, and a bars woukd lore placed agrions. the thivancement of theis coms.
 it sor the formation of a rumaerous mavy.
 diatinctive understused that the jurbsent Articie is aut co be interpreted as invalidating or afocting the exelezite right grssesind by die crown of Porluga within in awn dobsinions to the tann for the sale of ivory,
 the form offsimf:" $\$$ hope that ere lotg the syatem ot givelual reform with rench these monopolites, aird that the erade ira Lte Articles which they comprise will be throwin opere.

Arvicas t0th, "British subjects resident in the Rorlugueze domis fions shall bor prouitied to mominate special magizitatev to act for thete 1s judges-conservator." This privilege is not conceded to the

[^171]Fortugrase xesiding in Grast Eritain, and hizs theretione been complened of. Frevy Fortigucse welt krowers hae dreadiat srate ot the courss offiastive in all the daminintas wif his sovereifu, ath tove exin ertely difficule it is to obsin redress ande: anty griovature. The
 persoually uremaitesed with the magisurate lefotore whem a catuse is to
 one nill deny) is eishas among themsentrs, how muth more necessary
 not firvit opportumikes of insiag undic insùsence; and bepides, where f.los decision depontis eltively apon ane mast, he vill parchatile be int-
 Britial jurispradence, and the sious(2)ar excellencee of ahe Bricish Constizution," as the same arskle vi'lw 'Preaty observes, rinder uth-
 residing in Great Britain. 'The state of ahe Erítisls sourts of luw is the pride of every Englistuman; a dontst of the inspariaility of zheir ciscisiona never strikes the mind of suy ronsuvable man. Alzhongh
 and seeks out any ahoracs which outs bive crept into its proceedirets, still the courte of haw coritions to ant, year sfect y*ar, without suy swipicion of phisconduct, +. without ary idiea of unliaithess in cheir des
 geveze courre of law, in the first place, from the radical badnexs of the systim by which the determiaation of a cause depends upon one rain ; and in the secolk phate, from the peracrica of one court, which I have hid upportunitits of wineessitys, und the geoseral somplavets of almost cvery Portugueze who tran hat any thing to do wizt promedingo of this description. Doubtless there moust be sotre mex wito do their daty; but a system of guverament should be founded upors the basis of te near an appotacke ss and be formed to athe impositibility of miscranduct, snd upon responsibilits.

It is in che courte of lace that is Lhonough change shauld be eftected in the Portugucze dotninions; their comrupt atate calls mest Joudly今○Z
for reformation, and it is from this gource that the existing goverthment. has one heavy woight hanging over it, which masy jeud to most verious constiquences. There are two evids which cannot be long entircd when they bave arrived at a certain heighn. Heary and injudicious tasaion, and injustice; - these reach erery man; in his ourn lout he focts them, and they follow him every where, subjecting lim to privalions, and to many mortifications; his temper is soured and his anger will at last lreak Joost.

Amsicte 12th. "Britisft suljects, and all other foreigners resident in the dompions of Porturgl flaall lenve perfect liberty of conscience, sutd shall be permitied to build churchea and chapels utider eertain restrictions as to theit outward appearance; and any persors who ajould adebngt to make converts from, or should deelairn akitinat the Catholic religion publicly, is to be sont odt of the country in which the ofrence has been comanitted." In is disgracefinl that such an aytitle as this should be necessary in auy Treaty between two civilized staties; but every step towartis liberality should be greeted with great joy, proceeding from those countries in which the Catholic religion prodominates. That parc of the article which coucedcs Jiberty of conscience, not only to British subjects, but to every foreigner, is another indication of the apirit of liberality having found its way into the Council of Rto de Inneino, for, I should imugioe that the British atatesman would only have required this stipulation for his comptrymen, willuout mentionivg the strbjects of other powers- I have heard this article much complained of by men who ware afterwards surprised to hear that the Porbugucze wure allowed to have their chapela in Eugland; and here those gentlemen would have been desirous of proventing pertect rexiprocity.

Ancrorer 17th. "It is agrcod and covenanted chat articies of military and nayal storus brought into the ports of $\mathrm{K} . \mathrm{R}$. H. the Prince Regent of Portugal, which the Portugueze goverament may be desirous of taking for its own use shall be paid for without delay at the prices uppointed by the proprietors, who shall not. be.compelled to sell auch articles on ary other terms. And it is farcher stipulated,
that if the Portuguesc government shall take inco its own care and custody amy margo or part of a cargo, with a view to purchase or otherwike, the said Porturtueze goternment shall be responsible for any damage or injury that such cargo or part of a eargo may reccive white in efte carv and enatody of the officers of the said Portargeze government."

I have tramacribed this article at full length. What miust be the reputed state of a government fiom which common equity must be stipulnted for? But I trizac that the sime for auch abuses bas zone by, ant that the ers of reformation laas commenced.

Autrele 181h. at Tho privilege is granced to British subjects of being aseignarter for the deties to be paid at the custom-houses." The jnabilicy of being assigriantes wes of considerable inconvenience to English merchants, and obliged cheon to pay a per centage to a Portugatee for the use of his mame in this capacity. The aseignaater ure bondrmen for the duties to be paid at the end of three and six months; and no reason could be urged against Eituglishmen being allowed to serfe as anmigrantes, excepting that of lanring the constry withont waiting to answer their bonds.

AbTicie 19th. "All goods, merchandises, and articles whatsoever of the procluce, manufacture, industey, or invention of the domituions or subjects of either of tbe High Contracting Parties, shall be received into the parts of the other, upow the terms of the most favoured nation."

Anticure 20th. "Certann articles of the growth and produce of Brayil, which are subject to probibitory duties in Great Britait; as they are similax to the prociace of the British colonies, arc permitted to be warehoused in Great Britain for exportation." The non-admission of these compodities, which are principally sugar and coffee, for the tonaumption of the Britisll empive, has been subject to discussion. It was not to be expected thut Great Britain would sacrifice her own possesaions by this altarstion in her policy; and particularly towards is country in which the ntricles in quetion csin be produced at a smaller expence than in the British colonies.

Anrrece "9hst. " Kritish East Lucliath goods iund West Indian produce may be subjected to peobibitory duties in the dominions of Portugal." Britixh anerchamas mingte complatil of this article with as macla reason as the Portugneze do or the tomer, The velative situations of the two empires rerpuire buth of them.

Article 23d. * His R. W. the Prince Regent of Portugal weirg desitous to place the system of commerce anabonect by the present Treaty upon the most extensive basis, is pleased to take the opportunity afforded by it, of pulaishing the determination pre-conceived in His Royal Highness' mind of rendering Goa a free port, and of permitting the free toleration of ull relifious sects whatever in that city and its dependencies." Here is another most plensant symptom of change of policy.
 joyed of croating factories or incorporated hodies of British mercharts in the Putugueze domitions," This was a privilege of considerable importance, from the arion which it producel among the merchants of that nation residing in the same place. 'They were better able as a body to urge any petition to the Portugueze fovernment, and to transact the affairs which interested them generally. However atuir protection is sufficiently provided for in other articles of the Treaty, and therefore it is well that this privilege was given up: it was an odious one, nad not necessary; and certainly was not consistent with the basis of reciprocity upon which the Treaty was formed.

Article 26th. This decheres that the sripulations existing comcerning the admission of the wines of Cortugal into Great Britain, and the woollen cloths of Great Britain into Portugal, shall remain unaltered*. The article continues thus; "in the sampe manner it

[^172]is agreert, chat the favours, privileges, amol immunitios, granted by either contracting party to the sulyeers of the other, whether by Treaty, Decres or Alfurì̀, shall renain unaltered.**

Atrices. 32d. * It is agreed and stipulated by the Higla Con-





 The menclatust of shat antion may fresly trabe, contract, buy; and jell in: all these king-






 consant :-: They esumnt be nolliged to sure an wurdiaus, and they are exempoed incmu


 regiard un thacu privileyps:

The cicrky and yex'riuth of Minglisbmen enjoy the same privileges to the namber of six,


 mamy be remelered ay easy as puyillic. They are net subjoct to the juxiuliction of the


The cony of tho frivileges fivner which the alkwe bux heen extrated jopassed in the nume of John Eevran. I abrainect it at l'cernmabecon a cuyiaxity. If the state of govann ment in Bratil in wonsidered, these privifeges are abmotutely remsoury for the Prevention of opproxsiont $;$ and even the privilege of werring arms iy noc more dian is requiaite, becouse

 of weapon; and the erime which is conumitced in so deitug js-cno general to be purnuhod

[^173]1racting loarties. diat the prospant I'reaty slall be anlimited in point. of duration, that (1)ce obligations atol conditions exprosext $n:$ insplied in it shazll be perpotual and itemmable, and [lath thaty shatl
 Prince Regrent of Portugal. his heirs sir successors, shotald again
 domninions of that crown."

Israzit is thas laid ojes for ever, Howerver' eren if the governtuene was sos inclimed, it woutd loe imposisible to close aise prosts of

 ally felt for the people to be made to rerumn to dion anciente eolonial system.
 throwintr off the yoke of tue motuer cuthtry, and thix was ra be ex-
 sueveeded, but anoubt stild remaibs whetler it woudd jux Itave been more to their advantinefe to Jrotiv renzaincd subject to Great Brirais for some tíme lonfuer; -- whether they were ar the tible or'emencipation of a competent, uge to rely apon cleir owa restabreces, However the spirit of theix gavernmenc ancl of their people, may have mate amends for any prematurity of fraednm; and the United States
 rapitity, in power and wealdy, that monequent importurice it the scale of nations. 'Theit change of situation was uot however obtaiaced without years of bloodshed and dexolation-

The Spanish colonies are now making the same experiment; they are experiencing freat misery, and the contest is far from beiner ducided.

Brazil has obtaincd a goverament of its own, under most peculiar circurostances, and these have prolsibly saved that country from the misery or devolution. If the rulers of that extensive kinglond pertiorm their duty, if they act with common prudence, their ount downfall may be prevented, and the unhappiness of a whole people for the space of.one generation, may be remdered unnecessury. The govern-
meat：has much to do belore tie people will or onglat to be satisfied； and the people have buen too mnch accustonjed to aubmission，to be exejited to a change ol govarmment，unless the griovarees ander which they suffice ince of such matrifitude as to be too conaidernble to bu borme－

The reformation which would， 1 think，seconcile the people is not： of very dificult avecution．Judicimas taxation，instentil of the system which exists，is roquisite in the first place； 450 areiches of primary vecessity ane Jenvily tax od，such ts provisions of all deacriptions，and the same ocemrs with respere to the mast inportant articlas on trade． An imparlitel administration of justice ought in che secord place to be provider for．The abolition of ali monnpolies，and of the syatema of firming the zases A dectense in the power of civel and military
 great aumbers of the sivil asd thititary oficess of groverumeat，－by the exiscence of these taxation is rendered much henvier ritan it other－ wise would bce fien are whitmentech，and the tedress of grievances becomes move difficult beranae resprossibility is move divided．The misconduer of escht prerson is not of andicient moment to be taken notice of，and mall－pactices arc too wirlely didiused to bo pumished．

The change of policy which woult lead to tlae gencral adrance－ ment of the cotntry，consiste in the abolition of the slave trade， in the volemation of all religions，in the naturalization of foreigeters， and werhaps ultimately in the establishmert of Iegisiative assomblies， and or a goneral Cortes．

If my limits would allow，and this uras a proper place for the pur pose， 1 think I could ahew thut the reformation which is proposed is perfectly within the power of the Cumit，and is absolulely necessary for the security of the prosent dynasty．The chonse of policy must be entered into grsdually．The goverament will not go so far at prescme；－neither nte the people fat for the reception of the whole of these innovations，nor would they accond with their icleas．They ate steps to which all countrics which are in at state of improvement must adrance；and if those persons who are placed at the head of their
affieirs are aware of what is due to them revolutions may lee juevented, by kecping jace with the ideas of the peoples atot attandiag to their prourcsisivi? state.

I look torwards witt hope to a contiotarnce of peewe in Brazil; I trast that. the alevastations of revolution, that the misfortumes whirk political rembolsions froduce may be sverted; that the naturth quiertede and goociness of the people of that kingdom, and the wisclome and prudence of the goveriment will unite ial the far pres-

 agreeing to establish a lasting conpite upon the true basis of pertect confidence.

## ADPENDIX.

IHave in a former part of ihis volume raentionad Dr. Manoed Arruda da Cturars, as inving publirhed two pamplelessat Rio rie Janeiro, in 1810. One of dheve is enticleci "A Dissortation upoli the l'lauts of Bhazil fiom which firgous nathri:ences may be oblainen, udapted to valtous usca in societys and which may supply the pince of hemap; the entquixy being made by orster of the Fbinec Regent." The other pamphlet is called "An Essay on the utility or eatablishing garchast in the prinuipal proviuces of Brazil for the cutiviation of acw prants. **

I shatl only give thosc patts of the works which may be intercating to Englialn rateder's, - Truns?.

> A DISNERTATION, \&c.
> Sectron 131.
> Of Phonts sohich affornt Fibores, prozier'ly so intlect.

Caroa, linomeliu variegata : - Arrult. Cent. Pian 4 Pern, - The description is taken from my Centuria of the genorn and specices of new plapta of Forntubuco.

Class, Hexandria : - Omen, Monogybia:- Drvision, Flowers complete.
Gen. Cher. Calyx superior and trifit. Corolla tripetalous, with mectariferous scales at the base of ench petat. Ifruit an unbellate, urilocalar berry.

Section 1 int. With fowers discrete or amparated.
Spec. Char. Lenves ciliate, suiny, tained with transverse green nul whitish marks.

Wat Char. No ntem.
Leavts Jadieal and few, (from \$ to 7 ) from rhece to sin ficet long, clan. melled, ravolate and spiny, green in the interior or contenve surliact, and stained witi transverge whitizh manks on the caterior or convex sutiace.

Flowera, The stalk two fixt long, fexucac and almosh jpiral, with alternate sealea without thorus; the sjaike siaple, the peciuncle or ilower stalk shor. Bractepo small, the flord leaves simple, and at the foot of each Hower stalk. Calyx monophyllous, with obtuse indentations, trifich, tubulur, per. matemt and erect. Conolla tripetalous, tubular, of a blizish purple colour, oblougs, obtusc; erect, with nectariferous scales at the basces from the midille of each petal cos the bottom is a cleannel which sheaths a single filismerit of the stamina. Stamins consise of sin fllmonts inserted in the recejitacle; of thescs thres are internate wich, and thrce are oppusitie to the petule; of the last the bases rum down the grooves in the petals, and fix theaselves in the recoptacle. Prsins consists of one filiform style, with a single stigna. द्रEREARF, an oval, paintect berry, somewnat angular and umbellate, nearly or the size of an olive-
'rhe plant is 1.9 be found in the Sertnens of Pexnampuce, Pamilas, Senrà, and principally in the Scranth of Carini de Forit, and Kajaù, and upon the banks of the river St. Froncisco. It blossonns in tlie montlus of 3 olly, Angust, and Scptember.

## USTO.

The lesves of this plant are composed of two segnoents, one exterior and convex, and the other ituterior and concese; the former is more compart and hard, the latter is thintuct ; between chend is to be found a quantity of longitudinal fibres, of the same length ats the leaves, fixed in a juicy pulp, Theae obres are strongs and from them cordage nisy he made, and even coarse cloth, if care is talsen in preparing 1he thread. Thia may the more ensily be done, from the enormous quantition which pature affords without the aid of coll tivation. The inbabituluts of the banks of the river $\$ \mathbf{N t}$. Francisco weape their fishing nets of theae fibres.

There are two mechods of obtaining the fibrot of the carod. 1st. Having taken the leaf from the plane (which is easily done) the convex aide of it should be clipped at the bottom with a knife, and with the other hand, the fibres pulled out, some force being necessary. They will briag with thert a quantity of vegetable liquid, with which the pulp is scoked. For thits reasor
 the ectronti. The stbre which is thus extracted is green, and ic is necessary to wasil it, for the purpoie of elenning it. Gd. The lenveis bciog taken firom the


 fibras This operution widl not, be sufficient to separate it irom the pulp, but ic will be atecesary to lie it up agatu in lurndles, and to aremp it for two clays or mores at the slase ol whieh the benting shandel be renewed; it melat be yet a third time pist into water, ind leate After this the fibres are usualy obtuined clean; and they should be woind up and inatided tlat vhey many not be cntangled.
 they ture in the firat instance put into wuter, the labout in much diminished; and tlut maceration in staguant waters groduces the desired eftect in much legs time than in a cold runting stream. If the fibses whiclt aye obtained by sacit procoss abovementioneal, are eximitied, it will lye found that thone which have uralergane the first, ine stronger ilozin thase of the socond, but moye labour is necensary; the difference, however, will not be oxpurienced if tine fibut is brused beionc it is atecped, leeause this operation aceelerated the raceration. The fibre ot this, tike that of all owher phatar, is aubject to rot, if is is allowed to reanain under water for any considerable time.

The expence of obtitiaity the thread prlich is extrated by the firat process, capmod be calculated with exactitude, becathe it entirely depends upon the expermest of the pertona.who perform the work; and thit inguin dependu
 ths. or at 2 id $d$. ate th. The filhere which is obtained by the second process, is sold at a chanper rafe, because the tabonit is less; I have purchased this at 1000 reis fier aroboba, rather more than ade. par ib.

It is uot neceesnry to cultivate the plant; many leugues of land are covered with it; and ilacre are situations which are so eoupletely overspread with it, thut the geround cannot be patsed oved. This occurs in thany pacts of Curimutaut, and of C'atiri de Fora; both these places are in the capturincy of Puraibn. It is in these Urat I recommead the esfablialtment of manufactorics, for the pupose of cxtructiug the fible, for they are the vearest to the const, fatd there fre grood roads to thera by which the produco may be carried in carts and waspons. Although the caroa is long lived, still many
 fires which miseficrous percons, sportemen, ated weme the owners of eatates anmially Jet loose (siat is firrudi's cxercsamon.) It is probabic that evers the semaining cirot grounds will be alesennyed, it gavertmment. Lous mot tilie


 description is citken fiom my Contulid or ai" Pernambucs.


 ねせIS.
 ia oנe.

Syecc. Char. Leaves radicul, clifinte averatecl; the berries are autiend joio one pyramidel figit; the berotese longy zmburicate, covering the fivit.

Niat, Clar. No stem.

 the cotciave surface.
 flowers ofin bluish purple colour, with the recepuacles united. Calinmman
 whbulay, erect, ubtusio, blien cacla petal hax at the base nectariferoux saidezStamind consist of eix Üfioum filamenta, tinne Nternate ance tluce opposite

 by the gides to the other berriza, which altogutber form oue pyrumidsi tixat,

[^174] grim ot maize, isacis.ed.

The phane ij to be found unon the const of femenbucc, Faraibs, and thio







 of the truit. 1 tood its specific name of sngeratio, iven the eircublstonce of its fibits being uied by tinierace for maling their nets.
 to the granter or fess fistillty of the lancl; in dry land in is short, nine, and
 of it is Efest, rhe foilowisg fices proving that this is the sate. Fipon ule


 anchors of $\pi$ line of bathe ship were ensbarked, which häd heer leat at
 toluld wat be raised ixy hempen collen of ereater diamoler.

 bro alloweth eo to call iny wish which the sutface is covered ; ix does arst tot so caxily as othet kipuk of fibre, when soxied in watec. From theis propecty
 of iti colous a parrs, the fislicrimen increase its power to rasiat the writer, by carlxazindug (if' I may be allowed sas so sily) the tiureads of their netis with astringent witheh they corain frome various plames such te the bark of the
 fivia in a decuction or intusion of these baske, as is praswisod in tanluigg-

From the qualities whelh is pasbossers wid whicil 1 bare inst mettianed, I am persuaded th:st the fibre is well gidapled to the moxubacture of cablics, and cordage; and the precimens of ciotl; and ont paic of stuctings which by this opportuvity I forwari w the ministry, made of it, indicate the
persibitity of mandizerntring siat-cloth from it, and axem finar clothes, in iss-
 disrecratrited.

The fent of the pham is composed of two ligeteous plates, ene consox amu




 be tatien from cioc stem, mind thisuly cine thocus muse be tide en oft, which is
 thas prepured are stemped in wates- for iblout a iortaigitt- The rupcoration is bxtewn ta be complece wien the outwated rind and ligheous bark of the lezves
 of tic water oine by onc, annì the basc of eack of thean $i$ onlemen until the
 with the ofletr the fibres rowy be pulsed ouft; cven so they wil? le romoved with other substences atteched to elomp. For the purpose of haing themed, they tnust be fraded and aggails stegund for one day, and then beaten with mallets upint in treach, and the penceration and bwating mast be repeited until

 to 1012 aper to.

Anatas Mavso, Erometia Amenas

Thue use which is crade of clee axichas at ams tables if aty ermarson that in
 only sention the purpoyes to which the fibrous properly of its ieaves may to applied. This J. diacovered in 3401 , when $t$ was directed by a Foyal Corder to suake urigutioy intor the fibrous quaijices of indígenous plaucs. I found, on conjparing the fibte oit this with that $\Delta^{2}$ all others, that it is the atrongest and che finest, and that it is ariaptad to the manturacture or cioth even of superior quality. Itonk thic lexves of two ar thane plants which weirhed is its. I beat them with mallets, whimg these partions which had boen lueat: they yieldicur rutiter more thank one quarter of n pround of thread. The operation tasted nise lwours being perfermed by one mani. it is bleached writh grest




 has orece been prasted, very little ca;te is riquared to hecep it ita ocdec. I have
 plamed Ans exceflerit Leverage may be obtaiced irom it loy ferthentalionl.

I laide given the description of this plrint ift my Grat centuria; and slo nos descerbe it in shis phate hecat:se I have mot moste any experingents with it, but







The litele ippportatece whicis int finte of this npecies tinn cfoim, readers it





[^175]Ce.ass, Hexindria : - Onder, Menngynia.
 lowing. It, spungy pitl, postesses tise property at burring gent!y without extinguishing; the peasints theretiore are in the habjit of puttiag some of it into their fires when they wish to provent fiam fiom sointry wit for a con-




 we do huw to take advamage of the matural produetionx of the cointiry: Ah
 lines and nets, substinutiag in place wit it the crousatc te refic:. The only use to which the Yortugueze apply the tibre of the $a_{\text {ger }} e_{\text {, }}$ is in making the curch, whicil the driars of the Thurd Order of St. Francis, comanouly cialled of Jus:ds, wear ruund their waista.
 instatuce le bruised, zni aiterwards stequol. "



 poces besides that of food, for it serves to give Tight: ard mincel with inema

[^176]



Frem the ïbre of' the outwatel rins ol'the cerco, whicl is called caito, may








 Becauis 1 have obterved, thate if this occana, idte ligneous fecula or spongy pulp, which is fount intermixed with the ribuea, adheres still nore stang to tham. I have likuwise temarked, that front the rind which letes been resomily tuken fiom the conce, the itbre is muel more easily extracted ulan from



 'The istood of Ytannaracu is thres leagries in lengeth, and the conal is atone planied with coco trees, ancl if these are tims prodective what might uot the ewco fruvea yield, which uxtemd alome the coase from the rieer St. Nrancisco
 truse?




[^177] fowers，suld in the midule the mate．

Spac：Chra：Stem arboracenas，leaves sagitate，about one foor fons，petioles ff two feet．

Not．Char．Stem frome 6 to 8 feet tong，two to three ínehex in ciameter，
 textes；the stabstanet spongy juicy，suth；and in thats substance are numet－


Внsscass are uncommor．
Leases are ratler more itran ond funt long and of the same freatale at the
 efannelled from the base wo the middle，where tice channel ends in an appen． din of 93 inclucs，the remainder in cylindrical．

Flowins，anallury，solitary．Cacran a spathe longer that the spadix．Tise
 at the tise of tlae spudin．

The plant as．to by fourst in Pornanbuce，atirl it grows so plentifitly in marshes that many הy coseral wad it．
 which acts 1 por met：ds；some of tire peasitilsuse this ja cleaning their kuives，


 strength．

Ths the fibers are placed in the puly lonfitudinally，and are stightiy fixed to it，the operations of beating and wabling will separate them crifely．I have rot inade any experiments as to the turulidity of tice curdige．

「recen．This is the name which is given to a species ot palm tree，but I have noc yet been able to aequaint myalf with what geads ie belongs to． Piso spcaks of it，fiving a bad print of it athl a worse desciprion．Manoed
 the utility of the fiture of the plant．I tried to obtain the fibre from the keaves in a dry statc，or，as the peasants term it，thado（iweated．）I helk with the left band the point of the leaf，and with the right sather lower down，I doabled it as if I was going to break it，it the same time pulling it．After it was braken，there remained in iny left land some fibreg，which had been loosened from the inocr surface or the leaf．I soon sav that this would not
do, for one person woull nut be able to extracl mose than one eighth of a Ih. of fibre in the course of the dan- therefore $T$ hatl recimarse to naccretims, Fut this dix not sitecend, for at the elose of cigle divex I fand that both the

 properiy so called, tle uricuri, and the catoli, bue but the focean and another kind called -kteiard ฐrow it the shwhe of the woods, where they are much

 in lengill.

 plintits of Pernambuco.

Class, Monoecia. Orapre, Hewnedria.
Gen. (har. Spostie simple; :padiv maroze.

 a drupe.

Spur. Char. Stem aculeate, ventricnac ; kaves juinate; small leatwer ensiform erepicate.
 larly Arizt:mect
 into many knikes. The ferriale fower; below, thee male flowers above; close to which tle basen arc fixed in cups hollowed in the oomenor pedupele. Caxma, a perianith of thec linear pieces very small, alterrate with the getals of the corofla, Corotin $i_{\text {, }}$ dipetalous, oblong, concave, prointed, yellowish.
 irucunbent antlurs, ohlong. Prerti, style thick, witlyut a sciewna, batren. Female Flotiere. Cilus amall, whitish, monophyillous crifich, iryenulir, permanant Coronfa tripetalous, rounded, the sides imbriczie sud uniteri in the ntiddle with the nectary. Necratis, a monophylums corolla which fides
 of a munded germen, a very short style ind thee stigmatan simple. Perichrp, a round drupe, of the size of a largejazoho or rose appits er of a small common apple, yellowish: it consists of a ligneous extcrior laurk which is weak; of a bony nut, at oily almood, and a layer of oily, ycllow pulp.
 Bratil.






















[^178]





## 









 Fic alt Jivelirs，：




子なった。

CRas：Af！

 seak．
 caly

 Sripule：反lecishteava，actole．





 sululate tilumemes; autherx romelele Prsmis consists of ore oval germen





The plont is to be toune? in I'cmimbuco in places rear to the son, or where splt water resches, anc priveipally upman the baiks of tlee tive:x Cioiana and Paraibet. 1 have tound it in ilower and fruis in the mondta of Felvenary and March.

Tl:e perazas who cutch crabs tie them zo escel other with the bark of she
 mate of ies immer rind, as is prantined in some pares of Amerion witlo the
 for comanom use are male.
 Prork.

Cluzs, Yolinedria; - OfDex, Monogytia
Gien. Chatr. Calys, monophyllous, triod ; pericarp a decem-locular capeulc, covered with thorns or spines, dopresised, opening only on the lower side.

Spec. Char'. Stem of 20 to 30 feet longry and ot ouc chot aud a hade in diameter.

Leveses orate, favceofate, cordinte, seticulate, gisen and smooth above, covered with lotirs, which are or a copper colour undecacath. \$sansini monardilphic. The ptapt is to be found in Pernambuco, abounding in the virgin wuods. It blosevms tiom, August to Octuber-

The timber of this tree is not cormpact, and ita sperific: gravicy is much less than that of water, with winich it doed nut eazily become sacurateal. "The inhabitunts of the eoasi walke use of it for the purpose of constructing toits; three or four of these trexs are put together, end are well fastened to esch other*. The bark of the tuee is tibroiss, and from it a great quantity of cording is made for the coumon purposes of the councry,

Marcegraff ialls it Apeiba; and Aublet ahopted the sume name when the fixct the genus of the three species which be describes in Guiana, and he supposes ifiat the species tibourbue is the same as that which Marcegraff speaks

[^179]

 thu silly world of the odges is not so deep; and tlecre ja even sonte difterence in the sus.pe; the stamina are manifitisy monadelptric. This fast circumstarice irclimeal me to call it apaiba montadelofia, but the use to which the tree is applated in the construction of ratts decided me in calling it rambataria.

This plant has a red fibrous bark, of whigh as much uae is nade ju manufacturing cordage is of the embira orarica; but duathrk ought wot be permitced to be gathered, fir the tree produecs seeds, of which the capsules have the aste and the purgeocy of black pteper. Miny pertons make we of thern as a spice in cooking, and some even prefer them to perpeer; they arc casminative. If the bark is taken oft; the tree dics; the seeds are worthy of becoming an atticle of triade as a spice. -

I have omitted a great number of plants which posscsa fibrous properties, that this Dissertation might not be made too long; some of thern are not much in use, and others are not applied to any purpose. I shall mention sume, surch as the graswma lrones ala mata (hitioteras barmennis) of which the inner leesk is white and strong, but on being wetted, it becomee rotten and breaks. However, I think it mitght be applied to the manuriauture of papar.
 And the Sertam plant, called the embirationa, which I have named boonbaz medilerroteos, alto afford fibre from the bark, but they are not much uped. All the opecies anona (callod commonly aretiratmi) aftord nibte, and of thege the plant which gives the strongest and the xnost durable fibre is the areticuon api. The cord with whicls the flag of Fort Cabedella at Paraibs is hoisted, is made of the rind of this plant, and it has been there for rany years. Firalty all the platas of the genera hioiscuss, sidecs, alhicas, and fin general all the mallows attord fibre of greater or less streagyl. The tmbiriba (beythis) gives tow, and aldhongin it canoot be applicd to the minnufacture of cordage, its use is is oreat for caulkers.

[^180]
##  A) $\begin{aligned} \\ \text { asil. }\end{aligned}$

Tate first part of this pampalet trents on' the advantoges which Brazil would obtin by the estalslixhment of hoyal Butasic Garalens. The secoud part contains a list of thase plats which it woald be exjediems to tanuplant fionn other quarters of the ghole co Brazil, and from one parc. of Bratill to the rather, I shaid ondy translate that portion of the second part whicin relates to the plants of Bitazil. - Transt

PInnts of Praxd and NItarankenas.
Cravo do Maranham, Myatus caryopleylata.
Pixuat.
Abacaine, Zautus Parbeta : .. The fruit of chis teee contains a butterous substance, which is wer'y pleasant; there are two kiods or varieties, one of which is distingulaged by the namie of Cayenne.

Bacuri, Moronobes esculemtia = - This tree grows to a great ieight; and the stema is entirely without branchos, forming at the top a large cope. The frut is nearly of the size of an orenge, but it is oval and contains \$8 stoncs covered winh a white pulp, whiels have a pleasaul tagte, leing swcet, and somewhat acid. In Pernsmbuco is to be found arother speciea of the same genus, growing in marshes, which is commonly called stifandim; on cuturn into the stem a white juice oozes out, which alpyears to the tube resinous, and periaps might, be applied to some dee. Both these specics arc described in my Centuriz of the new genera and species of the plants of Pernambueo.

Bacada, Areca Bacaba: - Arruă. Cent. Plams. Porv. This palm itce is a apecies of arece deractux, producing however larger fruit; the nuti. i; covered with a mocilaginous pulp, from which the inhabitants of the places in wlich it grows make an excellent beveration, calied bacetrowly or ficuera de bacahos.

Atacnox, Bromelia : - There are thee varietics of ananas at Maranhatu, called abacaxi; of one the fruit is white, and the leaves itre not serrated; of anorher the fruit is of a purple colour, and the leaves spiny; the third $Y$ harve not seen. I brought the two first raricties to l'emarabuco, where they have been planted, athe are alrendy becoming common, nad they have been forsfaded by some patriotic persons to other provinces. Therir flavour is much superior to that of the species witich has been lorg well known.

Mafeneqja Mamads, Pasgifiora alata.

## Fhand of Sicima

 daces most atanalintly a fruil aft the size $u$ (' an orange, of which the pulp is oily, feculens, full verg noutrishing. In is the delight of the ialtabitatiss of Searia ind Piambi. Ilve tree grows to the leightit of fifly feet, and is oit proportionate ctickenesa. 'The timber of je is of at good qualily as that of che cirapirn, for shipulyulang. It grows well in the sancly plains wheh are int
 tion would be very advantageous in the ralkideiros boddering the coast, which are at present of un warwice. It hali ufforted great axsistance to the people in ciruse of drought and fomine.

Birkiti, Ati Bortussua; - This speriea of palm is one of the liggest and most beautitul of trecs; it grows only in bogs and marslaes; the frutit is of the size of a lem's egr, unt of the xama form; it ia of a red colour the the time of maturation, and is covered with seales spirally arraniged. Under the seales is fouml a latyer of oily pulp of the sanes red colour, firom which tite inhabitanty of Pianhi obtain an camuleion; when this is mixecl with sugar, it bneomes n mubeanutiol curink, which is by no means aroplesannt. Howevor, if it is used to excres, the colour of the fruit is commanicated to the surface of the skin, athel to the white of the eycs, producing the appeurance of juundice, bot vithouc any injuly to the bealith.
 genus; it it cialled suxpira, becamse one of them may be sfonllowed at once, leaving upon the patate a most exquasite poste and a sweet struell. It is to bo found in the Seria de Beruocia, upon the bordere of Acarach, *

MLandarlica, Myytus Smbia: - Arreat. Cond. Planti. Petr.
Coco Nasa, al lage falto tree, which is to be fouled nTandurtely in Cariri
 tracted, and this is applied io ibe anme purposes as thut of the cocos artoficara. The rur is covered with a feeulous substantial Hour, which has afforded much relief in cimes of need. l'rom this fecula is made a soup or arerth as it is called, which it semgoned with the emadsictec or oil obtained from the almond

[^181]

 it is more solid. Alter fowing tiken fiten it the succharime paxts by recans of one boilitg, it becomes capable of being sensoned, and many casesliont dignes are made from 1 ficm , afi.er the manner of tite areca uleracea. For the knowledige of these last usest the inhabitanti ail those parts are inciebted to my example. The sunu tany be practise:t with) die patneirs pintioha (cocos butiousa, dizx, which is vary common at Purnimbuten. For these puxposes the langer trees shoud no. the cut down, but ratier only atose which have attrined the height of ten or filteen fect.

This is a spectes of goiaba plunt which docs nol attuit more than two or khree feet in beight $;$ it abounds in the chapudte of the Ser's Anar:pe of Cariri Novo. $\dagger$

[^182]
## Prant of Pes गanatuco．



 the I＇rincess of Brazit；the sowts of thexe plauts are therows，abaunding with
 Sertaru of Pajoun in tiures of drougho．Tituec plante are worthy of being cul－ tivated not only from their utility bat tor che purpose of ornamenting gotrdens，their flowers boing umbullate，crituson，and wery leautlital．


Uf＇the firat of these plants the teraves and bark lave a pleasant smell，which is like that of cloveg，It is not ax yet ubed，beiog unkrows．I litive made use of the leaves and lark of alis ptant in diatilling ram，ated have olftained a plengin liysear，I liave learat by experierice that the uxtract of tie lewnes




 sterce of the mountains，and upom the hanks of the civulete of the Sternows of l＇crmantanon，l＇araila，and Scara．It yiekds by boilins a yullow dye，wfrich is subticiently alumble upen whiss．It is probable that gome meatr might be
 （mnaras tianctoriu）．Busides this lase，it is applied to han ort curing saynas， 2 n eruptive conpluint；tie jeationt being wasthed in a decoction of the leaves． As I could got arrange thacse plants in any of the known genera，i bave formed one ior them to wbich I have given the reme of Zinharea，in me－

[^183] and protector on leciers.
 'Ibis patm in one of the riost usetial planis. of ilde Serverns; it rises to the
 of the riteric and rivalese of Pernambiace, Parailate do Norte, Sentiz, and Pi-


 several times in differentit water to rake oflits satribgent properties; aud then a staljecient boiling being fiven it becomes soit and bizs the tatate of boiled maize. In thly state it is caten will milk, andi is a wholesone fool. The pitl of ilee stem of the young plantin, buigg bruised in water, affords a matritive feculi, as white as fitat of mandioes The phanx should nos nuch cixeend


 fin, whilst they are yet young; alterwards ahey open, and become oflittle less than rwo feet in breadth. If they are cut in this alate, encl tre allowed lu (by in the shade, a consicerable quantiti.y of small lightit coloured seales wilf be fonsened from the aurface. These will melt by the lieat of' a time into white way, of which it posgessea the properties; it is Fhwever more lajitule, bat this any be remedied by mixiag it with the common wax, which is more oily. In 17971 made fnown tbia diseovery to the 1t. J. M. Fr. Joze Marinumo da Conceigam Vellozo, who publiahed the account of it in the Paladio fortaguea ; but at that time I was nol sor weld aware as I an mow of the innportances of lise wax.

The fruit of this tree when ripe is black and shining, and of tle size of eggs of tande pignona. The kervel is covencl witi a liayer of sweet julp, which is eaten by cattle, as are alao the dry leaves which fail, whed other food fialy. The leaves ate usect for covering houses, and although thus exposed to the weather, they layt for twenty years withaut requiriag to be renewed. The stem is made wan of for buildins houses, for fiences, pens, \&sc. "

[^184]









 the: , whertueren "mglened lor limersuang poulery.













#### Abstract

    the wax hive been conduritit ou a zmall yenle; bue from the experimenta rolated, Es appancu  neanly white by tut uaual mennn. I hnve nat hed suficient tive tw ancertaim whether the wax         ancy of itw flumes, A mixture: of cliree ports of the vegerable why with one port of beaa' wax, also mikes very oxeeljest candlon:"


[^185]

 fixed, chat it resists the action of soans athul the !ye of polash, atad it rather


 ense, for if lave sown the seeds whisth ate fikt latise of the luthere; they come tup in a lew days. The land which is adipted to it. is innoracr fitica, or marely lund composed of mafare, or sitit" ciay.

Anve Ruepavoll, Ciasus tinctorius: - Arrwd. Cent. Pland Perm.
If the leaves of this plant are rublech uponia white ciath, iltey impart io in a groen colour kike that of any ocher learl) By cxposure to utmoxpherice six it chatges this colour for a fixet bluc, which ratists the lye of potash and somp. It iy found in the mountatios and low latrelis of the Siertenturs
 5 seget.

Thie parat has anthelminthic properties, and is solel in one towns. It grows abundantly in argilleceous low lianls.

Unucr, Bixa Orellane. Lin.
This is a sliruls, and is worlhy of cultivation from the dye which the leaves neford; but if iy not cultivated by any one jn Permambued, not even as a curiosily.

Thia tree grows to the height of 80 or 40 foct; $4 . h e$ timbuer of it is compatet. and may be applicel to woune perposes. In producess it iruit itr large rounded bunches, ip enpsules which do not oper. It bas a solid kernel of two cotyledons, covered with a sweetish acid pulp, which is not. ampicisant. If turkeys ent of theae kernels they die imondintely; from 1 hia cireunstance I took the mame of the genus, ct' which I Juve only found two species.

## Imвuzrito, Spondia tuplerosa : - Arrwd. Cent. Plane ऐun.

This is a tree which growe plentifully in the Sertanens of Pemambuco and
 obovate, with five points at the lower part, being the indications of the five stigunatia. Its colnur in yellow, and below the coriaceont epridermis, it retnjua a juicy poip, of a pleasint sweetish acill tiste. With this juice, and milk, curde, and sugsi, a much sateremed mess is madts, callicd imbuacia,

This tree throwts out long inorizontal roots, whic! penelrate tery litile, and
 ir tiameter, full of water, dike hato water-melons; these supply the vergetacion o:' the tree in sunsuns of drangetc, and somerizes refresh the sporten man who bas ponetrated inco hive woods. The re-production of the tree is: very easy by means or shon:s.

Purased, Bignoria tinctoria: - frrad. Cirni. Alent, Pom.
 red ryth which can be made a fixed dye uran cotton cloth, by means of preparatian* analogous to these mhich pre made for madder.

Unani, Gcolfrova spinosa : - Jacg. Stipp. Atmeric.
This plant, which Jacquiten found at Cintogagens in the sandy lands near* to the coast, grows at Perfarabuco upon argillaceous low lames upon which it anives at 90 or 40 fect in beight ; in Catthagetib pecordins to the samac nuthor, it does not reach more than twelve fect. The flowers are yellow, ond have a groell which is simyar to that of the coco-oil; those of Carthagena bave a disidereablu smell. May they not be two separate species? From the almoond of this plant is extruteded a white and nutritive êecolith of which 1 he inhabitants of die hio do Peixe, and of the Serzam of Pariba sio Norce reake mach use. The plant grows very plentifully in the low lands of those parts, and it is also to be net with in the province af Rio Grande do Norte.

Ifecaccitha preta, Ipecacuanion officinalis:-Aytud. Camot. Pionh Perv.
I/ntil the present time the botavists of Europe bave not known to what geaus this $\mathbf{p}^{\text {pant }}$ belongrs. Some of them wought it was the euphortian Iyncacuanha, ochers, that it was the pworaliandanoulosk, others, the spiravatrifotati, others the riola ipecacizanha, finally y thers suspeered that it was the zosycholria cnicticaz; but I have observed the ipecactusiur prista very frequently when in flower, and Ithink that it Has more affinity to the taparamper of Aublet. However, Ihase given it. the nime of inucarmostha, for although both are burbarous, still the latter has beer nowed for at ecutury and u half: The Ipecacuanha is easily cultivated, for I bave made the cxperiment, but it requires sharde, or at any rate it must not bc completely exposed to thu beat of the sum.

Ipeciccaivia branca, Viola Ipcetwuerliv:-Lin. Pombalia Ipceacuanbs : Fandez.

Althourh the root of this plant was formeriy migtaisen for that of thei. inecurcianita preta, it is well known now to be of anotber description. It is


 Iarge fieces of eround covered witis the phent. Or this xpecests of ipecaten-


 fities which stymghert the nerves.

 Cert. Plans. Perr.



 to lo foums ita grtat guantitis in somse parc...




 3t adule. 1 know of three surecets wi hisphat.





 tiwateti. It may be abjerved as being remarkible, ulane ghatititice of 1 Eec roof are sometimes seld by the je土nants wlic! fare litela aflect. This purat

然therst after the fruit and leaves lave clricd, bte lactore the rains cume on.
 holf of which are purgetive, and the proparel root of both i* eomniondy

 lave given sle demeription is my Consaria of new plants.






















 Fはrs.



I'se tigat :pecics of thin gesnus (aifi corora) pioduces an irrcathar drape, of whicin the kerich is movered with it sweet fecula, somewinat atomatic, pleasant, nutritive. If ; large ennugh to satisfy one person. It is sold io the minckets, and by some jredividrala it ja now ecilivated.



1 broustif reme of is io ETghand in pewier. - Transh,

The kemend succies sifif diy praios produces an oxal or oblong drupe very
 kernet is covered with a sweet, aronatice, that nutritive pulj.


 grounch, Joiraig a spaciuur cople. The iruit is an oblong alsupe of two in-

 two preceding spocies, but iz is ligncose and flexiblas, and can easite to brakeit; it is coversd with at liter of astringen: patp. The almond is at suect compoied of i.wo oily entyledons of a disagreable vaite, b:at aboululing niti: an oif, ỗ elhielr some use ia now miule.

This is of tlec natural order of encurbitacco:ns plansta; the socds are very oily, and from :ikm oíl is eusily extructed, which, as well is ratat oil the roces


 copaia; Auble? Gwien
 Eivi. Plys: Perm.

These two species jossess :ntivenereal froputicis and are frarticularly. sorviceoble against the intection whell is cullet botas, yaws.



 tlase ofunimals. Worsen use it ater chith-boaritig, buthing tharselves in at decoction of the leaves, 1 an persamiod tiat the extract of jt, ift it did toot exceed would as leaur equal jat eveditinat virlue the mimo

This is : wee wielt *omesimes atrains a great heiglte; fron its bark oands a resinous juice winch is indissoluble in waler, but is is completely dissolvable in spirit of wine. The wools of Goianizan of Alhandre absaud with these




 ple with chee yollow wain ot tho conatry for the pupose ol making catelles
 water wreets o゙sulgor mills，xic．






 parts id Anterien．

「い！


## ETLATA.












A Bth:dorects


[^0]:     language indiucriminntrly to thac creo und to the cuene; ant as we mowt probably derivad
     cintinguisla tho two planto in thesu manmot.

[^1]:     Irislotame and lirs wifc. 2915.

[^2]:    
     convey theat nayy contain a agosater number.

[^3]:    2. I did not diseover any vesciges of the Fort which sood here at the wire of the 17useh war.

    - J sholi unc this mord exclpaively, when speaking of Europessns of this mation; and the wutd Bruvilian, when upuakive of white persons lorn in Brazil.

[^4]:     is is Dor ito proper aypolliseion.

[^5]:    - I am not quite cerrain whetber ir is the third or fourth.
    +1 sailed from Pempmbuen in the very Jost convoy of t815, precious to the posce With the Gnitad States, which condiuted of twerty-cight veasciu, vis, 5wo ships of wal, two prives to thant, aitid twengt-four menchant verseles fourteen af which wore frow Pernumi-
    
    $\dagger$ Ab edier hay lately been isonted at Hio de Janeira by the Regent docioring buroself the Prines Regent of the United Xingtoms of Porulgah, Braxil, nad the Twa Alfarver. 1816.

[^6]:     many elover men had writere and spoken stroncgly, wid for an cansidarable length of time against this payy of life, and thent they at laat eren eftiveted alacif purpotin with much diffi-
     and no sponking is aepeyary to baillg liem inco diarupute.
    

[^7]:    * In apcaking of the Triesthegd, it must be ofwhys teswleceted, that the Secular and Rogaiar Clergy nue two watilly differenk lucdies of men, and as diatinet in wheir utilityr their krowledge, arcl liveir monners, Ha they wre in their situation in tifier

[^8]:    
     alificrent tismat.

[^9]:     stack of tee which dey bed braught with lbera, they euquirel where uure could bo puz-
     when the mans wiehed to know whar kind of tea they uman; he at hast ucelerstond ebern,
    
     cursumed.
    
    
    
     utels the Sacrasment taken to tho wick.

[^10]:    
     yoon alte: the coormencement of a Hiner commercial intercourse with Grant Britain, *
    
    
    

[^11]:    
     I believs, mach ued in the Fanz Iudics.

[^12]:     people mast not be importoned for motes, until what thery poteessed was firlatid. He kept the whole reaw:mity withdis the watis of the convent for cho tove of wow ar three gerus, for which each guandian in nppointed. On another oceasion, the Gibrs of a Francixcna convent. chose far their gunadion a young ann, wheye lite had ben very irrapularly ypeat in any thing rather than the dutiey of hly calling, uader the didea, that during the con-
     be paid wothe rales and regrofacions of the Orderi but they were mistaken, be chasbged his bobaty as woon an he fond himedf at their heud; We gate were righllly closed ar Ule proper hour, and nocording to the old and valgar proverb, of "Sct a chief," kece the dxices of the convens reve performad aith much graicat ansterity than before

[^13]:    ＊At alacedete was relaled io rac of one af these couples，wingh neeurred yome yrark
     nexased fort of the failuwist scens，and the remminclet wus dixcrited by ana of the actoris in it．A coraple of criminalg，of which one wnsa white mart，and the other is segro， accomparised Dy theit gande，were walking oway the numis，to reach of ford，and ecoss the river at ；e nafrowest part Threc borscenten，one of whaft lat af fourth harec，sadelled and bradled，rode ug，and one of them knocked tho mindier dawil，whilnt the whiw mott of the
     bimi：thin the black nonk refused to dos，when one of the horseraen，who sermed io ditect the ortherts，calect outs＂Cut the fotiow＇y leg off．＂The crimimale are segured to＂ach other by the anele．The nugro now nateod，and both mauated the tores，and the whole party gellloped away，first hinding the bolulier hand and foon．They posed through olindant
     negro was we choart $w$ ny，ail the chaian anal bolcs．The party then proceded，and wirf
     manger，was the relation of n meh peroun in the intefiory whw tiad eithat momanitied saroe crigur，or had beet thux unjusdiy pupiabed．

[^14]:    4 Kintely, 2 coder has some forwards, and has taken the direcoion of theres anations; be has appreblurded several perion: of infubaous charecter, but of deternuined evarage; be has dune muct, good, rikking his life uradur tirtamatancen of arear danger, and ever
     siea. That thus the police clandd rall into the havds of inferior offerne, shors the irregalar footing upoin which it scarde. - iest.

[^15]:    
     Chincla or of artillery, has been nlso much tmonoved by the jectention af ita colonel; and the
    

[^16]:    - Tha loper part of che town is the site af the sicge, which, in ita infancy, fle gectle-
     wrate uny qecount of Brazil. ${ }^{n-H i s t o r y ~ o f ~ B r a z i l, ~ Y o l . ~ L ~ p . ~} 46$.

[^17]:     I huppond so ank for batt, which is noc asuadly placeld upon the cable; the master of the
    
     ctuer n'ou *ud. This ocarred in the morsing, yugu ulur our arrival at the place; at clin-
    
     marter, who answuked, "Why, I thought yon liked aelt." "Cheritei guts trayt ayigrat we มnर.*

[^18]:    - Is thin ward abbreviated from Deserthem haed is an ougmentpive (according to the Pornagueze custem) for Deserto?

[^19]:    - Matactor, wondruens irluabituth of the mata.

[^20]:    - A pirasy: with miona I was afictuturls acquwited, had sifge cleared one of these jatandx, and hai forwed sotie salt-warkt upoan it.
    + The pard Sereant is used racher indofinitely, as ie doca nat ondy mean che ingesior of the country, but likewase a ercor part of the wase, of which the populution is get scanty,

[^21]:    
    

[^22]:    
     of tick.

[^23]:    
    
    
    
    
    
     violeaf: the old man, who was beqween seventy ond cighty yeurs of ages toled denis thet $\mathrm{i}_{\mathrm{F}}$
     be could gorpore to recpite die bull, and was sill Jaaning orasiant the palings, the enima
    
    
     ground; but the old mant loxt hate life.

[^24]:    * Vide Appondix.

[^25]:    

[^26]:    * 1 heard in tho byerening of the year Jsts, that the bar had been campletely choaked
     in catgacs for Fermalmbues.

[^27]:    
    © 2

[^28]:    

[^29]:    - I lugaze, from good auchorify, thet there ate two inaranacus of Iadians foving been
    

[^30]:    
     known inxepidity and oi same 1 "ower wns sent far by the govarear, ta cansult with him
    
    

[^31]:     boen mixed witl that which $\mathbf{I}$ s.aw,

[^32]:    

[^33]:    
     whichare at prosent usel in the Srristin．

[^34]:    
     untro ruge ${ }^{14}$

[^35]:    
    
    
     Lishest lue pumplalets in $\tau$ \&10.

[^36]:    
     of thewo 1 can speat piotrively.
    

[^37]:    －Hide Appendix for in fimeloy aceopmit of thix wex．

    + Vide Appesidix foy a turther aceourst of this plens－

[^38]:    
     ujonn bix pitentation. I turned round and verggniend the colonel of Cunbib. The bores
    

[^39]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^40]:    
    

[^41]:    
    
    

[^42]:    
    
     n'ith thmir invectives atainst same of fibe mey io power.

[^43]:     this man, and forms lum to the vory' isperiar ta any indivilual of bis or atiy other weder of lixale wild whou I hate been serfaigitet.

[^44]:    

[^45]:    
    
    

[^46]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^47]:    - Visle Aprowtricix.

[^48]:     into the woods，wiere they live wikli and he addy，the：their increise bas bewn inmense．
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^49]:     formed : and khose bitwe been carricel into effect $t$ ars.

[^50]:     enirvida but the ypont is, ie in the ense in queskian, ofecn romimothond a week befaze the
    
     berelenely and inrown ahout by all parlies, whecher it be eieas of dirty, whether itarigy don Jairehfeti ar is t ;omples.

[^51]:    
    
    
    
    

[^52]:    
     Sirbexiro at same tistence foom the coarl
    
     coprtameritan.

[^53]:    
    
    
    
    
     of the couviry; but in the present day, I cobld not mete with any wi be prombet who kniw what tlie wort Arica wis intersided no signify.

[^54]:    

[^55]:    - at Acondaria, NUas Similar mas tizve."

    Fs S

[^56]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     suen, who soon broke into the boube. Bearelh wid uishle. End the carcase und hide of the
     of the ret bet iron wpon the hannch had leen burat catc of the hide tiat diseveerg aight
    
    

[^57]:    as if nothing had bosn aroke: bat he whe not received us herelotions, for the individuats of
     had not hovever $s 0$ complecely preveated his scocazinder into decent gociety, as such ; crione would hnve chotre in many athers councrics, or so miech as woide lave ocrurrod at
    

[^58]:    
     co
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^59]:     м
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     madserer -
    
     cograizave of the daver.

[^60]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     .
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^61]:    * Elunea wre permiztad to purchape their own freedom, on fendering to the mastar the sum of money which tue origioally nave for them. But I shal juremetly speck more ith Ingeg of chisg law and of slovery, as ic exisis in llynzi].

[^62]:    

[^63]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^64]:    * I am mot certain of the nituntion of the Mante dis Tabracan, whare one of the chiof batiles way fought betreteiz the Portnguene and the Duteb in 1645 . - History of Braxil, vol. iin p. iol. Them is aow e plantation called Tabocna, whicle is awned by one of the
     sonn of the saine description, it thigk the circuristance would have been mentionct, if this had beers the phace.

[^65]:    loosc, and rold them to relate to their eopployer the manoer in which thry bad beep trented, the eatcring to to the sume to hind, if be could obtrin poysescion of alis personThe grisst bax in considemble numbsr of blood hounds, which were usually uevinained, find were lying nbout the bouse; thum rmadering dungerans an approwch to live dwalling.
    
     but an I have altendy clacwhere said, the time for suleh chargeter= in Braxil i" fost givig by-

[^66]:    * "7artarrixs nam he niug gictr."
    k K

[^67]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     protm sumsea si the An:orgut.

[^68]:     Brazil val. i p. a78.

[^69]:    

[^70]:    

[^71]:    " "Porgue Datc conacam ass: us रupradua"

[^72]:     ontt those which be preferxad ; but the Indian acopped hion, auving, \&Don't begis to pick mig erabe, for I beloing to Amparo.* Thes creat the crabe trhich were coughe by the de pendanto of thin grent mans were to be reopecesel.

[^73]:    
    
    
    
    
     and when the cornpersariou oncied, his firt wian ripulnod.

[^74]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^75]:    

[^76]:    
     hy ilve Dutcle, Hivtory of Bravil, vel, ii p. 1 万7.

[^77]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     tenche furch
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     piece of wood in conc halidis and moving tivis to =nd fro acir to the bides, chat it mighte

[^78]:    
    
    
    
    
     of hexik.

[^79]:    
    
    
    
    
    

[^80]:    
     Siouth Auspiea wish I minitel．p． 6 ．

[^81]:    
    
     For the copis bes in mosc disagrevable ntioclh This autijur aftrwwurds exintioulues the
    
    
    
    
    
     axtyentiely birteis.

[^82]:    - "Cuntu at dua arg_farte."

[^83]:    
    
    
     prisiag thas it sbould not numw be wsal for this purposac. TJay jorwhete is to be tound io
     decaction of the ruot is tukea froguently $2 x$ the presect day for roughs fund colds.
     wervedly obtnined the name of be kervi sfe cabras; his ctencriptiom of it at p. raz, agrees in
     car scarcely be the attet, far mine nould havic buin more ptentiful if it had been indiศерои".

[^84]:    4 Hivbory of Birnzil, viuli p. 472 and 485 .

[^85]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     one of theta is put into the prumad is doce not rabe root, and indocer"awon rows in suy wibu-
    
    
    
    
     and Eull of kuytm

    Bolitigbeoke in hin vozage to the Dejumary descriket the ned mangrupe an I have seen in but be sings that the bartis is gres. In the Third Report of the Difectors of the Afrioun
     grave bark into this entraty for traing.

[^86]:     homen or man"s heart: thos bo did not ehuse ea uan the lame of ntegra's beare The wan knew the uval mame perferly well,
    $\dagger$ The inon wood is mentioned by Baliggbrake in his rayoge to the Dpmerary; apd the
    
    

[^87]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     tomini.
     with thaye woodn which are knema not to be neturaly तोurable under grownd.

[^88]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     amearstlo of I'cranginacer.

[^89]:     ins acistity and ustripgency-

[^90]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     3as, watl 3cン
    
    

    I loaye perimpen yontel 100 copioualy in writita nan aceount of thas: plants which Labat hay deserilusd, but I moxt bave followed so notrlywilat bu das saic, that my acseriptiona malght
     deacribed as all, but ta somescaders a confiranation of wisc ather trurellera have sait may' afford satisfinction.

[^91]:    

[^92]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     aflectaun teresribu heractional famidy.

[^93]:    
     parcicularly ammexyl whem the tman answicred 10 somedit: ing "J will iok Our T.inly of the Conex pion." The wuejan replied, "But ulue will not
     Thas antincly formating tho the sume parau is intended under arother namp-
    
    $\ddagger$ "AOrre e deiar de bexngems."

[^94]:    
    

[^95]:    
    
    
    
    

[^96]:    
    

[^97]:    
    
    
    
    
     raind to be anppityits.

[^98]:    
    
    
    

[^99]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     the chamber is filled ap to , lat stomer. Thais cheine ntry be case even with mowe paeitity
     to afford a resistance equal to thot of the foyged iron.

[^100]:    stonc $n$ y
    
    
    
     manch mrilizet. -
     p. $2 \div 310 \geqslant$ 二人,
    
    
    
    
    

[^101]:    
     リ: sed かlentur puriod.
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     foe the afaterient.

[^102]:    
     c:
    

[^103]:    lis romarki may be ustifu' in the barter coantry; although they way be aue ef foter is the
     hira.
    
    
    
     if est prime"-Nouvesu Vospacs sec. toms. iti, p. - f .
     4 the phance instced of stocking up his rysoovas, wad holing ond planting the lend ancw. suffers the broles to continnc in the grourd and coneenes himself, as his cane finlds become hin and impoverished, by yupplyipg the vacant space with feesh ptant 6. "-Hírory of tive Weal ladies, wol, ii p. 207.

[^104]:    * A ploush denwn by two owen, conciytuted after 2 anodel witich wa brougbt from Caycane, bas betat introdoced in me or two insaneex,
    
     troultle.

[^105]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     tors ijir 1. a 58.

[^106]:     cabimat pruveris.

[^107]:    
     tievlatly for aily that have the fulvantage of being turused by wntut.

[^108]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     that whiela is in generil u*a.

[^109]:    * In the liranch isiands the liquar was passed thmondl a choth wheu conveyed frots
     \&ce. tomn. iv, $\mathrm{M}_{2} 24$.

[^110]:    
     torn iii. p. $2 \mathrm{~J}_{\mathrm{j}}-$
     hot aying elnyed sogsan; this would be interestiog to Ernziling readers, but is is too long to excuse ineertion bufore a Britiala pullite-
    $\dagger$ The long impraved avęs, sach fo are usel in the Columbins ivfands, are beyinning to be introxiaced.

[^111]:    
    
     refpecting the arraniremert of the stild lacuses. They tiad topper srill.

[^112]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     owner.
    
    
    
    

    Thirilly. $11^{\prime}$ there are more tehts thenn ate, nace thewe oxpeduer mate up tivenurn which
    
    
     oud lenves undoue those diugy which maghte ta be dene.

[^113]:    
    
    
    
    
    

    Offins atinosdes 1 never lae:milh bay ilsere in one to whicu hursey an well ns toomed cattie are bubject; it ix produced by the animals foxding upan folds of wbiel, the geasis is very
     is ioposablue for the hears to uat.

[^114]:     Ethen (rom the yent ito th $581 \hat{9}$.

    $$
    \begin{aligned}
    & \text { asob. - - . . 42\% } \\
    & 2 \text { fog. - - - } 128 \mathrm{ot} \\
    & 2815 \text { - - - - } 2540 \\
    & \text { jelr. - - - -74 } \\
    & \text { 1812. - - - } 537 \\
    & \text { 18Cj. - - - ge22 }
    \end{aligned}
    $$

    I cibtamed is from mivy friund Mr. 1. C. Payem, who resided at Recife during in cansididable mertian at the time.

[^115]:    
    
    
    
     there istands.
    
    
    

    The cotwon of the setilement vimen the pert of South Americo of whict he nrits, is virs infirior to shat of Reranniblaco.
     cleat "the saliste air of the son-shora, which perterily idearase coifee, is forvarable to
     pagntel in thutanteground for mony year: withour a change of semb".

[^116]:    
    
    
    

[^117]:    
    
    
    
    
    

[^118]:     inapponite; for it alwnyy recyuires to be picked before it is used, to take our the kits of the
    
     when the fubutance from which it wan maide wn ebongeti, the name still wourinacel, I reftr the reader wo the History of Brozil for a farthor actount of be maadies.

[^119]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     Boliughtokus of 149-

    Dr. Pinckard mentionn hurving toshted in the solony of Demprary of hie juice wh the mas
    
     in tiust of plenty it is rexaraleth ard beiry untit tor any purpaw- It in ly evupontiont that, is Comer ina proikorolum gualitice.

[^120]:    
    
    
    
    
     et gere de zens en plantent." - Nouveau Voyage zee kwim, i. p. 416.
     fecher smaitay than the othur specics.
     less appeciut weler the nume of mandeis antenge.

[^121]:    
    
    
     ot colocz ith the Julise of Cayemuc.
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     boilyg wastr or дrivy, Tas negroest do not diblike pirans, bast they nie sometimes ton
    
    
     in the dropsy: The flour ot'the mandice swells considewhtily when it is agoistened: it clie
     nouk reseon for the opinion of de Braxil:uy upwin the zalyece

[^122]:    
    
     toire slun Antillen. \&c. tort. 31. p. 114.
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^123]:    * $\because$ I $\because s$ F
    
    
    
    
    
    
     they wirce exactlent

[^124]:    ＊Firide Appendix for a ferther seconant of the cocon＇roc．
    $\dagger$ Labar was a most deterninod coxperimpatial cator，and thorefore 1 nay not surprised at
    
    
    
     thax a small billet was brougbe is Enftand froun tiun enar of thificios smong a parcel of bar－
    
     toa for awy quatitity that emuld he procured，＂

    5 Hetory of Brazi，volid piso

[^125]:    
    
    
    

[^126]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^127]:    
    
    
    
    
    

[^128]:    

[^129]:    
    
     Histure dem Amillex 之ie. tona, ji. j2, 460.
    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^130]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^131]:    
    
    
    
    
     birti.

[^132]:    - "Nichera tisht manow caijrifo."
    

[^133]:    
     severad individuali of these eath whether there wns anf thath in the rcpork 1 candot beliexe ony thing of 山is kind; due libers poligy whiclí inems to pervade the Coungil of
    
     sexpoctal to proceed.

[^134]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     towaurable alos.

[^135]:    
    

[^136]:    
    
     for Deearnber, isfs, ip. $73^{\text {月 }}$.

[^137]:    
    
     volo i． $0,3^{\text {asc．}}$
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     mary， xu － P － Ot ．

    I eive this stuleraenc，ond shmuld be hifppy to transcribe any other，with which I might nera in the cosaris of reading，of che yame tenor；but it nume be recollecised thut the＂Voyase
    

[^138]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     Far any leafoth of time cuen ir hey pre biought buck ta cheix manery sarcely cuat re－
    
    
    
    
    
     san，erespod，setamex，and saein fled，and bad nof，whes I leff the colentey，becn band of for a twalugmonth．

[^139]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^140]:    
    
    
    
    
    $\dagger$ The so:
    
    
    
    
     mesicr spuke to the awowr of tiesiluve in queaion ou the sabject, but he refured woll
    
    
    
    
    

[^141]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     atapebter of wowes upon the catate, bow iy is wa be exproctod that than lattux ate wo be faithturn"
    

[^142]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^143]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     kriow whant ilury ferit,

[^144]:    
     y⿴me smidl wessels eatae to Liverpool timaned ia part will slaves, owing to their maters being igtoram, that clveiv survival upon Byitive ground pould suake shetn
    
    
     senman on lownt emme other sbip. rezuraed to perxuade theee of his camporions ta do the
    
     returasd to Brasil in the bark, nowd 1 bave heard that they were wet at liburby by tbeir master on their irrivul thenc. I bope it wiss son. When the athoxales of slawery velate
    
     gratitade in the flaves bne thes prove nothiog generalls: they do not affect the preut gacstion; that is reyted upud gronnds which are too demply fixed to be mosed by single instancet of exil or of gowl.

[^145]:     cuantries and given ou an inucance the shaxins acgrort, whe follow thin euntom.

[^146]:    －Whint I resided al $J_{\text {ngutaribe，I }}$ beurd that two nagroes of thit notion latil murdered a chidd of thares or four yeners of nge，the son or denghter of their meseer，and thar they bad boen caught in tho act of prepering to cook part of the bodly．The nien niore cairrled
     －puniatument inul been inflicted npon therr．

[^147]:    
    
    
     P. IE.

    + Thare wax ono itt 1814 , und another in Pebruary or the preatic year, 18,6

[^148]:    
    
     vol. ii $\mathrm{p}^{\text {h }} 5^{\text {b }}$
    
    
    
    
     ar the Darcetols oi' the AFricaa Institution, p. :36.

[^149]:     cept in tirne ol' crop, lexsides Sutuluysund holjidyy, fô cultivgring their grotude and ean-
    
    
    J." 'Tertre xity that the custen of givjng at vectsin portion of tinte to the slave for che
    
    
    

[^150]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^151]:    
    
    
    
    
    
     larat.
     cull
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^152]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^153]:    
    
    

[^154]:    - I met nith the followiry pasage in a wark of much repoturinn upon the sifhimin of
     measly indebred to their owayro' biberality are, $I$ ethinte, thone of ugedical atcetifance unil
     diled him?

[^155]:    ＊Fiorses are usunity marked opon the right ligninch with the prixate mark of their onplets；bat the beats，which Jare ban bred by slawed swe warlied on the lef bounch or
    
    
    
    ＋Tite plin of disuibuting tbe rex－enmers empary the ald citabli－hel ngexton to be
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     and thus the slove is ndvuaced in sorne blight dogres towards the condition of a serf．

[^156]:    
     nurie of jicko.

[^157]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     people of coiout.

[^158]:     proprictar upan an average in the phate of the country of which I may picet, possesses from artury to sixty blaves.

[^159]:     the frequant proerict of conecoling himseif in ble wood fot wane daya ut a virre; on being
    
    

[^160]:    
    
    
     a grave diseelved in watch and given to the nogro without bis knowing what he is raking. $3 \times 2$

[^161]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^162]:    
    
    
     beett anjusily trametel.
    
    
     prestied which were poncludud between the twa Fowers in Itia.

[^163]:    
    

    1 Correio Brosiliathe fir Dectraber 18t5, p. 735 -
    

[^164]:    
    
    
    
     :
    
    
    
    
     Norvitud. 50\%.
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^165]:    
     will aun, $\boldsymbol{l}$ thunk, be found to le swomeatis.

[^166]:    
    

[^167]:    

[^168]:    - Anwotio de Araujo ie Azeveila, Minister pud Soerechry of State for Nava and Ultramaxine Aghiru. Hes ban lutely butu ereated Conde da Datca. It witn formenty wid that
     influcnce ot wy forkign powar into the affuirs of then government of which be in a merniber.

[^169]:    * These arguraenta snvaur sumetrbut of peesishpeas; let these plait questionu be naked. Dess Grear Eyitaiy interfere in the police of Elrail? Wauki Great Britain toke the

[^170]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     for any otue Power on carth, or aven for all of chem combined? Eitch govesament must ach
    

[^171]:     iorma navy?

[^172]:    * I do not know haw far good polity dinsecs that preference should be givers ta the Porfugul wines over thane of other parts; hut it it mather bard that the people of Grent Brieain sbould Be obliged to drink the wines of Fornugul, when athera of a fuperior flovaur aight be olvaived, if restrictions did not gatist neainst their ensumption,

[^173]:    
    
    
    
    

[^174]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^175]:    
    
    
    
    
    
     D颁
     anxiale, r. is
    
    
    
    
    
     exact Ifaxtory of ahe Jland of Boiturdeers, $65 \%$ -

[^176]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    

[^177]:    
    
    
    
     Spentry. - Trmaxh
    

[^178]:    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     of co: : stigar - - ! :
     In - tifu:

[^179]:    

[^180]:    

[^181]:    - In tha beighinaurbood of Goizua. I naw a large pince: of humb completely aurctud with tiw
    
    

[^182]:    
     so the pasple, this eanonot has long, for the trisiu will soon wh destrayed. The quentity of food
    
     uf aing coundery,
    
    
    
     Jatter.
    
    
    
    
    
    
    
     Niourestu Voyngr, sx:- tom, iii- ㄲ. 276 .
    
    
    $\dagger$ The goisic is to be Soznd in all nituctives ive Perrambucs: there jy gearcely a aemano
    
    
    
    

[^183]:    
    
    
    
     see．csadiiio p 92.

[^184]:    
     Recount is Niteleukan's Jauroal, Vol. Nxxi. p-Ik.

[^185]:    - Thila ivilitreut in aizeritred.
    
    
    

